



# REINCARNATOR

BOOK 03

*Alla*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Reincarnator

(환생작)

by

**ALLA**

# Synopsis

---

Humanity has been gradually transported to the Abyss by a bored god to compete against other races and monsters.

Problem is... Humanity failed.

In a last desperate push the strongest survivors chose a comrade to travel as far as possible back in time.

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Ekdud @ [Gravity Tales](#)

Translation Edit by coyotte508 @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201 : Transference (1)

---

The Sages were upset in the past.

At their extremely weak bodies that didn't fit their overflowing intelligence and mana.

Technology and mana could not fill up the massive hole created by a weak body.

Even when they tried to do something, their weak bodies held them down.

But during that time.

A genius even amongst the Sages had been born.

Karmen.

A glorious King who had created the plan to lift the Sages higher.

Someone who allowed them to have even bigger dreams.

.....

“Uwaaaaa! We won!”

The people who had arrived at the villages yelled in glee.

The Satellite Fortresses that were falling in the distance.

There was nothing else that proved their victory better than this.

‘I wondered what the hell it was...’

Kulkin, a Hunter of the village, thought of the words spoken by those who had entered the village along with him and made a dumbfounded expression.

They were now truly free.

Since if those damned Satellite Fortresses didn't exist then sweeping away the Higher Races and gaining back their hope wouldn't be a dream anymore.

At that moment.

Boom! Boom!

‘....?’

Kulkin and the other villagers looked towards the woods from the huge noises coming in from the depths of the forest.

And soon.

Shhhhhh.

Around ten Higher Race members walked out from the woods.

The ones who had set up a formation and were pushing the giant metal wolf back before.

‘...The Akalachia, Arukons and the Rebeloongs are together?’

While Kulkin was frowning from this strange scene.

Somebody cursed out loud from next to him.

“You ballsy bastards! Where the hell do you think this is!”

“Those guys aren’t unkillable anymore! We can do it if we group up!”

The villagers reacted the moment they saw the Higher Races.

Then.

Whooosh!

Hundreds of rage filled projectiles few towards the Higher Race.

But in an instant.



Trtrtrtrnggg

The golden spear in the Akalachia's hand spun around like a windmill.

And the Rebeloongs and the Arukons behind also used their spears to deflect away the projectiles.

Tong! Titititing!

Hundreds of projectiles got destroyed and bounced off in mid air.

And everyone flinched as they saw this scene.

They had made too many assumptions.

Thinking about it again, those guys still had tremendous amounts of bodily strength.

Maybe if they had mana but in a situation like this where they also lost their skills, they weren't easy opponents at all.

While the people stopped.

From the mouth of the Akalachia in the very front, unexpected words came out.

“Calm down. Anyways, who are you guys? Are you our descendants? Why are you living in a cave like this?”

“What?”

For them to not know whom they have toyed around for so long.

The people stared at the Akalachia just in case it was some trick but the curiosity and confusion inside the eyes of the Akalachia didn't seem like lies.

‘What the hell...’

The villagers fell into a confused state.

.....

‘How long has past? What happened?’

The general and royalty, Kel-Durin mumbled as he looked at his body and his surroundings.

‘It seems like we’ve succeeded...’

Kel-Durin stared at the tiny race in front of his eyes.

Of course if he still had his original body, that man over where

would be a bit larger than himself.

But since the transfer has been completed, the man looked way too small compared to himself.

‘What is this guy. He doesn’t seem like someone from our race.’

Kel-Durin felt the tremendous amount of power within his body and then made a confused expression as he watched the person in front of his eyes.

Though they looked similar, there was a lot of fundamental differences such as the bone structure.

And also he didn’t have the mana pool that every Sage had in general.

‘It seems something unexpected happened.’

Kel-Durin frowned as he looked at the broken containers.

Ssssk.

Kel-Durin then checked the machinery where the Blue-Stone was embedded in.

A transmitter that was built to migrate hundreds of thousands of

souls at the same time for the move.

And as if it had used up all its power, the lights from various panels on it were getting faint but Kel-Durin was able to check the panels before they turned off.

He then exclaimed out in shock.

‘790 years? 790 years have past?’

Something went wrong and that something went wrong horribly.

As Kel-Durin was frowning.

Boom!

Booboom!

The Akalachias who were fighting up above came down to the secret room

And soon the secret room was filled with tens of giant Akalachias.

Though they had met each other again in completely different bodies, Kel-Durin was able to figure who was who out instantly.

“Kel-Durin”

“Kan-Kun, well done.”

Kel-Durin frowned as he looked at Kan-Kun who was covered from head to toe in blood.

It seems they only activated the Red-Stone and fought each other.

Kan-Kun frowned at the pain and then asked the race standing on the ground.

“Who are you? And why do you have that in your hands?”

The Black-Stone and Red-Stone were items left behind for the small amount of managers to activate.

It was not something that this guy, whom he had never even seen or heard of, should have.

Kiiiiing.

‘And it’s still active huh.’

Kan-Kun frowned as he sensed the dry mana within his body.

“Hand that over.”

Whooosh

Kan-Kun crouched and then moved his hand towards the small midget.

The Red-Stone alone was fine but the Black-Stone that had combined with the Red-Stone was dangerous to them as well.

It was a tremendous artifact that suppressed their entire technology with just its existence.

They wouldn't even have made such a thing if they didn't have to for the move.

Though the plan seemed to have shifted a little but since the first stage, Soul Migration, has been completed they needed to get it back.

But Hansoo lifted his spear with his hand.

Clang!

“You see, stealing is a bad habit.”

He didn't know how they were going to act.

He could not hand it over in such a case.

“That’s originally ours you midget.”

Kan-Kun spoke with a growl.

He was feeling pain and he didn’t understand the situation yet.

He was already annoyed but somebody who he has never seen before was pointing a blade at him while holding onto a dangerous weapon.

Of course a rough growl came out of Kan-Kun’s mouth.

He would’ve tried to save his body without mana in the past but everything was different now.

Since they had gained a new body along with new strength.

Courage that could support his rage rose up inside him.

And Hansoo spoke to these Sages.

“You want to have a go?”

“What?”



At those words the Akalachia standing in the very front ,Kan-Kun the rank 1 Sage, scoffed.

Though the little midget's body seemed quite strong, it was not even close to theirs.

What was causing him to be so arrogant?

Well, it wasn't that the Sages didn't like conversing.

But there was no need to do things the hard way then their strength was much higher than the other party.

‘Suppress him and then take it.’

Boom! Boom!

The rank 1 Sages inside the Akalachia's body walked towards Hansoo.

At that moment.

Kkkkkkkkkngggg

A vibration that shook the entire room could be felt.

Something much different than their footsteps.

And Kan-Kun and Kel-Durin flinched at this quake.

‘What...’

This was the vibration from the Monolith that shook the secret room moving.

And soon a loud shout was heard in the distance.

“Hey! Are you alright in there! We’re coming in!”

At the same time with that shout, countless people coming in could be felt.

‘...There’s this many? What the hell happened while we were asleep...’

An earthquake that was transmitted through the long tunnel.

The Sages, who have obtained this new body that could sense this

quake, frowned in nervousness.

.....

“There’s been a lot of changes in the 800 years we were asleep huh.”

Kel-Durin, the person in Akalachia’s body, frowned as he sat in the hastily made barracks.

According to their original plan, they’d be busy testing out their new body but there was no time to do such a thing.

Since a tremendous amount of change had occurred after they woke up.

‘At this rate...We need to alter the whole plan.’

Kel-Durin mumbled quietly.

Their plan was simple.

Leave their weak human bodies and move into a much more powerful body.

They had created new bodies because of this and had even created the Red-Stone and Black-Stone that temporarily froze their

conscious and mana to reduce the risk as much as possible while they moved into their new bodies.

Since they found through experimenting that the chances of failure rose if they had their consciousness and mana.

So they created the three stones and fell asleep.

But for them to have been asleep for 800 years.

‘And...The fact that the Makrons who were supposed to be rank 2 bodies were annihilated is a big deal.’

Kel-Durin frowned.

Rank 1, the Akalachias created for the royalty.

Rank 2, the Makrons created for the nobility

Rank 3, the Arukons created for warriors.

Rank 4, the Rebeloongs created for commoners.

The Makronss who were supposed to handle the middle stage had all been annihilated.

Due to the other three races while they were asleep.

‘Even if we give them mana and a consciousness, they’re still beasts huh. This is going to create problems in the next stage.’

And because they fought with each other, the already limited mana crystals had run out.

There was also another issue.

Kel-Durin clutched his head at the sounds he could hear coming in from outside.

‘The body being developed has its downsides.’

The extremely developed body allowed him to hear everything.

But he could not ignore these noises.

Since it was not something he could ignore.

Kel-Durin spoke expressionlessly.

“Let’s go out. It seems like we will need to speak with the other side for a bit.”

“...Will it be okay? That midget race seems to be extremely aggressive.”

Kan-Kun frowned.

It had been 3 days since they woke up.

There had been countless things that happened during that time.

And Kel-Durin made a tired smile at Kan-Kun.

“Well. That man seems to have things under control quite well. Let’s trust in that.”

It seems like while they were asleep, this so-called ‘God’ had played around a bit and their world seems to be used as a tunnel.

A bridge to the next world.

The entrance was the Kangri-Worm’s area.

And the exit was at a location near the Silver Sea.

‘What a tremendous change. Can we still... Complete it? Damn. If we took the Black-Stone back then... There wouldn’t even be a need to ponder about such a thing like this.’

Kel-Durin thought of the Satellite Fortresses that didn’t work as he walked out of his tent.

A giant basin.

His race, that had temporarily gathered here, could be seen.

Countless Akalachias, Arukons and Rebeloongs.

They all looked different and had different ranks, they were still a part of the same race.

And the other side of the basin.

Countless people had gathered.

All with a blade of some sort in their hands.

As he walked out, the sounds he had been hearing became even clearer.

Well, the enraged roars and shouts.

“Why are we leaving them be!”

“Fucking hell! Do you know how much we suffered because of them?”

“Kill them all!”

There was no need for both sides to be angry with each other in a fight or a war.

Since one side being angry was enough.

Kel-Durin clicked his tongue as he looked at the swarming humans looking at him with cold eyes.



## Chapter 202 : Transference (2)

---

The giant basin near the Birdcage, the Akran.

Hundreds of thousands of people had been gathered in the giant basin.

But this was just the beginning.

The people who were in the villages were gathering here constantly.

To the location which will become the new city of the humans.

Because it was at the center of the Green Road, it was the best place to be in terms of location and because there were a variety of beasts around this location it was also a great place to hunt.

The Satellite Fortresses that threatened the humans had disappeared and this land should've become the humans'.

Well, it what was supposed to happen.

“Damn...”

Kulkin, one of the adventurers who had gathered at the Akran along with others, grinded his teeth at the Higher Race he could see in the distance.

The humans had won.

The Satellite Fortresses had fallen due to unknown reasons and the Higher Races weren't invincible existences since there wasn't any mana.

Since a god who has fallen to the ground wasn't fit to be called a god anymore.

No, they had to kill them while they were on the ground.

This current situation was all because there was no mana.

Why were they just watching this situation?

‘And even with such people like this.’

If they didn't have strength the story would be different but it wasn't like that they didn't have any strength.

Since the newcomers weren't like newbies at all.

They all had monstrous bodies, unfitting to be called humans like himself.

The ones who were here before were stronger right now because

there was still a gap due to the runes but it wouldn't take long to catch up.

Since it wouldn't take that long to fill up their runes by hunting with such bodies.

‘I don't know how he brought such guys here but if we fight alongside them... We might be able to win.’

Kulkin looked at the tremendous amount of forces behind him and made a sad expression.

‘Morris... I need to avenge you...’

The image of his friend being ripped apart in front of his eyes was still vivid in his head.

Kulkin clenched his teeth as he remembered his friend's expression which was staring at him desperately until the end.

---

“It's been a while Hansoo”.

“Mmm.”

Hansoo made a smile as he looked at the faces he hadn't seen in awhile.

It was nice seeing these faces after such a long time.

Enbi Arin, Sofia, Mihee and other familiar faces that he had left behind in the zone below could be seen.

The owner of the new Crown of Thorns and the second soul fragment, Gwanje, couldn't come up because he had to control the people below but the others had gotten Hansoo's signal through Gwanje and had come up.

And countless people had split up and were constructing the city.

The villages were now a dark part of their history.

They needed a new city befitting of this new zone.

Though they were only building one, they would build more as time went on.

'It wouldn't take long.'

Hansoo mumbled as he watched the process from afar.

Though they didn't have any tools it didn't matter.

Since their bodies were much more different.

Kwadududuk!

Ududuk!

Snapping trees and cutting rocks.

With strength that didn't seem like that of a human.

Even without mana, these people didn't lose out to the original Yellow Zone's people and actually were doing even better.

A tremendously powerful body.

This was all because of the Body Enhancement Surgery they received in the second zone.

These people didn't lose out to Hansoo in terms of their body.

There were tens of thousands of such people.

And Mihee, who had brought these people up, made a proud expression.

If this was the real world then she was at a level she couldn't even have imagined.

The amount of burden and responsibilities on her shoulders was much larger but seeing such powerful adventurers, she could feel her past struggles and hardships being washed away.

‘I’ve seen Hansoo after so long as well. Anyways, it’s so hard to see his damn face.’

Mihee looked at Hansoo with an upset expression.

She had imagined that they would always be together because they were with each other during the Tutorial.

But Hansoo was busy beyond her imagination.

To the point of being hard to chase him.

‘Well, I didn’t even think things would happen like this.’

Thinking of her college days of the past, she started to giggle.

And Hansoo laughed while looking at Mihee.

Though he had become a person who was quite unresponsive to most things while fighting in the Abyss, he was still human.

Since the hard work of the Yellow Zone had been completed well, he naturally felt good.

A rare smile appeared on Hansoo's usually expressionless face.

'It seems Karhal found his sibling.'

Hansoo looked at Ekidu and Karhal who started to walk towards this location after controlling the people.

Karhal, Ekidu and a few others were working hard to control the people of the Yellow Zone but Karhal looked as if such work was nothing and was continually smiling and laughing.

To the point of making Hansoo feel content as well.

'Let's work a bit harder. Everything's going well.'

Hansoo mumbled inwardly.

He just needed to continue like this.

If he continued like this and there weren't any more problems from now on then humanity would gain a tremendous amount of power and wouldn't get massacred once they entered the Abyss right away like they had in the past.

Which means he would be able to prevent people precious to him from dying off.

And him struggling and working a bit harder to achieve this would be fine.

Since he had struggled for 50 years already anyway.

Compared to his friends getting killed and ripped apart next to him, this was nothing.

Though bodily injuries healed, the memories inside one's head lasted.

Hansoo thought up to this point and refocused.

‘Not yet.’

The Smile on Hansoo's face disappeared.

It wasn't time to drop his guard yet.

Though he had solved the problem, something unexpected happened.

Suppress the Higher Races, who have gone berserk, one by one.

A frontal clash would be hard but it wouldn't be hard to kill them off while they fought each other.



Then he would receive the method of creating the Mana Pool inside the human's bodies and perform the surgery on all humans.

But since the Sages had received the bodies of the Higher Races, things have become much more complex.

They were smart, rational and knew how to work together.

The Sages, who had been spread apart, understood the situation almost instantly even after sleeping for hundreds of years and had gathered into groups they had planned previously.

The people with Rebeloong's body conversed with each other and the Arukons surveyed the surroundings.

And the Akalachias stood above them all and controlled them.

If they fought then it would just be a huge disaster.

There were hundreds of thousands of Higher Races who could handle hundreds of humans per member.

Though they would win because the ones with Body Enhancement Surgeries had come with them as well but they would still gain a huge amount of casualties.

He hadn't raised them to lose them in a place like this.

At that moment.

A giant flag could be seen in the distance.

‘It seems they want to speak now.’

Hansoo spoke while looking at the Akalachia who was awkwardly swinging a piece of cloth tied to a huge log tens of meters long.

“I’ll be back. Take care of this place.”

“Uh... Huh?”

Even before anybody could say anything, Hansoo quickly disappeared.

And the place where Hansoo left was then filled with awkwardness where people started to slowly speak one by one.

Since they would be together for a while anyway.

The mingling of the previous members and newcomers was important.

“Uh... Nice to meet you. I’m called Ekidu. Welcome to the Yellow Zone.”

“...I’m Karhal. I hope things go well.”

Karhal turned around and looked towards the location Hansoo had gone off to with a worried expression.

The job he was assigned was actually much more important than just control.

Though he was controlling them, their rage was slowly building up.

Since the pain and struggle they had gone through for over a decade wouldn’t easily go away.

There was no way their rage would disappear just because the ones who had killed their friends and family and even themselves started to laugh and make strange noises.

Though they were barely suppressing their rage, it wouldn’t be weird for it to explode at any moment.

‘Anyways, does he have no sense of fear? To jump into the enemy territory alone.’

He pondered if he should follow Hansoo but shook his head.

There’s nothing he’d be able to do anyway even if the situation

blew up.

It was better to just stay here and do his job.

Karhal clenched his hands at his powerlessness as he looked towards the Higher Race's camp Hansoo went towards.

‘Fucking bird heads. Just try touching him.’

Then there wouldn't be any controlling or anything.

He would just rile up the people behind him and attack first.

This was why he needed to control them even more now.

Before these people, who were roaring out in rage, caused something.

‘Well, at least it's much more easier now since these guys are helping us.’

Karhal shook his head and then spoke towards the woman who had introduced herself as Mihee.

“At least your side is better than us right? You should've prepared a bit before coming up.”

But Mihee shook her head at those words.

“It doesn’t seem like there’s much difference for us either.”

“...?”

“We just have hundreds of thousands of people.”

‘And the power that suppressed them is now gone.’

Karhal nervously looked at the countless newcomers behind Mihee at those words.

---

Boooom!

Hansoo flew in from afar and landed in front of the Akalachias.

Kel-Durin, the acting leader of the Sages, spoke towards Hansoo.

“Greetings. To make things easier we shall call you humans as you have told us. Are you the king of those humans?”

Hansoo shook his head.

“We don’t really have such a system.”

“Well. After hearing your story, those things weren’t something a king would do.”

Kel-Durin, who had been busily gathering information, nodded.

A king reigned from the back and stood above the others.

But the man in front of his eyes was acting at the exact opposite location of where a king should be.

He fought at the frontmost locations, the roughest and the lowest places.

The most vicious and dangerous places.

There was a reason why this man was worthy of his respect.

‘If it were the days back when we were Sages then I would’ve used him very well.’

Kel-Durin looked at the human in front of him with a regrettable expression.

A good king was important during times of peace but during times of war, the most important things were good generals and soldiers.

And the man in front of his eyes had more than enough qualifications.

If he had been born as a Sage, no even if he wasn't a sage, he would've risen to the highest point.

Up to the position of the Great General who stood next to the king.

Hansoo ignored the Sage's words and then spoke expressionlessly.

"Let's get to the main point. Let's talk about what we shall do from now on."

"...Yes, the introductions were a bit too long. Let's get to the point indeed. The thing you want from us the Mana Pool Surgery right?"

Hansoo nodded at those words.

Since it was the final objective he needed to accomplish in this world.

Something that allowed them to use mana non-stop like monsters all day.

Mana pool.

Once it was planted inside the human's bodies, then they would be able to have a much larger amount of mana and gain the upper hand.

It was a bit too much to have as much mana as a Satellite Fortress but they would be able to utilize a much larger amount of mana, at least a few times more.

Kel-Durin shrugged his shoulders at Hansoo's words.

“Not hard. There's actually a system to plant the Mana Pool inside the body on every Satellite Fortress. Though there's a lot of you...About three of them would be able to change your entire race. It would be even faster if we don't use the Satellite Fortresses for anything else.”

Hansoo made a surprised expression.

Because it was faster than he had expected.

“It seems it's quite simple.”

“It's because we invested a lot of time and resources in order to shorten the surgery time after we invented it.”

Hansoo then spoke the next thing on his mind while staring at



Kel-Durin.

“What do you want from now on?”

There was no way he would say such things with no reason.

He was doing his because there was something he wanted.

Kel-Durin smiled towards Hansoo.

“There’s something you must do for our plan. If you do this for us then we will provide you with the Satellite Fortresses and even tell you the Mana Pool Surgery method. If you accept our offer then we would become allies, though temporary.”

Hansoo nodded and stared at Kel-Durin.

Telling him to hurry and speak.

But the thing that came out of Kel-Durin’s mouth was not something Hansoo had to do but more information.

“Let me say something before that. You need to hear this if you want to gain the Mana Pool. Why we tried to gain stronger bodies.”

“Wasn’t it because you just needed stronger bodies?”

Kel-Durin scoffed and then pointed towards the fallen Satellite Fortresses.

“With something like that? You think we’d need powerful bodies?”

“Hmm.”

“Strength was just a byproduct, we just made it well since we were going to anyway.”

Hansoo nodded.

A short thought was all he needed.

A powerful body was not something necessary to them.

Even more so not a reason for them to all go into cryo-sleep at the same time.

‘It shouldn’t be something like a contagious disease or anything.’

Kel-Durin spoke towards Hansoo.

# Chapter 203 : Garmeia (1)

---

Kel-Durin touched his belly as he spoke.

“Actually, our race don’t need to receive the Mana Pool surgery. We were born with such an organ. The Mana Pool in our bodies was something we created after researching the organ inside our bodies we were born with.”

The humans were similar but there was an important difference.

The humans, who had been living on Earth, had no organ to produce mana.

But the Sages were different.

From the moment they were born, there existed a marvelous body that converts food into liquid mana located between the intestines and their stomach.

The Mana Pool grew as the Sage grew and the Sages gained the rights to use a tremendous amount of mana throughout their life.

The mana that was created from the Mana Pool traveled to the very depths of the body as it stimulated and supplemented all the cells within their body.

Though this was the start of their tragedy.

“Vigorous body. It’s a good thing. You see, we become adults in just 3 years. And because the mana stimulates our brain cells, our intelligence is much higher as well. 3 years is more than enough to control our race’s technology.”

They grew at an extreme rate.

They learned very quickly with tremendously high intelligence, invented marvelous technology and improved them.

And they could control mana like a part of their body, such as their arms or legs.

The Satellite Fortress wasn’t created for no reason.

Their race, the Sages, had used this extreme intelligence and mana as a basis to increase their strength.

But there existed a fatal disadvantage.

A reason why there were only a few hundred thousand sages despite having only 3 years to adulthood with nonexistent natural predators.

Kel-Durin made a bitter smile.

“Do you know what our average life expectancy is?”

“ ... ”

“It’s under 12 years. 12 fucking years. Hahahaha. Funny right?”

The mana stimulated all the cells in their body and increased the speed of their metabolism

Thankfully they grew fast and their injuries healed quickly as well, there was a limit to how many times a cell could divide.

Though their had a tremendously quick rate of growth, intelligence and mana, their cells weren’t strong enough to handle the mana.

But ironically, the cells that had been burnt up by the usage of mana continued to get regenerated by the mana.

And the cells that had gone through mitosis many more times than the cells of the humans could not continue as they reach their limit.

And that was the end of the Sages.

The end.

And due to some unknown issues, their fertility rates weren’t that good as well.

Short life and low fertility rates.

This was an extremely fatal problem to a race.

They had always been wary of their low population and tried to increase their lifespan and their fertility issue with their vast knowledge and technology for a very long time.

But it was all futile.

As if god was balancing them for their vast power, their numbers had always stayed around a few hundred thousands.

So the ranking system came to be.

The ones with longer lifespans from birth had become rank 1 and the ones who had shorter lifespans from genetic flaws became rank 4.

For their race, where members get stronger from mana the longer they stay alive, a longer lifespan was almost equal to stronger power.

Kel-Durin spoke up to this point, chuckled and then spoke.

“So our king is the one with the longest lifespan. Funny right? Though we have the technology to split apart mountains and cause

seas to flip, the one who becomes the king is the one who lives the longest. Heheh...”

Someone who lived 20 years was astronomically wiser than someone who has lived 15 years and ones who had lived for 15 years understood more than those who lived 10 years.

They were different from humans who had a limit and got older as time went on.

Their cells would get reinforced by the mana as time went on which in turn enhanced their body.

Their control of mana increased and their wisdom rose as well.

Their nickname in the past had been the Race of the Dragons.

Because they were like Dragons who got stronger as they got older.

Of course their lifespans and bodies were tremendously lesser but nobody questioned this.

But then.

A monster had been born.

Karmen.

Their king.

He had been born to royalty and showcased a tremendous amount of charisma and intellect as a child.

“Surprisingly, our king Karmen had lived for 60 years. Can you believe that?”

Kel-Durin mumbled.

Hansoo was shocked.

Though 60 years didn't seem like a lot, the average lifespan of these guys was merely 12 years.

In human terms it meant that Karmen had lived for almost 500 years.

‘What a mutation.’

And Karmen had accomplished a large amount of things with his vastly superior abilities compared to other rank 1 royalties.

And the great achievement he had thought up and had started.



<If we fail at creating a whole new body for ourselves then let's just reconstruct the beasts that live in this world. Those who live in the same environment as us but have a more powerful body and longer lifespans. We will then move our souls to their bodies.>

At first they were hesitant.

Because they had tried it before.

And they had failed.

But Karmen was different.

Kel-Durin made an expression full of respect.

“Though it seems like there had been some unexpected events... It's a great success. For this body to still be here after 800 years.”

Kel-Durin looked at his body with a gleeful expression.

He had been fearful and had been worried about his body that had only 1 year left and was breaking down.

So he had rushed into cryo-sleep as soon as the soul migration technology had been created.

For his new body.

Though they wanted to split it up into numerous times but creating the Bluestone took over 10 years.

It might be different for the other races but for them 10 years was more than enough time for 80% of them to die off.

So except for the few remaining Sages, they all went into cryo-sleep.

And the result was glorious.

‘Now...The preparations are complete.’

They had finally broken through the limitations that had blocked the advancement of their race.

Hansoo spoke towards Kel-Durin who had been smiling in pride.

“Did you say all this just to tell me about the side effects?”

Kel-Durin shook his head at those words.

“No, while your bodies aren’t as good as the ones we have currently, it is still much superior to our original bodies. The important part about my story is about our king Karmen.”

The mana pool was actually something created for the Higher Races.

In order to perform this surgery on the humans, they had to alter the surgery to some degree.

“We also don’t know a lot about the actual Surgery. Since Karmen administrated all of this by himself.”

A stupid person could not understand the thoughts of a genius.

And the difference of intellect between Karmen, who had lived for 60 years, and Kel-Durin, who had lived for 20 years, was beyond imagination.

To the point of the entire Sage race having a hard time understanding one man’s thoughts.

Kel-Durin then spoke to Hansoo.

“Thankfully there are notes left behind by him. The research notes Karmen has compiled for us is extremely precious to us. Those are things we will need to research and improve from now on. So what we want is not really different from what you guys want. Inside the Satellite Fortress of Karmen, there is a research lab. Please go there and bring us the research notes. Then we will use those research notes as the basis to alter the surgery to your bodies.”

Hansoo made a confused expression.

“Why didn’t you guys bring it?”

It was just bringing some notes.

Kel-Durin made a slightly bitter expression.

“Wel...Karmen was a bit of a oddity and had set it up so nobody else could enter his lab.”

Kel-Durin smacked his lips while he spoke as if he could taste the bitterness.

Heavenly Siege Fortress, Garmeia.

A Satellite Fortress created for the imperishable king, Karmen, with the most powerful mana engine they had ever created and had a size that was a few times larger than a normal Satellite Fortress.

Karmen’s research lab existed within the Garmeia which should’ve crashed somewhere as of now.

This place was only allowed for Karmen.

They were all curious about the insides of this place but nobody

had gone in here as of yet.

The Sages could not enter.

Even after they moved bodies.

Kel-Durin thought of that treasure vault as he spoke.

“If an existence with a mana pool goes in then it detects it and does not allow entry. So it’s impossible for us. The data might even get destroyed if we get close. So please bring this to us.”

The defense mechanism had two methods.

Detection of the sages who tried to enter and the destruction of the data inside.

Karmen allowed the distribution and sharing of information but did not allow the stealing of it.

Before he was a king, he was a researcher who had a huge amount of greed for knowledge.

And nobody had any complaints.

Since this allowed their technology to advance a step further and they all believed that Karmen would eventually release the data to

the public one day.

But in this current situation, where Karmen's location was a mystery, it may take at least a few centuries if they get near that location and the data got destroyed.

So somebody without the mana pool was the answer.

‘So you need to help us.’

Kel-Durin looked at the human in front of his eyes.

Though a new variable of an unknown race had come up, a 3 day group talk came with this conclusion.

Since it has come down to this, let's use this new race to obtain the data.

Hansoo asked Kel-Durin after hearing all this.

“It still works even when the mana is frozen?”

The Sage's technology worked on mana.

He didn't know what that defense mechanism was but it shouldn't be working right now since the mana had been frozen in the entire zone.

Kel-Durin chuckled at those words.

“I never said the thing protecting the data is a machine. Karmen has created a lot of strange things you see. Oh, you should go too by the well. Unless you want to see your underlings die for no reason.”

If a Sage, who had the possibility to aim for the data, approached then the data would get destroyed.

But if they, who don't have the mana pool, go in then getting rid of these people would be the higher priority.

None of the Sages had gone inside before.

Except Karmen.

‘It’s... Probably alive. Probably.’

Kel-Durin’s body trembled as he thought of the monstrosity, <El-Tara>.

.....

“Damn”

Kulkin, who had been staring at the Higher Race in the distance for quite a while now, spat on the ground as he sat.

Countless thoughts flashed past his head.

Should I gather the others or not.

Should I try to do something or not.

Should he just watch like this.

But the conclusion was always the same.

As long as there were people who surrounded them and prevented the collision of both sides, he won't be able to do anything.

Neither the avenging of his comrade nor getting his revenge.

Though he had become free, nothing had changed.

If one didn't have power then they didn't even have the rights to voice their opinions and feelings.

At that moment.

Somebody came next to him and sat down.



Kulkin looked at this person.

‘Who is this?’

A stranger.

It’s not strange to see somebody new since there were so many people here but there wasn’t any reason this person should come to him.

The person who sat next to Kulkin smiled as he saw the confused expression.

“It feels shitty right? That somebody above us is stopping us from doing what we want right?”

Kulkin stopped and then looked at the man.

“Who are you?”

The man smiled.

“Let’s introduce ourselves later. Let’s just talk a bit more for now. It’s too much right? It’s not like we want to anything bad, we just want some revenge.”

The man, Metiron, put his hand on Kulkin's shoulder as he spoke.

## Chapter 204 : Garmeia (2)

---

“...It seems they’re getting angrier and angrier.”

Karhal, Ekidu, Mihee and the others frowned as they heard the sounds being created from around them.

‘Damn...Now I know why they didn’t allow us to use the carrier pigeons when we were in the village.’

If people shared opinions then it became easier for them to group up and would in end become harder to control.

If you wanted to rule then you needed to rip apart the separate the ones you want to rule over.

But they thought that they would become the same as that Dark Lord guy and didn’t really care to rule over them but for something like this to happen.

There were no carrier pigeons but there was no way to stop words of the mouth.

‘Well. Even if we did block it, there wouldn’t be much effect.’

Karhal shook his head.

If they blocked communication then the anger that was headed

towards the Higher Race would just come towards them instead.

Since something like that needed to be done in secret.

“Fuck! What the hell are we doing sitting like this man!”

“This is annoying as hell, fuck!”

And the rage filled shouts could be heard from below.

If the newcomers Mihee, Enbi Arin and the others brought up weren't here then the situation would've blown apart already.

Karhal made a nervous expression.

Hugging a lighted bomb would be better than this.

The first victory of the humans in the Yellow Zone.

The Higher Races, who had been ruling over them, had fallen and the idea that this situation won't last forever as well as the rage that existed previously was causing a storm to rise up within the crowd.

‘Fuck...This doesn't make sense. This is too fast.’

Karhal made a suspicious expression.

The reason why Karhal judged that it would be fine for a while wasn't a big reason.

It was just fear.

Since he thought that the fear of the Higher Race still remained within their mind.

If rage was one of the main emotions of humans then fear was as well.

But the situation was going downhill way to quickly.

Rage was eating up fear too fast.

And if a collision happens both sides will have heavy casualties.

“Damn...I have no idea what to do as well.”

Karhal smiled bitterly towards Mihee.

Then.

Mihee also made a cold expression as she spoke.

“Well...It doesn't seem like it's that different for us either.”

“Huh?”

Karhal looked towards where Mihee was looking after flinching at her cold expression.

Tens of people surrounded one man as they walked towards Mihee and the others.

They weren't people from the Yellow Zone.

Since it was impossible for tens of people to have such large and powerful bodies if they came from here.

They showed off the fact that they received the Body Enhancement Surgery with weapons in their holster but the tension continued to rise.

The man standing at the very front walked up to Mihee and then smiled towards her.

A cold smile.

But he had seen the nervousness in her cold smile.

No further explanations were needed.

The man spoke towards Mihee.

“We only changed a single zone but it seems a lot has changed.”

Kaltus looked behind him which was getting louder and louder and smiled.

And Mihee frowned as she looked at the man.

‘Kaltus.’

A man who had complained about the rules ever since they were below.

Of course people with such opinions weren't just Kaltus alone and this group, which consisted of him and others with similar beliefs, often voiced their disagreement towards Enbi Arin and Mihee.

What the hell were they doing, was this a dictatorship?

Since the person with the Crown of Thorns, Gwanje, was below this just ended with just some complaining and since Mihee and the others couldn't kill them for this, they had been left alone.

But now.

The ones who bore fangs before realized their leash had disappeared and now they were voicing their opinions again.

‘We came up too fast....Ugh. I thought they’d be calm for a bit more.’

Mihee frowned.

She realized why Hansoo had called her so urgently.

Since a 2nd war between the Higher Races and the Humans would have occurred already if they weren’t here.

But they weren’t necessarily fully united as well.

Since it hasn’t even been half a year since they united into the giant clan, <Unity>.

Too short of a time to change somebody.

And the suppressed embers were slowly lighting back up now.

Kaltus spoke towards Mihee.

“I’m thankful to you guys and understand that you guys are amazing. But how long are you going to hold onto us? It doesn’t



seem like there should be a reason for us to stay like this.”

As if Enbi Arin didn't like this Kaltus, she clenched her fists and spat out.

“...I think I explained why we have to wait a bit longer. Aren't you acting out a bit too much?”

They had shared all the intel they had.

Higher Race.

And the surgery they had for the <Mana Pool>.

They had told them that they needed an alliance with the Sages because of this and were suppressing their anger.

Others might not but these people, who have used skills for years now, should know the importance of the size of one's maximum mana.

The moment they receive that surgery then they will gain more strength to trample through the Otherworld.

Kaltus smiled at those words.

“No, I don't have any complaints regarding that. For such a thing

to exist. And I'm very thankful that you are trying to share that with us. Look at this Body Enhancement Surgery, you are like angels to us man."

This was the truth.

They didn't really want to be enemies with Mihee and the others in front of them.

And they knew that they should be allies.

But who should have the leadership was the issue.

He needed to take it when the opportunity arose.

Kaltus, who had always lived like this in the Otherworld, licked his lips.

He could feel it.

That a chance came.

This moment where these people's power has not touched this zone yet and the power that held him down was gone.

This was the chance to take the spotlight back.

Kaltus smiled and then spoke again.

“But you see, I just don’t like the method. We’re much superior but why do we have to discuss with them?”

Kaltus then looked towards the Sage’s tents in the distance.

The history of humans were filled with victory and conquest.

People who were less different grouped up to stomp upon those who were more different than them.

Steal their thing and distribute.

Ever since the primitive era to the modern era, there were differences but the main idea has never changed.

But Kaltus could not understand why they had to be in peace with those guys in the distance and receive the surgery in such a manner.

And he didn’t want to understand anyway.

And let’s say they did receive the surgery finally after an alliance.

How could they be sure those guys won’t play tricks on the surgery.

If they put some weird time bomb inside their body while doing the surgery then it was over.

Even if they receive some casualties, he needed to get them and stomp them beneath his feet.

Like how Gwanje had done against them.

“Do you not hear the voices of these enraged people? You think they’re low in number? They are the majority. If we help then it’ll be easy to get the others to join.”

“...”

Mihee’s pretty eyes turned into an ugly frown at Kaltus’s words.

Since the worst case scenario they were wary of has come to be true.

They were larger in number than the enraged people.

But if Kaltus joined them then the story would change.

‘This...Is now out of control.’

Kaltus laughed towards Mihee and then spoke again.

“We lived in a democratic society for countless decades right? I believe we should vote by majority for this. Ignoring the voice of the people is something a dictator does right? No? Listen to what they want.”

“..You damned bastard. So what? You want a war or something?”

Kaltus frowned towards Karhal who had suddenly spoke out but then laughed.

“Yes. That is exactly what I want.”

“What...”

While the people were at a loss for words from this, Kaltus made an extremely cold expression as he continued to speak.

“This damned world is a battlefield, what of it. Is having a battle on a battlefield that weird?”

“...”

“Did you gather your body, weapons and skills just to play around? You want to live in peace with others with the strength to split mountains and flip rivers?”

Kaltus spat out.

“Be honest. We lived in order to stomp others beneath us anyway. The scale’s just a bit larger now.”

Kaltus looked towards the Sage’s tents as he smiled.

.....

Kel-Durin frowned as he looked at the humans mumbling in the distance.

He then spoke.

“There’s something we need to deal with before the Garmeia it seems. What are you going to do about that?”

Countless voices that wanted to kill him could be heard.

‘Ugh. Having developed hearing is an annoyance as well.’

Well, he probably would’ve heard it even if his hearing wasn’t this developed.

Since the situation didn’t look that great.

Kel-Durin frowned slightly, coughed out and then spoke.

“You said that you have no king in your race right? But I believe a king is needed in a race. A person who can control that race, someone who can use them. That is a king. Even more so in a time of war.”

Kel-Durin continued to speak.

“In order to create an alliance we need to be able to keep each other from harm’s way. But we cannot trust your race like this.”

“So?”

Kel-Durin replied with a cold expression.

“You need the Mana Pool from us right? Prove your allegiance to us first. Control them with your power. Come back to us after all internal struggles are gone.”

Kel-Durin then backed up.

A gesture meaning that he will watch.

‘No need to roll around the mud.’

Kel-Durin mumbled expressionlessly.

Since they had gained a powerful body and left their weak bodies

behind, the only place for them to go was high above into the sky.

He had no thoughts of staying on the ground like this.

Since the a civilization with advanced technology weren't really interested in those who were uncultured anyway.

He didn't want to get involved and there wasn't really a need to.

Kel-Durin spoke to Hansoo again.

“Show us your ability. That is our part of the deal. You should at least do that much to ally with us right? The time limit is 1 week.”

The ones who were in need were the other side.

Only they could perform the Mana Pool surgery anyway.

Hansoo shook his head at Kel-Durin's words.

“There's no need to. There's a much simpler way. Should I solve it for you right away?”

“What?”

As Kel-Durin was confused.



Hansoo spoke with a smile.

“Just give me half of your Satellite Fortresses. Then everything becomes clean.”

“What...”

Kel-Durin frowned and then pondered.

And then.

“A robbery in broad daylight.”

Kel-Durin spat out after a few calculations.

# Chapter 205 : Garmeia (3)

---

Kel-Durin sighed.

‘Damned bastard. His goal was the Satellite Fortresses from the beginning. He was aiming for a chance to gain the method to control them. In the Zone below...There was probably a method similar to that.’

A simple look was enough.

The race over there was faithful to their emotions and were greedy so a vicious method was needed to control them.

They couldn’t see.

There was indeed an underlying system of hierarchy but it was not enough to control such a massive amount of people.

Maybe in the real world but this place was like a battlefield to them.

It was like the army to them.

It was impossible to send an army to their death with some connections or charisma.

They needed a method to control them but the fact that such an

army like that came up here meant only one thing.

That there was a powerful method of control below.

Kel-Durin frowned as he looked at the humans in the distance.

‘...He’s showing me this on purpose huh.’

And he couldn’t not hand the Satellite Fortresses over.

Since they were in a deadlock.

Kel-Durin carefully asked just in case.

“What if we cannot? The Satellite Fortresses are too precious to hand over. Especially half of them.”

Hansoo smiled as he spoke.

“I thought we were going to do our best to keep the alliance. I’m doing my best my holding them back. Even though an internal fight might occur. Since I am doing my best, you should as well.”

Hansoo then pointed towards the human’s side.

He knew that the anger of the people wouldn’t go away.

As well as the fact that the ones who came up will cause trouble with this chance.

It's fine for now but internal fights would occur sooner or later.

Kel-Durin sighed as he looked at Hansoo.

'No can do. It's not like we can all die or anything...'

Kel-Durin gulped at the sensation of a blade being under his chin.

If they didn't hand over the Satellite Fortress and hold on until the end?

He will prepare another method to control the humans and kill all the Sages in order to erase every possible unexpected outcome.

Even if he had to receive tremendous casualties.

It wouldn't be hard either.

Since he would just need to release the enraged humans.

He could just wipe the Sages off, take over the Satellite Fortresses and recover the mana.

‘No can do. We need to compromise here.’

Kel-Durin shook his head.

Actually, handing over half the Satellite Fortresses was a good thing.

They would definitely lose if they fought here.

But splitting the Satellite Fortresses in half and returning the mana would create a deterrent for war.

A best case scenario for the humans and Sages.

Kel-Durin frowned for a bit and then spoke.

“Okay fine. The remaining Satellite Fortresses, not counting the ones that haven’t been secured yet, total 212. We will give you 106, exactly half. Send 106 of your people and send them to us. I will tell you the methods.”

“What about Garmeia?”

Kel-Durin shook his head at Hansoo’s question.

“We don’t know the whereabouts of Garmeia yet anyway. Since the King’s Fortress moves where it wants to anyway. It won’t take

long to find it due to its size. We will talk about it after we finish up here.”

“Sure.”

Hansoo nodded as he laughed.

.....

‘Good. Good.’

Kaltus smiled as he looked at the scene that was working out perfectly for him.

The people of the Yellow Zone, who were filled with rage, were gathering around him as the center along with others who already had disagreements with the system as a whole.

‘It’s working out better than I expected.’

Though there are always people who were not content with the system, there aren’t many of them usually.

Since it wasn’t like Gwanje or the others were stomping them beneath their feet, they were just holding them back.

No, it was the best kind of environment to live in as long they

abided by the rules.

Hunting monsters was so easy to the point of it being weird and incidents like their lives being in danger by factors such as the Four Calamities, which they had no control over as humans, disappeared.

The Red and Orange zone where the World Tree and the strange mechanisms controlled the world, there wasn't a need to be wary of other humans anymore.

An unbelievable outcome if one took into account that the Red and Orange Zones were like disasters for humans to be in.

Of course it wasn't like Kaltus didn't like such an environment.

It was just that he wasn't content with it.

To Kaltus, who had a decent amount of skill, it was just his influence becoming smaller.

He was a leader of a clan before but he was merely a normal clansman in a land ruled over by <Unity>.

But this place, the Yellow Zone, was different.

'The ones who were in control...Are finally gone. Though I still can't imagine it. This place was even a harsher place to live?'

Kaltus clicked his tongue as he looked at the original people of the Yellow Zone who were roaring in anger in the distance.

It seems like this place was an even harsher place to be in than the Red and Orange Zones.

Of course such a thing didn't affect Kaltus who had come up late.

He has only heard about the Satellite Fortresses so he could not easily figure out what it was like.

Kaltus then mumbled as he thought of the person who had brought all of this up.

Kang Hansoo.

A person who was said to have done all this in an extremely short amount of time.

Of course Kaltus did not believe this.

‘There are too many weaklings in this world. Well. Maybe it was because they had been suppressed by the Higher Race with such a large amount of people and strength.’

Flap.



Kaltus mumbled as he walked out of the temporary tent.

People who liked to rely on others always prayed that a supernatural being that would solve their issues would appear.

They never thought to take care of themselves.

A hero was created by these people.

An existence created by need.

And he had no thoughts of relying on such a guy.

He would've retaliated against the Higher Race no matter what if he was in the same situation.

‘Retards. You should be able to take care of yourself at least.’

Kaltus finished his thoughts and moved out.

Boooooooooom!

At that moment.

The people around Kaltus reacted to his movements and the

surroundings got loud.

And soon.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Thousands of people followed Kaltus from behind.

People who had grouped up due to Kaltus.

Not all of them had to go either.

Since this was more than enough to pressure their opponents.

Kaltus smiled as he looked at Mihee and Enbi Arin's tents.

'Let's see, since their clan is Unity... Shall I call my clan Taiji?'

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Kaltus smiled as he looked at the thousands of people following him.

Once he got a position of leadership he would be able to distribute the power system among this world.

Booom!

Kaltus approached all the way up to Mihee's tent and then shouted out.

“Hey! Come out! We should finish our talk! How long are you going to hold us back?”

Kaltus smiled with a content expression.

These guys were buying time for now but this wouldn't last forever.

It would be war soon.

The Sages over there would be used as stepping stones to strengthen his own power.

At that moment.

“You've gathered quite a lot in this short amount of time.”

Boooooom.

‘...’

Kaltus flinched at the man, who was even larger than him, who

had come out of the tent.

And behind that man Mihee, Enbi Arin, Karhal, Ekidu and the others stood.

As if they would leave everything to this man.

And there would be only one person who was above the people who stood at the top of the clan Unity and had more authority.

“So you’re Kang Hansoo. Greetings. How lucky for me to be able to see you, I heard you were someone quite hard to see.”

Kaltus smiled.

He had heard countless rumors and stories.

But there was a problem in this world, where there was no media, where they had to communicate through numerous people.

‘And this guy seems so busy that he doesn’t even care about ruling over the clan.’

Kaltus made a content smile anyway.

If they were easy to deal with, would this guy have stepped out?

He had stepped out because he wasn't able to hold back anymore.

“Since your ‘Mighty general’ has come, let’s talk for a bit.”

Almost half of the people here were with him.

Even Hansoo wouldn't be able to ignore this.

The moment Kaltus was about to speak.

Hansoo looked around Kaltus's behind and then spoke expressionlessly.

“I don't really like you guys.”

“What?”

“Well, it's more closer to dislike than not liking really.”

Hansoo spat these words at Kaltus and thought of the past.

Back when he hated the humankind.

He was a weakling until he had reached the Yellow Zone.

And though it was obvious, the weak ones didn't even have a

good opinion against other humans.

Since humans were even scarier than beasts to the weak.

Hansoo thought up to this point and spoke to Kaltus.

“You might not believe it but... My friend says this. Humans will show their instincts if you don’t control them. So before controlling and asking them what they did wrong, you need to set up the rules.”

“What the hell are you talking about?”

Then.

Hansoo smiled as he brought something out from his pocket.

“I’m saying I’ll forgive you, once.”

Kaltus flinched as he saw this.

A strange marble where red and black was swirling and mixing onto each other.

“What...”

Even before Kaltus could react.

Oooooooooong!

The marble started to vibrate and shake the entire surrounding.

At the same time.

“Huh?”

“Uhh! The mana?”

Surprised shouts were heard from all around.

Kaltus freaked out as he shouted back.

“What the hell are you doing! If you reverse the mana now...”

At that moment.

Kuuuuugugugugunnnngg

A tremendous earthquake could be felt.

Something that was clearly different than the vibration created from the dark red marble.

At that moment.

Kiiiiiiing!

From all over the Akran, bright blue lights started to fly up.

Giant Satellite Fortresses that were shining blue to be exact.

Rumbleee.

“Uhhh...”

The newcomers were dazed out at this marvelous scene but the original inhabitants of this place were different.

“Aaaaah!”

“Ugh...”



The original members of the Yellow Zone screamed out in fear.

Since the fact that the Satellite Fortresses, which had caused a massacre over their heads in the past, was back up was enough to bring back their fears.

Kaltus's tightly packed groups instantly divided up.

At the same time.

Zzzzoomm!

A single beam of light came out from the Satellite Fortress and smashed into the mountains in the distance.

Boooooom!

A mountain in front of the great basin, the Akran, turned into dust in an instant.

The giant mountain that hundreds of thousands of people were digging up in order to build their city.

“Uhh...”

A clear threat.

And the newcomer's expressions turned the same as the previous residents of this place.

Since they realized why these people couldn't even think of retaliating against the Higher Race with this many people.

A ginormous metal castle that split mountains.

And tens of these.

This was not something humans can go up against.

‘Fucking hell....’

Keltus grinded his teeth as he watched this scene.

Since he realized right away.

That this moment.

The Yellow Zone has become the same as the Red and Orange Zone.

Hansoo spoke few words as he looked at Kaltus.

“You know the rules right? I’m sure you’ll follow them. I’ll forgive you this one time since you haven’t caused any trouble

yet.”

“...Fuck you, you fucking dictator bastard.”

Hansoo chuckled as he looked at Kaltus.

If he could win then he could do anything, much less becoming a dictator.

He had no leisure to listen to everyone’s wishes and dreams.

‘There’s... Not much time before the Abyss opens.’

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then spoke.

“Don’t be so discontent with it, I’m doing this all for the benefit of you anyway. Now since we’re in a much more comfortable situation, let’s talk for a bit.”

“...Fuck. What do you want to talk about now?”

Kaltus replied lethargically.

Everything has ended.

What was there to talk about.

“Tell me who supported you from the back.”

Hansoo spoke towards Kaltus in a cold manner.

The clansmen, who were controlling the Satellite Fortress, were constantly sending messages to their Lord and the Soul Fragment within that Lord was being used to send Hansoo the intel.

The first thing Hansoo had to do was finding the suspicious people.

‘It’s too fast. There’s definitely a guy who caused all this.’

But he had no way of finding this.

This place, the entire Akran, was under his control and vision but he could not find anyone special.

As if that person had finished what he had to do here.

‘Where could he have gone?’

It would’ve been nice if they had run away but it didn’t seem that way.

Crackle.

Hansoo's fists clenched tightly and made threatening noises.

# Chapter 206 : Garmeia (4)

---

Crash

The exit that the people who have gone through the Green Road take.

Silver Sea.

It wasn't just called the Silver Sea for no reason.

Instead of normal water, this giant sea was filled with a silvery liquid metal instead.

It had the power to suppress the mana pool, which was the origin of the Higher Race's strength, so the Higher Races disliked coming to this area just like the Kangri Worm's area.

'How kind of the fairies. At least they made an exit for us.'

Metiron smiled as he looked at the Silver Sea.

Though he wasn't really looking at the sea or anything.

Kiiiiiiing!

A giant metal castle, which had previously been stuck beneath the shallow part of the sea, was rising up into the skies.

Kuugugugugu

Metiron shrugged his shoulders as he watched the Garmeia that was flying up into the skies with an extremely thick mana barrier surrounding it.

The return of mana only meant one thing.

‘Did they get dealt with already? Faster than I expected. Well, it wasn’t useless since they bought 3 days at least.’

Metiron chuckled.

He never thought that the humans would succeed anyway since the other side had the Satellite Fortresses.

Them buying him time was more than enough.

And since the mana came back he has done all of the little work he had to do.

‘It would be nice if he could be dealt with just like that but he isn’t that kind of guy. And he was even more incredible than I thought he was.’

After gathering some intel, this guy had done some tremendous things below.



He had gained the World Tree in the Red Zone and created a method to mass produce tens of millions of people.

And he had created the surgery method to provide these people with incredibly powerful bodies in the Orange Zone.

And another thing.

Mana Pool surgery.

If he succeeds in creating this in the Yellow Zone, an army that couldn't be compared to anything up until now will flood towards the upper Zones.

And this was not something they wanted.

Metiron gathered and released the tremendous amount of mana in his hands as he smiled.

‘This cannot continue. We have tried to hard to reduce the amount of people going up and control the Zone above.’

If such people swarm above then things would become tedious.

And in order for him to go up against this guy, he had to cause a huge incident.

And the solution was right in front of his eyes.

The giant metal castle that was floating by the shore.

‘How lucky. For such a thing to be floating around the Silver Sea.’

The Higher Races didn’t even think of coming to the Silver Sea, since it was useless to them and annoying, but it was different for them.

The Destruction Jade existed which meant that other things could exist as well.

While they were searching around the Green Road in case of something else that the Sages hid away from the eyes of the Higher Race, they had found this giant Satellite Fortress a few hundred kilometers away from the Green Road’s exit.

They had found this thing hidden between mountains a few years ago but they couldn’t muster up the courage to go in.

And as if it had no owner, it just floated above the Silver Sea and didn’t move at all but the powerful mana barrier still existed.

The mana barrier was beyond what humans could handle and even if they could destroy it, such a large amount of power will

attract the eyes of the Higher Race.

He had wanted to blow up the Destruction Jade to get rid of the barrier but he couldn't in case it attracted the Higher Race's attention but a while ago.

A chance came.

Once Kang Hansoo turned the entire zone devoid of mana, the barrier disappeared as well.

Metiron saw this chance as he sent in a few people into the Garmeia while he bought time here.

Since there wasn't a need for him to do anything inside the Satellite Fortress where there was no mana.

But a problem always occurs where one least expects it.

'Fuck. We can't get through if such a thing exists.'

Metiron thought of the vicious beast defending inside as he frowned.

And because of this, the clansmen he had sent in who could handle 100 people alone usually had turned into 7 bloody messes.

He had been happy since the mana was gone but an ironic situation happened inside where a strange beast, which could win without mana, was defending.

But there was no problems now.

‘3...2...1.’

“Pop~”

As Metiron said this word after counting down.

Boom!

The small sound of an explosion was heard from the insides of the Satellite Fortress.

At the same time.

Shhhhhrrrrrrrrrk

The mana barrier around the Satellite Fortress disappeared.

Metiron smiled as he watched this scene.

‘Hahaha. Good. Good.’

Since the most annoying thing had been dealt with, he just needed to deal with the beast inside and accomplish his goal.

“Kuuhehehehe...Hehe...Heh.”

Meitron laughed as he watched the mana barrier but then this expression suddenly turned dark.

It has been over a decade since he had started controlling this place.

He had never lost a clansman until now.

But due to the recent changes, quite a lot of them had died.

127 while he suppressed the Arukon’s King who had charged into them.

The seven who had entered the Satellite Fortress in front of him, could not escape and had become food for the El-Tara.

‘Haru, Chuntae, Karin, Soryung, Annabelle, Sang-Som, Christina. You’ve done well.’

Metiron mumbled the names of the seven people who intruded the Satellite Fortress with a dispirited expression.

The explosive mana artifact these guys had set up inside.

Though these guys had gotten ripped apart inside, the artifact these guys would set up on the mana barrier control system of the Satellite Fortress had done its job well as the mana came back.

Ssssssss

Metiron's dispirited expression disappeared as he saw the mana barrier around the Satellite Fortress disappear.

Those guys had willingly become stepping stones for Clementine.

And their deaths would only have meaning if he walked those steps and finished things off.

This wasn't the time to be lost in emotions.

Metiron shrugged his shoulders and spoke to those around him.

"Let's go in."

"Yes."

Soon.

Whooosh!

Hundreds of people followed behind Metiron and headed into the Garmeia.

And soon.

Rustle

Somebody pushed their head out from the jungle near the shore of the Silver Sea and mumbled.

“Huh... I thought he was suspicious but he’s quite special.”

This was too much for him alone.

He wouldn’t have just chased them if he could deal with them by himself.

‘Since the mana has come back.’

Sangjin, who had been carefully following Metiron from far back, pondered for a moment and then sent a carrier pigeon out.

.....

Boooooom!

Karhal whistled as he looked at the sky where giant Satellite Fortresses flew around.

They were terrifying when they were enemies but they felt very reliable once he was on the same side as them.



‘And the mana came back as well.’

Karhal made an expression of relief as he felt like a fish which had come back into the water.

And after the mana came back, the speed of the city construction and hunting was getting accelerated.

As soon as mana came back, everyone split up and focused on either building the cities or getting strong in the jungle.

Below the Satellite Fortresses that covered the skies.

“Anyways... Is it fine to leave it like that?”

Karhal made a bitter expression as he looked at Kaltus and his followers who were working with unhappy expressions.

Though they had been suppressed by strength, the embers hadn't died out.

Embers that could rise up as soon as they lost strength.

Hansoo shook his head at Karhal's words.

“We can't kill that many people.”

“...Well...Yeah. Tsk.”

Karhal clicked his tongue.

There wouldn't be anyone else left in this world if you killed somebody just because you had different opinions.

Since you would need to kill everyone but yourself.

And the ones who actually did that was Clementine and her underlings.

Somebody who had set up an unbelievable plan to kill everyone except those who were clearly on her side.

Killing those people along with Kaltus was the same thing as what the Dark Lord did.

‘And well...Though they're quite unsatisfied, it'll get solved soon.’

Karhal mumbled inwardly.

There were only a few hundred thousand people who were dissatisfied with the Sages.

Though it's not a small amount, it was nothing compared to

hundreds of millions of people who would come up from the Zones below.

And their issues will disappear once they receive the Mana Pool Surgery and go up anyway.

Karhal thought up to this point and then asked Hansoo.

“What are you going to do now?”

Hansoo replied simply.

“We need to get the data from Garmeia.”

According to the Sages, they needed that data in order to fix the Mana Pool Surgery to match the human’s bodies.

Get the surgery, plant the Mana Pool inside the people and send them up.

He understood their longing for revenge but they would only feel sadness if they stay here.

Since the souls of the Higher Races had been replaced by that of the Sages and as long as the Satellite Fortresses were up, they wouldn’t be able to fight the Sages even if Hansoo didn’t stop them.

At that moment.

Flutter

A carrier Pigeon flew into Hansoo.

A red carrier pigeon which seemed to have rushed its way over here.

Hansoo read the message inside and finally knew where that Metiron guy was.

‘Though I had guessed it to some degree... He went to the Garmeia huh. He knew about the location.’

Himself, who hadn’t been here for that long and had to quell hundreds of thousands of people.

Metiron, someone who had solidified his base here for over a decade and worked with a small group of die-hard elites.

Even if he knew the future, it made sense that Metiron was a step ahead of him.

‘I guess this will hurt a bit.’

Hansoo frowned for a bit and then spoke.

“We will go after the Garmeia.”

Karhal asked Hansoo.

“Shall we prepare some people?”

According to what he had heard, the strange beast inside was no pushover.

There was no need for Hansoo to over-exert himself.

Hansoo nodded.

“Gather those who can move quickly. But first... Let’s try using the Satellite Fortress.”

‘I should use what I got.’

He didn’t know how strong the organism El-Tara was but there was no need for him to receive any casualties.

The mana was back.

A Satellite Fortress could easily shoot away from the research lab with controlled power.

‘This much should be enough since they said the data will only get destroyed if an existence with a mana pool approaches it.’

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then sent a message to the ones controlling the Satellite Fortresses up above.

.....

Boooooooooom!

A highly concentrated blue beam, that was so concentrated that it almost looked dark blue, cut through the shore and headed towards Hansoo and Karhal.

“Fucking Hell!”

Karhal cursed out as he saw this.

Because this was not something they had shot out.

A Satellite Fortress, which had been shot through from his attack, started to fall towards the ground.

Taking account of the Satellite Fortress’s defense, this was a tremendous amount of power.

‘...Garmeia. King’s Fortress huh. What power.’

Though its defenses had disappeared, it was proving the might of

its attack.

Hansoo made a strange expression as he looked at the Garmeia which shot down a Satellite Fortress with just a single blast.

‘It has been set to shoot the Satellite Fortress once it got close. Why was it set like that?’

He thought that Metiron had set this up but this was impossible.

Since he wouldn’t just sit idle with such a powerful tool under his control.

This was an automatic defensive system.

Thankfully it looked like it didn’t attack humans but Hansoo didn’t understand why a King would set it up so it would automatically attack the people of his race once they got close.

‘Anyway The Satellite Fortresses are useless in this case.’

That Fortress’ range exceeded normal Satellite Fortresses by far and had a much more powerful attack as well.

He had brought seven just in case but they were useless in this instance.



He might be able to deal with it if he brought all the Satellite Fortresses and pushed it back with numbers but that wouldn't do.

Since if the data wasn't up here, the humans would have to go above with empty hands and no Mana Pools.

He could not do such a thing due to the worth of the Mana Pools.

‘Metiron. What a sturdy coffin you have chosen.’

Hansoo frowned as he mumbled.

## Chapter 207 : Garmeia (5)

---

“What are you going to do?”

Karhal, who had been leading the forces from the side, asked.

The plan to use the Satellite Fortress was a failure.

Which meant that they had to deal with it from the inside.

He didn't know what Metiron was thinking inside but they also had things they needed from the insides.

‘Damn...This is dangerous.’

Karhal mumbled quietly.

Though a Satellite Fortress that was over a kilometer in height was huge, it wouldn't be once superhumans with skills and weapons start going crazy inside.

And since they couldn't swarm it, it was better to go in with a small elite group.

Karhal thought up to this point and then spoke to Hansoo.

“Can't we just use the Destruction Jade again? And we can just go

in with that Mihee girl”.

With mana the original residents of the Yellow Zone were superior due to their higher mastery of skills and higher level of runes but without mana then the ones from the lower Zone with stronger bodies had the advantage.

No matter how strong Metiron’s underlings are inside, that would be more than enough.

Hansoo looked at the Destruction Jade in his hands and then shook his head again.

“No can do.”

“Huh? Why not?”

Hansoo played around with the marble as he spoke.

“You saw before right? When I used the Sealing Jade in the village?”

“Yeah.”

“And you saw it break right?”

“Oh...”

Karhal finally realized and then fell into silence.

Hansoo nodded.

“This has a durability as well. We only have about one more use left. It would break after that.”

The Sealing Jade had broken just from holding down a single Satellite Fortress in the village.

And the Destruction Jade had held down the mana of this entire Zone where existed over a hundred Satellite Fortresses and countless people.

No matter how strong it was, it would break eventually if he kept using it.

And after inspecting it the past few days, the Destruction Jade was at its limit.

Karhal thought for a moment and then spoke.

“But can’t we still use it? There isn’t a reason to use the Destruction Jade anymore?”

The mysterious fortress and the powerful enemies were quite frightening to just charge in like this.

Over half of the Satellite Fortresses had come into their hands and the other side, the Sages, could not do anything to them right now.

But Hansoo shook his head at

Karhal's question.

“This is a final resort. The reason why the Sages are in alliance with us is not because of half of the Satellite Fortresses but because of this Destruction Jade.”

‘We cannot trust them completely yet.’

Half of the Satellite Fortresses had come into his hands and were working perfectly but the Satellite Fortress was their technology.

If they hack them and turn them powerless or start producing Satellite Fortresses again then their Satellite Fortresses wouldn't be of much use.

The objective of the Satellite Fortresses to control the humans.

The weapon that would face against the Sages was the Destruction Jade.

The Sages wouldn't be their opponent once the mana was gone.

And the numbers of humans will increase to tens of million and once that happened the Sages will merely be a candle in front of a hurricane no matter how powerful their bodies were.

This was why the Sages had given him the Satellite Fortresses.

So he could control them.

That was why he will leave behind the Destruction Jade with the Lord whom he will plant his Soul Fragment in.

In case of a fight against the Sages.

Karhal frowned at Hansoo's words.

"Fuck... That means.."

"Yeah. We have to go and do it ourselves."

"Ugh..."

Karhal and Ekidu looked at the giant Satellite Fortress from Hansoo's words.

Boom! Boooboom!

Whatever they were doing inside, the sounds they were making inside that metal box could be heard even a kilometer away from the outside of the Satellite Fortress.

And thinking of how strong the ones who had gone in, this meant that the thing that was inside was extremely strong.

And Ekidu already knew what the identity of the thing was.

‘That’s probably the sound originating from fighting the El-Tara.’

She had never seen it before but she had heard what the representative of the Sages, Kel-Durin, had said.

<That beast was created for the destruction of the information but it’s powerful is tremendous as well. Even if you have mana it’ll be hard for you alone Hansoo. Take comrades. As many as you can.>

Others might be different but Kel-Durin and the other Sages shouldn’t have been lying.

If they said such things then it meant that the beast inside was insanely powerful.

And Ekidu thought as to how she should set up their forces.

‘It’s better to get a small elite group I guess.’

She had been inside Dakidus’s Satelite Fortress in the past and saw the structure.

Thousands of narrow passageways, detailed structure. A very complex structure.

The Garmeia was larger and more powerful but it looked like the structure was quite similar from the outside.

Then instead of taking weaklings that would hinder them, it was better to take a small group of powerful people.

No matter how powerful the bodies of newcomers are, they were weak in comparison to the Yellow Zoners due to their runes being at 0%.

If there is mana, the people from the Yellow Zone were stronger.

‘Good. Let’s do this quickly.’

She had brought people with 100% runes with powerful attacks just in case something like this happened.

The moment Ekidu was about to turn around and shout.



Rumble.

The noise from the insides of the Satellite Fortress, Garmeia, stopped.

And the noise, which had been continuously ringing, stopping only meant one thing.

That the battle ended.

Ekidu made a shocked expression.

“What...Already?”

She didn't know why Metiron had gone inside.

But two things were clear.

The fact that Metiron, who could've escaped, had gone inside meant that there was something extremely precious inside.

And that he had the confidence to win.

‘It wouldn't matter if he turned the El-Tara into rags and had killed it but...’

“Damn! Hurry and gather! From 1st to 14th platoon...”

Ekidu looked at the Garmeia which was now only making sounds of machinery as she started to quickly move towards it.

.....

Kwaduk. Uuudududk.

“Damn. This is hard.”

Metiron mumbled as he looked behind him while seven colored lights swirled around him.

The greyish organism with thousands of tentacles that looked like a tree in one way and an octopus in another was making crackling sounds as it was breaking apart.

After its body had been set ablaze and burnt up.

Whooooosh.

Metiron felt the vibration of the Soul Fragment inside him as he cracked some joints.

It was a very formidable opponent.

“How many died?”

The people around him counted and then spoke.

“81 died.”

“Fuck.”

Metiron spat on the ground.

The monster, which could turn its body into anything it wanted by using the power from the Satellite Fortress's core, had attacked them with these thousands of tentacles as they made their way towards it ever since the entrance.

And because of this there were barely 300 of them left.

But it was extremely good that they killed this strange monster with just those losses.

Of course he, who had killed it, was strong as well.

‘Well. It's not exactly my own strength really. Taehee. This guy... He has become a real monster.’

Though his clansmen had helped him, at least half of the thousands of tentacles had been destroyed by his hands.

Metiron whistled as he looked at his hand that was glowing red.

The elite 8 that stood next to Clementine.

Taehee, the one in possession of the Seven Soul Fragments, went up and people who had received one of the fragments assumed positions where they could perform Clementine's wishes.

For example the manager of the Yellow Zone like him.

He didn't know where the others were since he hadn't followed them but they would probably be somewhere up above.

And the strength he had shown earlier was from the owner of the Soul Fragment.

Which meant that the gap between him and the fragment's owner had increased to the point where it was beyond his imagination.

To the point of his entire body hurting despite having used that strength for such a short time.

'How many unique skills did he eat up? Should I have followed? At least to the Green or Blue Zone...'

A man always longed for power.

The fact that his comrade, whom he had stood shoulder to shoulder with once, had become this strong felt bitter but he soon shook his head.

The mission he had been assigned with was important.

And this was the most important moment.

“Let’s go look at this secret room.”

Metiron quietly mumbled after smashing apart the El-Tara and then walked in deeper.

He then stood in front of the metal door the El-Tara blocked before, breathed in and out and then spread out his hand towards it.

Crunch!

The hand that was glowing red dug into the metal door that hadn’t even gotten damaged from the fight earlier.

Soon.

Crunch!

Metiron’s hand ripped off the 3m tall metal door.

And Metiron whistled as he saw the structure inside.

‘It’s a bit underwhelming.’

Metiron had seen the inner structure of the Satellite Fortress in the past.

The technology was much more complex and advanced than an airplane but the control room was much simpler.

And this one was even more simpler.

A giant aquarium surrounding the entire room and a single organism floating inside it.

And the head-sized silver marble floating in the middle of the room.

Metiron smiled as he saw this.

“Found it.”

Considering the fact that this room was also used as a method of control, the Garameia was probably made with more advanced technology than the Satellite Fortresses of the Higher Races.

Since it could be controlled with just a marble.

Metiron placed his hand on the marble as he mumbled.

‘Hehe. Sages. It’ll be bothersome to have them as enemies.’

Even more so if they weren’t able to finish them off.

Though a chance had greeted them now.

Metiron mumbled as he thought of Hansoo and all the humans.

‘You did well so far but... This is the end.’

And then.

Boooom!

The Satellite Fortress, Garmeia, started to tremble.

At the same time.

Bubble Bubble Bubble Bubble.

The aquarium started to bubble excessively.

.....

Rumble!

“Huh?”

As a tremendous noise came out from the Satellite Fortress, the people who were going to head towards the Satellite Fortress made shocked noises.

But they soon made confused expressions.

“...Falling?”

Kuoooooo!

The Satellite Fortress that was floating in the sky started to fall at a tremendous speed.

Towards the Silver Sea below.

Soon.

Splashh!



The giant Satellite Fortress fell into the Silver Sea accompanied by a huge sound.

Kwaaaaaaaaa!

Of couse a giant tidal wave was created around the Garmeia.

Even if the density of the liquid was close to mercury, a tidal wave being created was quite logical since such a large object had fallen.

But the thing that happened next defied logic as a whole.

Ooooooong!

The huge waves of the silver liquid had been covered by a blue light.

And then.

Bubble!

Bubble bubble!

The liquid that had fallen due to gravity gathered up with the rest, hardened and started to change shape.

Into thousands of tentacles.

“What the...”

The people frowned and squinted their eyes at the scene that resembled a kraken being born from the sea.

# Chapter 208 : Gael-Tara (1)

---

Kuuuooooo!

As the Satellite Fortress, Garmeia, got covered up by the strange beast.

Hansoo frowned as he saw this.

‘That is...?’

He had sensed something similar to that before in the past.

When he had been surrounded by the strange metal liquid inside the maze.

The strange beast that was constantly changing its shape while being covered by blue light was definitely similar to whatever ate up Junghwan in the past.

Hansoo’s head started to spin quickly.

He didn’t know what that thing was.

But three things were clear.

He didn’t know why but that Karmen guy didn’t seem to like the

Sages.

And sadly there was the fact that Karmen was much better than the Sages who had created the Satellite Fortresses.

And the last thing Karmen had made had now fallen in the hands of Metiron.

‘Nothing good comes out from this.’

He didn’t know what the hell that thing was but nothing good came from leaving it alone.

‘Attack before... It completes.’

As soon as he finished thinking.

Boooooom!

Hansoo smashed the ground and then leapt up.

Towards the Garameia covered in thousands of tentacles.

Karhal shouted towards Hansoo.

“Hey! Are you crazy! Heyy! You don’t even have skills!”

Due to its size, though it looked like the Garmeia was right in front of them there was at least a kilometer of space between them and the fortress.

And for him to jump into such a strange place.

‘Fuck! Is he that hurried?’

Karhal made a flustered expression.

He knew that something strange happened.

But they had the Satellite Fortresses, what was there to worry about?

He didn’t know what the hell that was but tens of the Satellite Fortresses being destroyed was something that was unthinkable.

Hansoo jumped up into the sky as he shouted.

“You don’t have to follow so just support me with long range attacks!”

He had jumped in because he could only do close range fighting but there was no need for others, who could attack from afar, to jump in.

As those words were heard.

The people, who were making suspicious expressions, started to pour out a multitude of attacks.

Rumble!

Kuuuurrururng!

The Satellite Fortresses standing outside the Garmeia's range started to slowly approach the giant silver creature.

The Lord had started to control the clansmen and were moving the Satellite Fortress after receiving Hansoo's orders.

If the Garmeia had stopped for now, this was the chance to attack it without being counterattacked.

Karhal nodded as he watched this scene.

‘Good!’

He understood that the Garmeia had a huge size.

The thousands of tentacles that were birthed from the sea were now crossing over each other and covering the Satellite Fortress.

The thing that was eating up the 1km-wide Satellite Fortress was easily over 3km-wide.

From the scene of this giant thing eating up the Satellite Fortress, it looked like a giant egg was being created by wrapping a fishing line around the fortress.

But the Satellite Fortress could easily blow up something even larger than that.

No, even a human could.

If they threw tens of thousands of skills then any mountain would eventually disappear.

Rumble. Urrrrng!

The countless skills started to turn the strange organism into a sea of flames.

Shining lights, tremendous noises and dustclouds started to cover up the Satellite Fortress.

At the same time.

Karhal didn't prepare his Quintuple Beam and instead shot an arrow towards Hansoo.

Boooom!

The arrow started to drop as it traveled and it headed towards Hansoo's foot.

Crunch!

The arrow perfectly supported Hansoo as he slowly fell and Hansoo jumped up with it as a foothold.

‘Good. It wouldn’t be hard if we continue at this rate.’

Karhal readied his second arrow and then nodded towards Hansoo who had jumped up.

Toooong!

Hansoo was getting closer to the Satellite Fortress after jumping off the arrow Karhal shot out.



Wave

A change occurred in the beast that was swallowing up the giant Satellite Fortress.

The surfaces of the thousands of tentacles melted down with a loud noise, reconstructed themselves and created a whole new structure.

Eye.

Hundreds of eyes appeared on each tentacle as they glared at every direction.

The hundreds of thousands of eyes stared at the countless people surrounding it one by one.

Others couldn't see it but Hansoo, who was closer to the beast, could see all of the changes occurring.

Hansoo hurriedly moved the Forked Lightning in front of him and then rolled his body into a ball.

He then shouted out loudly.

“Prepare for impact! An attack is coming in!”

“Huh?”

They didn’t understand the situation but Hansoo’s loud shout had a certain amount of impact on these people.

Everyone, even without knowing what the hell was going on, canceled all their attacking skills and replaced them with defensive skills and got into defensive positions.

As Hansoo’s shout died off.

Paaaaaak!

Hundreds of tentacles spread out.

Towards the people by the shore.

Booom!

Booooooom!

Boom!

“Aaaak!”

“Uaaaak!”

The tips of the tentacles changed their shapes into spears, swords and axes as they smashed into people.

The adventurers were quite strong but the power of the tentacles were quite formidable as well.

If Hansoo hadn't warned them then they might've lost a limb or might have even died.

The adventurers freaked out at the force of the impact as they backed off in numerous directions.

Since they might die if they stood where they were.

Chuurrrrrrrk

Thankfully the strange beast stopped its attacks as the adventurers backed off, retracted its tentacles and then focused on gathering in the energy again.

As if time was precious to it.

But as Karhal, who had received a large hole in the armor by his chest, was about to sigh as he watched the tentacles heading back.

Something came up inside Karhal's head.

‘Fuck! What about Hansoo?’

They had escaped the attack range but Hansoo could not.

As if his worries were for naught.

Booom!

Boooooom!

Countless noises of explosions were heard from somewhere near the Satellite Fortress covered in clouds.

Crunch!

Crrruuuunnch!

‘Holy shit. That fucking monster.’

Karhal was dumbfounded at the scene he saw after the smoke faded away.

The tentacles that they could barely handle.

Hansoo smashed, snapped and destroyed hundreds of those tentacles and continued to advance forward.

Everytime the golden spear shone in mid air, the tentacles got destroyed as a path was created.

But a single man could not deal with an army.

Uuuduuddk!

Kuuududuuk!

The tentacles that had receded away from the adventurers all started to head towards Hansoo.

But Hansoo was already almost at his goal.

Whoosh!

Hansoo, who had approached the wall of the beast, found an open spot between the tentacles and headed in.

Thankfully the tentacles stopped attacking as if they didn't want to attack the insides.

Then.

Sssss

The strange beast closed its eyes, spread out its tentacles and continued to eat up the Satellite Fortress and the mana engine inside it.

‘Is it really just eating it?’

Karhal mumbled as he looked at the beast which was covering the Satellite Fortress too gently to call it eating.

‘Ugh. This isn’t important.’

Karhal sighed and then made an expression of despair.

“Fuck...What the hell do we do now?”

With their strength they would just get shredded apart so getting close to it was an issue in itself.

And they couldn’t use the Destruction Jade while the Sages existed.

‘Yeah. We should just call reinforcements and... Trust in the Satellite Fortresses.’

Karhal looked towards the Satellite Fortresses coming his way.

Karhal mumbled that although they weren't able to, the Satellite Fortresses, which could fire a tremendous amount of power, could easily melt that beast down.

As Karhal and the others sat upon the ground and stared at the Satellite Fortress to relax.



Rrrriippp

The air started to split apart.

And the people freaked out even more than when the giant beast had appeared as they saw this.

‘Why is the Fairy here!’

Karhal freaked out as well.

It had been 9 years since he had last seen the Fairy.

Since the Fairy hadn’t appeared in front of them ever since the tutorial ended.

Tremble Tremble...

Karhal’s hand started to shake from fear.

Though the Fairies themselves didn’t harm them, their appearance almost symbolized a disaster.

‘Why the hell is it here....’

A chill went down his spine.

It hadn't appeared when the Higher Races ruled over humans as slaves and lowered their numbers but it had appeared now.

After that mysterious tentacle monster appeared.

'Is that thing a bigger threat than the Higher Races....'

Even before Karhal finished his line of thought.

The Fairy opened its small mouth.

"Hahahaha! Hey everyone! What a disaster! I don't know how that thing woke up."

The fairy laughed in joy.

Since that thing couldn't have woken up logically.

The Satellite Fortress that had a stealth coating so that the Higher Races or the Sages couldn't find it.

The humans could find it but it had a mana barrier that humans could not get through.

And El-Tara that humans wouldn't be able to beat without mana.

One required a tremendous amount of luck and persistence in order to wake that thing up.

No, they needed more.

The Fairy was extremely happy from this situation, which required a tremendous amount of luck and effort to happen, blowing up.

‘These guys need to try harder for this.’

The Fairy finished its thoughts, spun around the air and then spoke.

“It’s a mission for your entire Race. You guys now need to kill this thing. I’ll think of a reward after you kill it. The reward will be proportional to your efforts so try your best!”

It seemed like the Fairy was shouting into nowhere but that wasn’t the case.

The Fairy’s voice rang into everyone’s ears in the entire Zone.

Hansoo could probably hear it inside the Satellite Fortress as well.

And Karhal looked at the beast in front of his eyes after he heard those words.

Oooooooooon!

The Satellite Fortresses that they had waited for had arrived above their heads.

Six, disregarding the one that had fell before.

The people gulped at the tremendous amount of pressure these Fortresses emitted.

And soon.

Kiiiiing!

Everyone's expressions brightened up as they saw the blue light gathering upon the weapons in front of the Satellite Fortress.

The scenes they had seen caused by the Satellite Fortresses were too amazing for them to lose hope here.

And Hansoo's spear alone had been enough to destroy those tentacles.

Even if Hansoo's power was strong, it was nowhere close to the Satellite Fortress's attacks they thought.

‘Yeah...This’ll do.’

As the people looked at the Satellite Fortresses with hope-filled eyes.

Paaaat!

And as if it was fulfilling their hopes, the blue light that had gathered in front of the Satellite Fortress charged out towards the beast.

But right before the beams were about to smash onto the egg.

Piiiiing!

A blue energy surrounded the egg.

A very deep blue light that couldn’t even be compared to that of the Satellite Fortress.

At that moment.

Zooooom!

The blue lights collided into the deep blue light of the egg and got refracted into numerous directions.

Like a stream of water hitting a wall.

“...You want us to kill that thing?”

The people were dumbfounded as they stared at the egg that hadn't even gotten a scratch from the attacks of the Satellite Fortresses.

Crack!

Suddenly a crack rang down the surface of the egg.

“Huh?”

The people looked at the crack in the egg with surprise.

Thinking that the Satellite Fortress hadn't disappointed them.

But this sensation only lasted a moment.

Swoosh.

An eye.

A humongous eye.

The people lost strength in their legs as their gazes met the eye of the giant thing inside the egg looking through the crack.

‘Hansoo...What the hell do we do now...’

Karhal thought of Hansoo inside that strange beast and mumbled.

.....

Metiron, who had his hands over the strange marble in the empty room, was constantly conversing with someone.

As if he had gone crazy.

“Oh? This thing’s name is Gael-Tara? Why did you make it?”

<...>

“Hmm. Revenge is nice. Holding onto your emotions becomes toxic. You need to let it loose.”

<...>

“Good. Good. It’s not hard to fulfill your wishes but...I can do some of my work too right?’

The blue marbles in front of Metiron vibrated slightly at his words.



Ooooong

“Oh I can do whatever I want? Hehe, that’s what I thought. Oh..Those things are even better than the Mana Pool?”

Metiron, who had his hand over the marble, smiled towards the small thing inside the aquarium surrounding the room.

# Chapter 209 : Gael-Tara (2)

---

Kuooooooooo

Hansoo frowned as he saw the tunnels getting destroyed.

The tunnels, which were made for people to walk through, were constantly getting destroyed.

By the tentacles extending out from the thing that surrounded the Satellite Fortress.

Crunch

Uuudududk

The tentacles ripped apart the metal walls and brought them towards the liquid metal.

Chiiiiik

The silver liquid metal melted the wall, absorbed it and then used it to reinforce itself.

Basically this monster was devouring the entire Satellite Fortress and using it as nutrients for itself.

But Hansoo knew.

This Satellite Fortress and this mysterious lifeform.

That both of these had been created by the same hands.

Why would the Satellite Fortress let itself be eaten by the monster otherwise?

‘Since he wouldn’t have made the Satellite Fortress to feed this thing... I guess the monster was made to eat the Satellite Fortress huh.’

The monster constantly ate the other walls, corridors and was now eating up the spot Hansoo was standing at.

Hansoo would be swept by it at this rate as well.

‘Go in.’

Hansoo clenched the Forked Lightning tightly and started to head in deeper.

Since he was running out of time.

Actually, him being able to come inside was very lucky.

The extremely thick mana surrounding the liquid metal.

The mana that was coming out from the Garmeia's mana engine was beyond one's imagination.

To the point of making the mana engines of other Satellite Fortresses look like garbage.

Hansoo shook his head after calculating the might of this monster while comparing it to the metallic beast which Junghwan controlled.

This beast's materials were a step above those of the maze as well.

‘According to my calculations...This is not something i can kill from the outside.’

As Hansoo finished his thoughts.

Kuoooooooo!

The liquid metal around Hansoo's body started to tremble intensely.

.....

“Ugh...”

The people made frightened expressions as they saw the eye between the crack.

The eye had a tremendous amount of hate and resentment despite being made out of metal.

The depth of its emotions was what made the people tremble in fear.

As they couldn't even begin to imagine how vicious something with such a guy could get.

At that moment.

The eye disappeared.

Then.



Swooooosh!

A huge hand came out from the crack where the eye disappeared from.

And a metal arm with distinct muscles followed it.

Soon.

Crack!

Craccacck!

Starting from the hand, the arm, shoulder and head started to come out from the egg in order.

Booom!

Booooooom!

The Satellite Fortresses started to assault the strange beast that had crawled out from the egg relentlessly.

To the point of pressuring their mana engines as if they were trying to show their desperation.

But all of this was useless.

Ooooong!

Ooong!

The liquid metal, which was shining blue, deflected and dispersed all those attacks.

It wasn't the difference in energy.

That organism was resisting the assaults too well for it to be the difference in energy.

It was as if the organism had a tremendous amount of resistance against the Satellite Fortresses.

Karhal mumbled as he looked at the organism crawling out from the egg shell.

“...Natural enemy?”

The Natural Enemy.

A natural enemy of the Satellite Fortress.

‘Yeah. There’s a natural enemy for everything.’

The Satellite Fortress wasn't an organism but such thoughts still came up inside Karhal's head.

And soon.

Koooooong

A 2km tall humanoid creature that came out from the egg stood up above the Silver Sea.

And people slowly backed away and frowned.

‘....Who is it?’

Tight muscles and a crown on top.

It was clear that it wasn't Metiron who had gone in.

Since he wouldn't be wearing such a crown.

And he was too muscular to be a Sage.

They heard that the bodies of the Sages had not developed as much because the existence of mana.

The organism that was standing up above the Silver Sea, the Gael-Tara, crouched down and slowly reached for the egg shell.

Shwoooooosh

Due to its size, a tsunami was created for its every move.

As soon as Gael-Tara touched the shell.

Shurrrrk!

The shell fragments turned into liquids and gathered into the giant man's hands.

Into a giant bludgeon.

An extremely muscular body and a bludgeon in his hand.

His look was like that of a barbarian minus the crown on his head.

“Huh...”

“What the hell...”

The people started to chuckle at this sight.

They knew that they shouldn't be laughing in a situation like this but this sight was too funny.

To have eaten the entire Satellite Fortress and to become but a barbarian.

It was quite funny.

And the Satellite Fortresses which had stopped its assault due to the overheated engines helped out in releasing the tense situation with the silence that followed it.

But within that small moment.

The Gael-Tara roared out and then jumped up into the skies.

Roooooarrr!

“Uaaaak!”

“Fuck! Group up!”

The earthquake from a 2km giant jumping into the skies was tremendous.

Ruuumblee!

Rumble!

While the people the freaking out from the waves and the earthquake.

Whooooosh!

The Gael-Tara crossed multiple kilometers with a single leap and then jumped on top of the Satellite Fortresses after crossing over the Silver Sea and the mountains.

Then.

Whooooooooosh!

The bludgeon from its hand smashed down onto the Satellite Fortresses.

The tremendous strength enforced by mana and hundreds of thousands of tons of mass along with the added velocity.

Booooooom!

“Uaaaaaak!”

The defence of the Satellite Fortresses could live up to its name of a Fortress.

And this Satellite Fortress got smashed apart by a single attack of

the bludgeon and fell on the ground.

No, it was more like it got smashed down into the ground instead of falling.

Boooooom!

“Uaaak!”

Another quake from the Satellite Fortress smashing down onto the ground like an asteroid swept past the adventurers.

Nobody had died because they were all prepared for this but the situation was still extremely grim.

Everyone made an expression of despair.

“My god...”

Ekidu exclaimed out.

The ones who had gathered here were the elites of the elites.

Since they were handpicked by her.

But such things were meaningless in front of a formidable monster.



And it didn't even care to attack them.

It was solely focused on destroying the Satellite Fortresses in front of it.

And they had to exert all their strength to barely hold on during the shockwaves created.

Ekidu couldn't even imagine what the result would be if that bludgeon was swung against them.

As Ekidu was making an expression full of fear while staring at the fallen Satellite Fortress.

“Uh...Uhhh?”

“Uhhh!”

Kuuududuk

Uuudududuk

“Oh no...”.

Ekidu also exclaimed out as she saw this.

Gael-Tara didn't even go for the other Satellite Fortresses after smashing down that single one.

Its next actions were quite shocking.

It started to eat it.

# Crunch

Cruunnch

Rip apart the outer layers and eat the inner parts.

Pull out the mana engine and gulp down.

Its silver skin darkened every time it took a part of the Satellite Fortress and the blue light surrounding it got deeper as well.

Enkidu mumbled as she looked at the barbarian chewing up the Satellite Fortress.

“It devours...an entire civilization.”

She finally realized why it had the look of a barbarian when it came out from the egg.

.....

Boooooooooom!

Booom!

While the outside was in chaos.

A fight was happening inside the Satellite Fortress within the

corridors that had still remained intact.

Between Hansoo who was trying to go through the corridors and to the center and hundreds of Metiron's underlings.

Uuudududuk!

Kwajijijik!

They didn't really speak to each other.

They were just fighting in order to beat the other side.

They swung their spears and swords and shot out skills in order to kill each other.

The Pandemic Blade's spores rushed in to melt the opponent's lungs and skins and skills of multiple colors smashed into Hansoo's Thousand Soldiers Armor and the Dragon Essence Blade.

Actually Hansoo had long turned into a dragonoid with the Racial Metamorphosis.

Since this was the only way for him to withstand the enemies's attacks.

Crunch!

Uuudududk!

‘They’re quite strong.’

Hansoo mumbled as he cut through one enemy’s neck by swinging with his Forked Lightning and threw the corpse to block the skills.

Every one of them were stronger than Dakidus when he fought him in the past.

They had raised the mastery of their skills to the extremes and trained their martial skills to the brim over ten years in the Otherworld.

And they picked up top notch skills and artifacts from killing humans.

Along with the teamwork created from being in the same clan.

It would be weird if they weren’t weak.

But that was it.

Crunch!

Hansoo smashed apart another head and then strode forward.

‘I’m stronger.’

Erase the skills flying in from the distance with the Power Destruction and distort the perceptions of the ones closer up and then smash them apart.

Block the excess skills flying in with the Thousand Soldiers Armor and fill up the falling health with the vampiric powers.<sup>[1](#)</sup>

There wasn’t even a need to use the Red Zone power of the Nurmaha’s Ring, the Hemorrhage.

The Forked Lightning being swung by the body which had been enhanced by the Body Enhancement Surgery, Dragon Essence Blade and Racial Metamorphosis.

And the power of the Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement and the Pandemic Blade.

Once the countless battle experience and instincts he had gathered over decades were added onto this, there was really no reason to delay any further with the Hemorrhage.

One attack, one kill.

Kwaaduk!



Uuuudududuk!

Hansoo received the attacks flying in with his body and then continued to stride forward while smashing them apart.

Actually this was more than enough to cause them to run away really.

But his enemies didn't falter as they continued to charge forward and Hansoo kept on snapping their necks without a single moment of hesitation.

Since every second was precious.

'I need to hurry and deal with that Metiron guy.'

Rooooarrrr!

Boooom!

Countless shockwaves and sounds of explosions could be felt from the outside.

And Hansoo could feel that the beast was getting stronger.

It was just eating the Satellite Fortresses because it couldn't

suppress its gluttony but once it eats them all up, its rage will be directed to other organisms.

And it wouldn't even take 10 minutes to erase all the humans and Sages then.

Since they had all gathered together conveniently.

After a while of charging forward and smashing apart people.

‘I can see it!’

The broken metal door and the bright interior behind it.

There were only about 10 people left now.

As Hansoo was about to attack the person in front of him with the spear.

“Stop! Get back!”

A loud shout could be heard from the distance.

The ten clansmen suddenly stopped and backed off.

As if they were waiting for it.

At the same time.

Whooooooooosh!

A seven colored light shot through the corridor where the ten people disappeared from.

A light that seemed similar to the Quintuple beam of Karhal.

But as soon as Hansoo saw it.

Hansoo's expression changed.

'Seven Strands Spear!'

Solo Numbering 5.

A beam of laser that was solely created for destruction.

Actually its attacks even surpassed the number 3 skill, Elemental Outfit.

Hansoo raised his spear and blocked it in a hurry.

Then.

Boooooom!

The seven colored light which had even melted down the walls as it flew past smashed into him.

Tadadadadak

The Demonic Dragon Reinforcement got swept apart as the dragon scales, Thousand Soldiers Armor and the Dragon Essence Blade got smashed apart and melted down.

Hansoo stared at the person who had sent out the attack after withstanding the pain from the attack.

For it to be this strong even if it was a high level skill.

And the Seven Strands Spear was famous for draining the user's mana.

Such powers couldn't be shown from just having 100% of the Yellow Zone's mana runes.

Metiron smiled as he looked at Hansoo.

"I've been a bit late due to receiving the present I received. Apparently its much better than the Mana Pool."

A strange symbol could be shown near the heart of Metiron.

"Hmm."

Hansoo finally realized how Metiron could handle such a large

amount of mana as he looked at the symbol.

---

Notes:

[1\]](#) The Yellow Zone's power for the Nurmaha Ring is Vampiric Effects or Lifesteal in gaming terms

IMPORTANT: I've figured out what the 'Dark Lord' is. It is a title given to those Lords who are ruthless in their ways, almost like a tyrant, and follow Clementine.

# Chapter 210 : Gael-Tara (3)

---

# Crunch



Crruuunnch

Hansoo frowned as he looked at the man striding towards him.

‘I see... the Seven Strands Spear is not his.’

According to what he knew, that skill was not something one could obtain in a place like this.

Using something that couldn’t be obtained did not make sense but he knew how he was.

Fragments of Seven Souls.

The familiar vibration inside Metiron’s body is what told him this.

And he saw a few other skills surrounding his body.

Double numbering 11, God’s Right Hand.

Solo Numbering 4, Steel Lord.

There were countless other double and triple numberings.

And Hansoo knew who the owner of the Fragments of Seven

Souls and those skills was.

He had never met Metiron but he had indeed met the owner of the fragments when he fought Clementine in the past.

Dark Lord, Shin Taehee.

The right hand of Clementine and a vital part of her power.

And Metiron smiled in glee as he saw his expression.

“Heh. Too bad. I do want to encourage you to fight for this but...This isn't my skill you see. You won't really get anything by killing me.”

Hansoo nodded at these words.

It was obvious really.

Since 8 people would be able to use it if the owner of the soul fragments took the skill instead.

It was better to pile it all onto a single person.

Of course a skill wouldn't come out even if he killed Metiron.

But there were still many things more precious than a few skills.

“There’s still something I can take it seems.”

Hansoo then pointed at Metiron with the Forked Lightning.

Towards his heart.

Metiron touched the shining symbol by his heart and then chuckled.

“True. If you win then it’s all yours. Kill my clansmen and take this. Do whatever you want.”

Metiron then made a serious expression.

“Of course if I win then I’ll take everything you have.”

Metiron grinded his teeth as he thought of the 271 clansmen that had died by Hansoo’s hands.

Because Hansoo was stronger than his expectations and he couldn’t win without the Mana Jade in his heart, those clansmen had died to buy him time.

His clansmen was everything he had.

If Clementine and Taehee’s orders didn’t exist, he wouldn’t even

have let them die in a place like this.

‘I shall... Take as much away from you.’

He wasn’t a benevolent person.

The total amount of people in Mount Liang was 511 before he came up here.

Now only 10 people lived.

And he was going to only let that many live.

Only 1 out of 50 out of hundreds of thousands.

And the same for the tens of millions of humans who could come up later.

It was possible with the strength in his hands.

With the Gael-Tara that was created to erase the civilization and bring an end to everything.

Metiron smiled again as he asked.

“How about it? Fair right?”

It was clear that Metiron was trying to buy time while the Gael-Tara ate the other Satellite Fortresses and got stronger.

And Hansoo decided to play along.

Since he wouldn't be able to kill this guy outside.

He had to kill Metiron.

And he needed to go along with Metiron's play in order to restore some stamina.

Hansoo rotated the Dragon Essence Blade in his body as he restored his stamina and spoke out.

"It seems a bit unfair. There's too much of a difference in numbers."

Metiron smiled and chuckled.

"Unfair? It is indeed unfair. I've lost people precious to me and you would only lose those below your feet."

"..."

"At least I know the names of 271 people you have killed and even

know the names of their family. Isn't this already better than you? Do you even know a hundred out of the hundreds of thousands?"

They were like his family.

People who have trusted him and survived along with him for over a decade.

Hansoo also smirked at those words.

"What about it? It's not too late to get to know them after things become much more comfortable. Do you know how many people have died while you were playing house in a place like this?"

"...Heh. There's not really a reason to speak this much."

Crunch

Metiron couldn't hold back his rage while speaking and then gathered power in his hand.

Kiiiiing!

Seven colored lights gathered from the surroundings into Metiron's hand.

Then.

Boooooom!

The beam that had shook Hansoo before exploded out from Metiron's left hand again.

With even more mana than before.

At that moment.

Boooooom!

Hansoo also gathered a large amount of Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement and Pandemic Blade onto the spear and then attacked the Seven Strands Spear with the Power Destruction of Nurmaha's Ring.

There was no way to dodge it in a narrow corridor like this.

And unlike the Quintuple beam, the Seven Strands Spear was made of light so it had no weak points.

He needed to destroy it with a similar amount of power.

Craasssh!

The moment Hansoo's spear and the light collided.

Surprisingly, the spear bent to the point of breaking from the light which had no mass.

The Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement got washed away and the Pandemic Blade's spores got burnt away.

‘As I expected.’

Hansoo swung the spear and moved his body to the exterior of the skill as much as he could.

Hansoo had higher quality in skills.

But the mastery level and mana was different.



Since the opponent had borrowed a skill that had reached the brim in mastery along with a tremendous amount of mana.

The beam pushed through the Forked Lightning and smashed into Hansoo.

Chiiiiik!

Hansoo's body was exposed to the light as it started to burn up.

But Hansoo clenched his teeth and then proceeded to stride forward.

Against the beam that was freezing, breaking and burning up his body.

He knew that he couldn't compete with the strength of skills.

The thing he had to trust in was his tremendously stronger body, defenses and endless amount of stamina.

Boooom!

Metiron laughed out loud towards Hansoo who was pushing in towards him like a rhino.

“Hahahahaha! How about using the Destruction Jade?”

But Hansoo ignored his words as he continued to head forward.

If the Destruction jade really worked like his words then he shouldn't really be saving it as of now.

Since the problem with the Sages would only matter if they were alive.

But if the creator of this had enmity against the Sages, he would've prepared for the Destruction Jade.

The creator of the Destruction jade was Karmen.

He would easily be able to prepare against it.

Even more so if he was a Sage whose intelligence increased every year unlike humans.

If this thing was created to go against the Sages then the Destruction Jade would not work against this creature.

'It might work but... I can't take the gamble.'

If all mana was frozen and this guy was fine then it would be a disaster.

Boooooom!

Metiron tried to create some distance but this corridor was too narrow.

And Hansoo's physical abilities were much higher.

Hansoo pushed back the Destruction Jade as a last resort inside his head and then smashed his spear towards Metiron whom he had gotten close to now.

Whoooooosh!

The spear, which was surrounded by the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement, pushed forward and flew in towards Metiron's head.

At the same time the Pandemic Blade flared up as it started to cover Metiron's entire body and burn up his nerves.

But as if he had no plans to dodge Hansoo's spear from the beginning, Metiron made a fist and then smashed his right hand towards the spear.

A hand that was glowing red like a ruby.

Hansoo didn't drop his guard against this fist as he poured more power into the spear.

‘God’s Right Hand.’

A finisher move that could only be applied onto the right hand.

The tremendous amount of power that could destroy anything was actually quite stupid.

It had one characteristic.

Power Defeasance.

As if it had the authority of a God, if you got hit by the fist surrounded by that skill then the mana a skill of lower level then it would be ignored and it would even lower the power of a skill that was above it.

The fist that was surrounded by red smashed into Hansoo’s spear.

Boooooom!

Despite the spear having dampened a large amount of strength, the Forked Lightning still bent as if it would break.

At the same time Hansoo’s body was flung backwards.

And Metiron frowned as he saw this.

Since blood was flowing from his hand where the spear had struck it.

‘Unknown Artifacts and... Unknown skills. Where the hell did he get such things?’

The God’s Right Hand nullified most of the skills.

Then he would use the fist to smash his opponent.

This fist should kill most people with a single strike.

And he was using almost ten times as much mana as his opponent.

But the Reinforcement around him wasn’t nullified and the Artifact didn’t break either.

It meant that the level of the Artifact was extremely high and the skill’s level was much higher than his.

According to what he knew, there were less than 10 skills whose levels were higher than Taehee’s unique skill,

Like Kangtae’s

There weren't any skills like what he saw Hansoo use according to what he knew.

'...He would become a monster once he gains the Mana Pool huh.'

Metiron clenched his fist as he mumbled.

A common thing high-level skills had was that a tremendous amount mana was required to fit their might.

Even if the efficiency of the mana was great, a large amount was still used due to the tremendous amount of strength.

Of course the problem was that mana was fair to everyone despite one's skill.

Mana did not discern between people, it was fair and square to everybody.

It would be normal if he was on the ground by now from a lack of mana but for him to still have mana meant that his control over distributing mana was tremendous.

And if the amount of mana of a person like this was multiplied by a few times?

And he then strode around with the skills he had?

‘I have to kill him here no matter what.’

At that moment.

A bronze-colored light exploded out from Metiron’s body.

At the same time the ten people around him who couldn’t even participate in this fight got swept by the bronze colored light as well.

Unique skill.

If Transcendent Brilliance didn’t exist, this would be the most powerful crowd buff that existed out there.

Steel Lord.

He had plenty of mana anyway.

‘I’ll smash you apart!’

Boooom!

Then Metiron and the ten clansmen, who were surrounded by the bronze colored light, flew towards Hansoo.

.....



Flutter

Kaltus frowned as he saw a carrier pigeon flying in.

‘....What? Escape? What the hell does he mean.’

Kaltus made a dumbfounded expression.

They had gone off to finish off some minor jobs.

But for Hansoo to tell them to run away without any reason.

As Kaltus was about to chuckle at this.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

He could feel the earth trembling from the distance.

‘What the.....’

A random earthquake.

Kaltus walked out of his tent in curiosity.

Then.

Kaltus didn't believe his own eyes.

Since the scene in front of him was extremely unrealistic.

Boooom!

A Satellite Fortress got smashed apart by a mysterious monster while fleeing and fell to the ground.

The monster then started to eat up the Satellite Fortress.

Crunch

Uuuududuk

For every bite, the blue aura around it got deeper and its skin turned even more like bronze.

Boooom!

Booom!

The Satellite Fortresses were assaulting it from all directions but it was all useless.

The beast just took on the attacks that could blow apart mountains as it continued to eat.

And its food was the Satellite Fortresses which had made them extremely powerful and formidable.

“Uwaaaak!”

“Aaak!”

The ground cracked and the land trembled just from it eating.

Thankfully it didn't have any interest in humans as everybody was running away.

Kaltus looked at this scene in a daze as he mumbled.

‘We...Are too weak.’

Even the Sages who had such a powerful civilization and technology were in peace with them.

It was already like this but if the number of humans who received the Body Enhancement Surgery and the Mana Pool Surgery increased to hundreds of millions or even billions?

He had thought that there was nothing to fear anymore.

This was why he was curious as to why that Hansoo guy was trying so hard.

Since if the above zone was a place where humans could live somewhat, it wouldn't be that hard for them to take it over.

Since they had no problems on the outside, he had focused on the inner mechanisms and had focused on gaining authority.

But he finally realized that this was all a huge misconception.

‘Fuck... This is just a beginning. We're just bugs.’

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

“Run away! Everyone evacuate!”

Kaltus screamed out as he saw the bronze monster leaping towards another Satellite Fortress while swinging its bludgeon.

## Chapter 211 : Gael-Tara (4)

---

Kwaaaddddk!

Uuududuk!

Countless collisions occurred around Hansoo.

Against the ten clansmen.

These people, who couldn't even participate before due to their fear of being swept up in the fight, were attacking him now.

With bronze-colored lights surrounding him.

Claaaanggg!

Hansoo's spear smashed onto a clansman but surprisingly a sound of metal clashing was heard as the spear was deflected.

Of course the one who had been hit wasn't perfectly fine.

Boooom!

Since he had fallen backwards after losing his arm.

But this wasn't really a profit

Whooosh!

Another clansmen picked up the arm of his comrade and then threw it to the one who had been flung off.

The clansmen, whose arm had been cut off, brought his arm to and connected the spots where it had been cut.

Then.



Chiiiiik

A bronze-colored light shone out from the area of injury as it healed it.

And the arm got reconnected.

Whoosh! Whoooosh!

The man swung his arm a few times to check that it was alright as he jumped up from his position and charged towards Hansoo again.

Hansoo shook his head as he saw this scene.

‘Steel Lord.’

Its effects were simple.

Give a powerful body, a troll’s regenerative powers and the agility and power of a beast to the ones affected.

The person with this skill would basically become a lord who has an army of steel men.

It wasn’t a really good skill for Hansoo due to its large amount of mana usage and him being used to being alone but if you had a

tremendous amount of mana and your underlings were quite strong then there was no other skill as good as this.

Clannngg!

Hansoo got hit by the sword from his back as he got flung forwards.

Hansoo's Thousand Soldiers Armor got smashed apart, scales underneath them got spliced apart and caused him to bleed.

But it wasn't like he was at a loss

Since he had cut apart the neck of one of the clansmen the moment he got flung forward.

Split!

Even the Steel Lord could not save a clansman whose head was severed.

Well, it might be possible if it was connected immediately.

But the Pandemic blade that was on the edge of the spear seeped into the injuries and burned up all the muscles and nerves around the area.

At the same time.

Sap Sap.

The energy drained by the Vampiric powers regenerated Hansoo's flesh and blood.

He didn't fully recover but it was more than enough to stop him from becoming immobile from blood loss and muscle destruction.

'Five left.'

Hansoo's body wasn't perfect as well but he had gotten the heads of half of Metiron's people already.

The sooner he finished in here the less damage would be caused in the outside.

Hansoo continued this momentum and headed for the next person.

And Metiron roared out in rage and charged towards Hansoo.

"You Bastard!"

Boooom!

The God's Right Hand in Metiron's right hand smashed with Hansoo's Forked Lightning again.

Crunch.

Maybe if he was in perfect condition things might've been different but Hansoo had received quite a large amount of injuries already.

Hansoo felt his muscles rippling from the collision and flung his body backwards.

“You bastard! Just surrender! Why are you struggling so hard! Just surrender man! You'll die if you don't comply with us here!”

He wanted to kill this Hansoo instantly.

But a message from Taehee had come.

Of course he was only going to take him alive, he had no intentions of keeping him perfectly intact.

He was going to turn him into half a corpse before taking him but even that was hard.

Clementine's orders had long disappeared from his head.

‘He said as long as it’s possible possible...But this monster.’

Metiron made a dumbfounded expression.

He was overwhelming Hansoo with the the Fragment of Seven Souls, Mana Jade and even his clansmen but Hansoo was still holding on.

But even if he lived here, he wouldn’t be able to live in the areas above.

Since it was their world already.

Maybe if his comrades had been sent to the Birdcage.

There shouldn’t be a reason for a newcomer to have such hatred against him but Metiron smiled after pondering about the reason.

‘Is he perhaps trying to save the humans?’

Metiron made a cold smile inwardly.

There was one thing he had felt while managing the humans for over a decade here.

That these guys did not have the right to live.

If a worth of a person's life was dependent on them helping others or harming others then things would become extremely clear.

There wasn't anybody there who hadn't sinned.

Even the Sages who were acting all high and mighty.

'The ones who have power are worse.'

Boooooom!

Metiron frowned as he smashed Hansoo away as he had charged towards him.

While thinking about the memories the existence within the marble had shown him.

.....

Boooom!

Crunch. Crunch.

Kwwaaaaduduk.

The Sage Kel-Durin was dumbfounded as he stared at the giant barbarian who was devouring the giant Satellite Fortress.

It didn't have any manners or majesty

It was just attacking with its viciousness.

Taking account of the materials used to create such a thing, it was really a waste.

Looking at the barbaric image, the crown on its head was quite comical.

But Kel-Durin could not laugh.

Since the barbarian's body was created from the person they could not forget as the base.

A Sage who had a body that was several times stronger than the others.

The one who had a tremendously strong body and a huge amount of intelligence.

'My god. It's Karmen.'

The image of the Barbarian was the same as that of their king, Karmen.

As if it was laughing and belittling their civilization, the giant King who had appeared before them was smashing apart and devouring the Satellite Fortresses, the pinnacle of their civilization.

As if he was trying to take back all the achievements he had created.

The Sages with the bodies of the Rebeloongs and Arukons trembled in fear as they made confused expressions.

“My god...That’s Karmen.”

“Is it a legacy of Karmen?”

“Why...Why...?”

Karmen.

The great king who had lead them into the light of wisdom.

Karmen lead them and they followed him.

Why would Karmen create such a strange beast in order to smash apart their civilization?



But unlike these Sages, the royalty who had the body of Akalachias all had gloomy expressions.

Because they knew why.

‘...Oh Karmen...’

A tremor rang throughout Kel-Durin’s body every time he made eye contact with the eye that looked their way from time to time while eating the Satellite Fortresses.

Since a large amount of hate, despair and rage was swimming within them.

There wasn’t much to see really.

It was too focused on eating up the Satellite Fortresses and filling up its mana but once it dealt with this they were next.

Since Karmen wouldn’t forgive them.

No, he had created such a thing since he had no thoughts of forgiving them.

A beast.

Kel-Durin mumbled.

‘KIng. You...Should’ve just died a clean death. That was the only way to have remained as a shining hero within our memories forever.’

They couldn’t do anything else.

Since the King hadn’t given them any information and monopolized it all.

Even this strange beast, the El-Tara, was kept in the dark from them.

Living past 30 years for the first time in their history and living up to 60 years.

His wisdom reached the heavens but for him to monopolize it all and not use it for their race.

And their race had made tremendously fast progress despite only barely eating up the leftovers.

If the king had properly shared the information then their technology and civilization would have advanced to a degree which wouldn’t even be comparable to that of now.

Their expectations were as great as their respect for him and the disappointment followed this as hope turned into greed.

Even more so for the Royalty.

The nobility, soldiers and commoners had barely lived 10 years so their greed for information wasn't as bad but Kel-Durin and the other royalty were much more greedy.

Even more so if their lifespans got shorter and shorter.

As Karmen held back the information, their nervousness only grew and grew.

But then one day.

They didn't know what it was but this was a perfect chance.

This was the only chance to suppress the king who barely left the Garmeia.

Since it was clear what would happen if they clashed with the king when he had the Garmeia.

So when the king left the Garmeria and arrived at the Capital.

They launched a surprise attack against the King.

And the result was a great success.

They had landed a fatal attack onto the King and succeeded in taking the information.

A secret only a few people of the Royalty knew.

Kel-Durin made a complex expression as he thought of back then.

‘....For him to bring such a thing.’

The information the king brought them was the result of their body.

The Transmigration of Soul.

Information that told them how to create a powerful body and move their souls there.

When the guilt of them having killed their own king with their hands had swept over them, it was already too late.

They had performed the transmigration of their souls with the information they stole as the basis.

Create bodies with mana pools and move their souls onto them.

It took almost ten years because they didn't have the original creator of this but the result was obviously a success.

They had jumped past 800 years due to a miscalculation but this was nothing.

But for Karmen, whose only job left was to become a great king in their history, to have come out like this and create a mess.

Kel-Durin clenched his teeth.

'You were going to be left behind as a shining star but...You wish to die a dirty death.'

Seeing that figure, he thought of the maze experiment Karmen had performed in the past.

A test to create an organism out of the Silver Sea which countered their mana pool.

They had thought that they were creating an emergency shelter but they finally knew why now.

The maze was a prototype.

Actually Karmen might've actually guessed their betrayal.

Since he wouldn't have hidden such a thing, which could devour them and their entire civilization, inside the Garmeria otherwise.

It was clearly something created by Karmen.

The amount of power and its defence.

The Satellite Fortresses were getting destroyed without even being able to do anything.

'You think we'll just sit here and do nothing?'

Kel-Durin mumbled.

They had a large amount of Karmen's information and they had a secret weapon created by using that information.

Kel-Durin called royalty, Kan-Kun and spoke.

"Bring the Bluestone. We need to use it."

'To come back to us an evil spirit...We will just send you off. This is good. We can deal with the humans as well.'

The only ones that needed to remain behind were the Royalty.

Kel-Durin mumbled as he looked at the organism that was causing havoc in the distance.

.....

Boooooooooom!

Metiron laughed out loud after smashing Hansoo and then spoke.

“Hahaha! The Sages are probably busy trying to attack you from your back! And how many of the ones who you’re trying to help have not sinned? They are worthy of death! Do you really think there are people who haven’t gotten blood on their hands?”

Crunch!

Hansoo blocked the attacks of Metiron and the steel soldiers and laughed as he swung his spear.

“Is sinning a problem?”

“What?”

As Metiron was confused.

Hansoo mumbled.

‘What I need are soldiers not people who would protect me.’

The ones who would protect them would be better the kinder they were and more good they were

But the soldiers who would go onto the battlefields were different.

They were better the more sins they had caused.

To the point of rules of using sinners as soldiers existing.

‘I’m just here to give them strength, control them and take them up.’

The ones who were good just needed to use that strength to protect themselves.

And the sinners could just sin more and fight to the death.

Since the beings of the Abyss weren't attacking the humans because of their justice and evilness.

So it didn't matter whether they sinned or not.

Since the blades wouldn't discriminate against anybody once the door of the Abyss opened up.

“Anyways...Isn't it becoming a bit tiring now?”

Hansoo smiled towards Metiron.

Metiron's expression froze at a miniscule level.



Despite Hansoo being the one having become a mess.

# Chapter 212 : Gael-Tara (5)

---

Fragments of Seven Souls.

The power wasn't given out for free.

Maybe if they were at similar levels.

Metiron's body, which belonged in the Yellow Zone, could not receive the soul of Taehee, who was at the Violet Zone, and use it properly.

Even if it was just a fragment.

Their Zones were different as was their strength and quality.

If Metiron even pulled out a bit of this strength then his body would overheat and tire out.

Like a young child swinging a giant claymore.

Even more so if he was using an amount of mana he could barely handle.

Maybe if his body had been enhanced by mana but there was a limit to how much the unenhanced body of a human could handle mana.

If Metiron had the enhanced body or even the ability to control mana better then he would've long have lost.

But this was it.

The pressure from the Mana and Soul.

And the body that could not keep up with that.

Rumblee!

The Seven Strands Spear shot out from Metiron's left hand and then smashed onto Hansoo.

But a rough sound came out from Metiron instead of Hansoo.

“Ugh...”

Metiron gulped down the blood that had come up to his neck as he grasped his hand that was trembling intensely.

The Mana Jade was still supplying him with mana and his soul was giving him strength but his damned body couldn't handle it.

Of course Hansoo was also a mess.

If the insides of his body were messed up than Hansoo's outer

parts were smashed apart.

But Metiron knew from over a decade of battle experience.

Who would win at this rate.

‘Fuck. This is the end.’

His clansmen had all died and only he was left.

Metiron, who had been making an expression full of despair, suddenly clenched his teeth.

‘It’s not the end yet. A new variable. I just need a new variable.’

He would be able to flip the situation then.

Metiron refocused, gathered mana again and started to push Hansoo back.

.....

“Are you really going to use it?”

Kan-Kun made a bitter expression as he eyed the shining Bluestone in front of him.

Normally, there shouldn't be a use for this stone which was used to transmute souls.

Since they had settled in the bodies they wanted and their original bodies had long rotted away.

But another use existed for this Bluestone.

An experience which had occurred in the Maze in the past.

This was one of Karmen's countless tests and it wasn't that hard for them to utilize this as they had all the information.

Which meant that theoretically, they would be able to control the liquid metal if they used the stone that moved souls, the Bluestone.

There was actually another reason why Kan-Kun was worried.

But even before Kan-Kun could reply.

Kel-Durin cut off Kan-Kun's words as he spoke.

"Is there another plan as of now other than the Bluestone?"

"..."

Kan-Kun became a mute from Kel-Durin's words.

Booom!

Booobooooom!

The Satellite Fortresses were continuing to get smashed apart even now.

The 2km monster was almost reaching 3km now and the speed at which the Satellite Fortresses got smashed apart was increasing.

Even if they had powerful bodies, fighting would only make sense if they were in the same league.

‘But....’

Kan-Kun clenched his teeth.

Two things were required for the soul to settle properly.

First, the targey shouldn't deny them.

And then the opponent's mana shouldn't act up.

This was why they had erased the sanity of the Higher Races with the Redstone and then got rid of the mana with the Blackstone.

Since then it was possible to control them with the soul.

And in the past they had been successful in controlling the entire maze with just a single soul of a Sage

But the situation was now different.

Over several tens of times as much mana was overflowing through that giant beast's body.

The problem was that there existed a owner for that beast.

Which means that it wouldn't be enough even if they use all the souls of the Sages and smashed onto it.

But Kel-Durin shook his head.

“Don't worry. We won't need them all.”

It was clear.

That the beast, Gael-Tara, was moving on instinct.

In order to raise its body and fill up its mana.

He didn't know what was going on but the one inside had merely activated it, he was not able to control it yet.

Which meant that a chance existed.

“Start it already.”

“...Where shall I set the standards? Shall we get volunteers?”

Kan-Kun asked with a grim expression.

Though it didn't have a sanity, it would still take a tremendous amount of souls in order to beat it.

It was basically the same as trying to smash apart a rock by throwing eggs at it.

Until the hundreds of thousands of souls win over the repulsive force of the mana and settle upon that giant body.

Of course the souls that get deflected would die.

Kel-Durin pondered for a moment at Kan-Kun's words but then shook his head.

“It's too urgent for that. What would we do if the number of volunteers is too low after sharing all the truth? That giant beast would've long destroyed all the Satellite Fortresses and would be attacking us.”



“ ... ”

“I believe in our race but... Since there is a chance for our race, who have woken up after hundreds of years, to hesitate, let's just gather them while keeping this a secret. Of course start at the ones with the largest amount in numbers since it would be better the higher the unity of the souls is.”

Kan-Kun's expression froze at those words.

It was just called unity of the souls, it just meant that they were going to pour in the 4th level Sages, those of the lowest level, who were the most in numbers

Kan-Kun's beak trembled but no words came out as he just backed off and nodded.

And Kel-Durin mumbled inwardly as he looked at this Kan-Kun.

‘It seems you won't make it big. You cannot see what is more important right now.’

Them, the rank 1 Sages, knew much more than those of lower ranks and were wiser as well.

The Rebeloong's body was based around breeding anyway.

It wasn't hard to multiply their numbers.

‘Yeah. It’s better to act efficiently than all of us dying.’

Kel-Durin made a grim expression as he looked at the hundreds of thousands of rank 4 Sages gathering around the Bluestone and then smiled towards the beast which was still causing a havoc.

‘Karmen, you’re giving us strength even until the end. Don’t worry, just watch. Watch as to how I use your legacy to lead our race.’

The Destruction Jade wouldn’t work on it either.

It was obvious.

Why would Karmen have set it up so it would stop moving without mana?

And as he expected, the surface of the liquid metal was actually coated with a special material.

Even if the Destruction Jade was used, the mana engine deep inside it would still work.

If something that the Destruction Jade doesn’t work against comes up to them?

‘We don’t even have to receive those threats from those humans.’

The barbaric humans were annoying him anyway.

With that thing he would be able to sweep them away and reclaim power over this world.

The power as the race of this world.

The gloomy expression disappeared from Kel-Durin’s face as he started to hum.

.....

Rumble!

Boooom!

In the deepest parts of the Gael-Tara

The battle between thunder and lightning near the control room was coming to an end.

Clangg!

“Ugh!”

Metiron smashed into the wall as he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

His mana circuits have all been fried.

All of Hansoo's four limbs and two of his three hearts had been destroyed but there was a difference between Hansoo and Metiron.

Hansoo still had some power left to end Metiron and Metiron did not even have any strength to move.

And Metiron knew this.

‘...This is the end.’

As Metiron was about to give up.

Kiiiiiiiing!

The liquid metal started to resonate and move.

Like rain upon a lake.

Hundreds of thousands of stirrings occurred upon the humongous Gael-Tara.

And Metiron's eyebrows twitched as he saw this.

The movements of the Gael-Tara, which had been jumping around energetically, was getting dull.

It was abnormal.

No such things was told to him according to Karmen.

Which only meant one thing.

That something was attacking it from the outside.

Then.

Metiron's head started to spin.

Whose interference was this?

It was obvious really.

The sages.

The humans wouldn't be able to affect this giant beast.

Metiron thought of the next question.

How are they trying to intercept him?

He also knew the answer right away.

‘They’ll try to eat it up.’

They weren’t just stopping it.

They were probably trying to eat up the entire Gael-Tara.

Metiron then stopped.

Two things had come up in his head.

What would these guys do the moment they eat up this giant beast?

And.

What was his own objective?

He realized.

A smile surfaced on Metiron’s face.

‘It’s not the best option but...It’s not bad as a backup.’

His objective and theirs was the same.

Getting rid of every human here and every human who would go up.

He had failed already.

Which meant that handing it over wouldn't be bad.

Metiron coughed up blood and smiled towards Hansoo.

“You won. According to the promise... Take the Mana Jade. But.. I'm sorry. I don't think I can fulfill all of it. I cannot give you one of the promised things.”

‘You’ve won but in actuality, I’ve won.’

As Metiron gave up his control.

Kiiiiing

The openings upon the liquid metal got extremely large as they started to bore into the center.

Then.

Rumble.

The control of the Gael-Tara had been passed over.

.....



Rumble

“Uh...What the hell?”

“Huh?”

The people made confused expressions as the giant beast stopped moving in the midst of eating a Satellite Fortress.

Then.

Tong!

The bludgeon of the Gael-Tara made grinding noises and turned into a ferocious looking golden sword.

The Gael-Tara, who held the golden sword in his right hand, spat out the Satellite Fortresses and then fixed the crown on its head.

And then.

Chwaaarrrrk!

The entire body of the naked Karmen shook as a robe of Yongpo (Korean Emperor's Outfit) appeared upon it.

The barbarian disappeared as a mighty King appeared in its place.

There was somebody who was looking at the giant Gael-Tara with a content expression.

‘Very good.’

That was it.

That was the look that fit the king of their race, the race of dragons, Karmen.

‘Remain in that look forever and protect us.’

The sacrificed Rebeloongs would’ve been proud as well.

Kel-Durin made a content smile with the Bluestone in his hands.

Since they had gained it, it was now time for the protector to act.

And there were very good targets in front of him.

The Satellite Fortresses given over to the humans.

Though most of them had been broken apart and had been eaten. Over 10 still remained.

They wouldn't want things dirtied by humans back in their hands.

It was better to break them.

Kel-Durin laughed as he grasped the Bluestone in his hands.

'Go.'

Roarrrr!

"Aaarrk!"

"Fuck!"

The people started to run away again as they saw the giant beast moving so suddenly.

The moment the giant king stepped forward and was about to slash down upon the Satellite Fortresses of the humans with his blade.

Udddk

The Gael-Tara suddenly stopped.

Randomly.

‘Hmm?’

Kel-Durin frowned as he saw this scene.

## Chapter 213 : Gael-Tara (6)

---

‘Until the end huh.’

Hansoo clicked his tongue towards Metiron who had let go of all the controls and then placed his hand upon the heart of Metiron.

Kiiiiing

The thing that had remained as a symbol inside Metiron's heart slowly got pulled out.

A shining crystal-shaped object.

This was the epitome of Karmen, the king who had been betrayed, that was a tier higher than the Mana Pools.

Mana Jade.

'Instead of a higher tier Mana Pool... It's like a lower tier Mana Engine.'

Hansoo mumbled as he stared at the Mana Jade that was letting off a tremendous amount of mana while floating above his hand.

This was created for the Sages.

Since it was an artifact that fit their superior bodies.

This could easily fill up the small amount of needed mana from the Mana Pool.

It would've been a gift that would've been sent to the Sages if he hadn't been hit in the back.

If the Sages had waited patiently a bit more then they would've received the method of mass creating the Mana Jade and would have been able to have an even more powerful race.

Hansoo placed the Mana Jade above his heart.

The moment the Mana Jade, which was comprised of four jewels tied up in a strange path, got close to Hansoo's heart.

The single remaining heart split up in sync with its own beat into four parts.

And the four blue jewels that were slowly rotating around the flesh around the heart slowly started to bore down into Hansoo's body.

Crunch. Udddudk.

The moment the Mana Jade entered his heart.

Cwhaaaak!

A tremendous amount of mana started to sweep over Hansoo's body.

The mana that came out from the Mana Jade started to follow Hansoo's mana circuits in his body and started to bore into the

deepest parts of his body.

Ooooong.

The dried up mana circuits were flooded as the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement started up again.

Then.

Kulug Kulug.

The regeneration from the Racial Metamorphosis, the Dragon Essence Blade, the Body Enhancement Surgery and even the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement started to heal up Hansoo at an extremely rapid rate.

Broken bones were mended and skin was healed.

Severed muscles got connected and the messed up arteries, veins and the nerves regenerated.

And Hansoo made a content expression as he saw this.

He felt like a fish in water.

How much had he suffered due to lack of mana after coming back to the past?



His body grew quickly and his skills got stronger but due to the lack of mana, he could not utilize them properly.

But since he had gained the Mana Jade, the story would change.

After the injuries healed and regained his senses, he walked towards the control room of the Gael-Tara behind Metiron.

The blue marble was still floating in its original shape despite all the chaos.

Of course Hansoo and Metiron both tried to reduce as much damage that came this way.

‘Anyway... How shall I do this?’

He hadn’t told others but he was quite worried.

Since he wasn’t really interested in technology or science.

The reason why the Sages could affect this guy was because they had risen to a certain level in their technology and intelligence.

‘I guess I should try as much as I can first.’

The moment Hansoo walked into the control room.

Metiron coughed out blood and laughed from outside.

“Haha...Hahahaha! I’ve won! Kang Hansoo! The humans...They’ll all die now.”

The Sages would definitely not let the humans alive once they obtain this.

This place will become a much more vicious and dangerous place than when the Higher Races ruled.

Though it’s a shame he wouldn’t be able to pick out and send people up, this wasn’t bad.

‘Clementine... Climb well. I’ll... deal with the problem here.’

He barely had the strength to move his fingers after becoming such a mess but a victorious sentiment swept through him.

As Metiron smiled while reminiscing about the times when the nine of them roamed around the Otherworld.

Hansoo mumbled.

“Well.. We’ll see.”

The controls were all intact and the possibility existed.

‘If it doesn’t work then... I can at least temporarily stop it.’

As long as he could stop the movements of this thing then he would be able to deal with it from the outside.

Since according to the soul fragment, both sides still had Satellite Fortresses and the human forces still remained.

Though a frontal clash would result in a large amount of casualties, it was much better than this thing going on a rampage.

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then put his hand upon the blue marble.

Oooooong

The minds of the thing inside and Hansoo resonated.

Then.

Whooosh

Hansoo’s consciousness started to rush towards a certain location quickly.

.....

Hansoo made a surprised expression while he looked at the white space that had suddenly appeared.

“Hmm. This is...”

An all-white space.

As Hansoo looked around this white space where the beginnings and ends could not be determined.

Glug.

The ground in front of him moved around and something shot up.

White like the white space he was in but an existence that resembled a human.

Hansoo spoke towards the muscular figure.

“So you’re Karmen huh.”

Hansoo then mumbled.

It wasn’t a soul.

It was more like a agglomeration of memories and evil intentions.

It seems that Karmen had reached an even higher level.

The white figure nodded and then spoke.

“Well. It’s... more of a leftover to be exact.”

It wasn’t an existence that had all of Karmen’s intelligence, mentality, memories and emotions.

It was just an existence that had a few random abilities to control this thing.

An existence that was only created for revenge.

Hansoo didn’t know why but Karmen was making quite a calm expression, maybe it was due to the interception of the Sages from outside or he still had some sanity left.

Karmen then spoke.

“Well, I tried to be nice to them while I was alive. Since they were a pitiful race. To have such a great amount of abilities and intelligence but for their lifespans to be that limited. How sad would it have been for them?”

“...?”

Hansoo frowned at Karmen who was speaking as if he was of a different race but Karmen didn't falter as he continued to speak.

“Well, they were a race who was going to die off even without my hands. Their lifespans were getting shorter and their fertility rates were also going down. It is the result of the higher level of technology and more exposure to mana.”

The main reason for the Sage's low fertility rates and short lifespans were because of the overbearing mana that their bodies could not handle.

And ironically the situation had turned worse as they tried to fix it with science and mana.

Destruction of the entire race was something that was bound to happen.

Since no matter how great of a technology they had, if their lifespans and fertility rates were bad then they would all perish.

As Hansoo nodded.

Karmen spoke.

“So I was going to use the technology of the World Tree, Body Enhancement Surgery and even the Soul transmigration to prepare a new body for them but...I guess this was their limit.”

“What?”

As Hansoo was shocked from these answers.

Karmen replied.

“Don’t be so shocked. There are a lot of strange things in the world. Anyways...I’ve prepared two things for them.”

The first was a present that would lead them to glory.

The second was a present that would drag them down to destruction.

Maybe if the present box hadn’t been opened.

Once it was opened, they couldn’t return or deny it.



“Since it seems like they’ve received the good part...They need to receive the second present as well. I guess this is why they say you need to hear the bad news first.”

Karmen spoke towards Hansoo.

“Shall I ask you a question? Why did I set this up so it ate the Satellite Fortress first instead of killing the Sages? If I was going to get revenge then I should've just killed them first.”

Though it got stronger the more mana it ate, the Gael-Tara was more than enough with just the Garmeia’s engine.

There wasn’t a need to eat up the Satellite Fortresses.

As Hansoo made a confused expression.

Karmen laughed as he whispered into Hansoo’s ear.

“...”

“What!?”

As Hansoo shouted out in shock.

Karmen smiled and then spoke.

“This is the last gift I present to you guys. Since you guys haven’t sinned against me yet. Do your best”.

As Karmen’s words ended.

Ooooong

The large white space started to tremble and fall apart.

Karmen laughed out loudly in the midst of the crumbling space and spoke.

“It was fun to converse after so long! Hahaha! Farewell!”

Then

Whooosh!

Hansoo’s conscious started to fly back to its original location.

.....

“Huup!”

Hansoo hurriedly looked around after returning from the white space that had fallen apart.

Kuuugugugu

Surprisingly, the white space was not the only thing falling apart.

The Gael-Tara that had eaten up the countless Satellite Fortresses and their mana engines was bubbling.

And Hansoo could also see the shocked expression of Metiron.

“What...What is this? What’s going on?”

Metiron mumbled with a confused expression.

Everything was going so well.

The control for this giant thing had been passed over and they just needed to destroy the humans.

Though he would die by Hansoo’s hands, this was more than enough.

But this thing stopped completely as soon as Hansoo touched the control marble.

And strange things were even occurring.

Metiron shouted towards Hansoo who had taken his hands off from the marble.

“You..You fucking bastard! What the hell have you done! How did you do this!”

Hansoo shook his head as he replied.

“I didn’t do it. Anyways, this Karmen guy...He was quite vengeful.”

“What?”

Hansoo didn’t reply to Metiron’s words as he quickly placed his hands back on the control marble.

The act of the Sages trying to take over the control was merely some child play to Karmen.

The control for this thing had been only for a moment, all the souls that had entered to control this had been destroyed and this giant thing was ready to act on its instincts again.

‘I have to hurry.’

Within the trembling environment.

Hansoo started to focus on the control marble in front of his eyes.

# Chapter 214 : Gael-Tara (7)

---

Ooooooong!

“What? Why isn’t it moving?”

Kel-Durin frowned as he looked at the Gael-Tara in the distance.

Why did the monster, which should be moving to his will and destroying the Satellite Fortresses, suddenly stop?

‘Move it! Move!’

Slicing apart the Satellite Fortresses should’ve been the first step of his plan.

Kel-Durin was getting anxious as a completely different scene played out instead of the one he had planned out.

As Kel-Durin clenched tightly onto the Bluestone.

Boooooom!

“Yes!”

The Gael-Tara started to move again.



The moment Kel-Durin shouted out.

Boooooom!

The Gael-Tara jumped into the air and then sliced apart the Satellite Fortress.

Like how Kel-Durin wanted.

But Kel-Durin couldn't exclaim out in joy.

“What...What!? Why ours? Why are you destroying ours!?”

Sphlisshhhh

Kel-Durin let out a scream as he saw that the giant Gael-Tara didn't cut the human's Satellite Fortresses but rather theirs.

But even before his scream could end.

The giant Gael-Tara jumped off into the air again.

Then.

Booom!

Boom! Boooooom!

Mass destruction started to happen.

The Gael-Tara followed what Kel-Durin had originally wanted and had started to destroy all the remaining Satellite Fortresses.

The problem was the fact that they were all theirs.

The Satellite Fortresses, which had surrounded the Gael-Tara and were assaulting it, started to get smashed apart by the Gael-Tara's sword, fists and kicks.

The viciousness from when it had the look of a barbarian had all disappeared.

Instead, profound sword arts came out from the tip of the Gael-Tara's blade.

A sword art befitting of a king.

Though it was all directed at the Sages.

Booom!

Boooobobobooom!

The eleven remaining Satellite Fortresses of the Sages started to get destroyed.

The Rebelongs and the Arukons, the 3rd and 4th rank Sages, all cried out in shock.

“Why is the creature with the look of our king destroying the Satellite Fortresses!”

“And only ours!”

At least before, he was destroying those from both sides.

The human's and theirs.

But as it turned into the look of their glorious king, Karmen, it was only targeting their Satellite Fortresses.

The giant king swinging the sword, Karmen.

But the Sages got suspicious as they saw the madness, rage, despair and hate embedded deep within the metal eyes of Karmen.

Those were the eyes of revenge.

Why did their king, Karmen, birth such a beast like that and destroyed their technology and civilization?

Mumbles occurred within the crowds of 3rd and 4th rank Sages.

“Hmm... Wait... There were actually a lot of mysterious things about where Karmen had gone!”

“They said Karmen had personally lead the great soul transmigration but we have never seen it!”

The ones who had actually lead the project were not Karmen but the rank 1 Sages who now had the bodies of the Akalachias.

They didn't really feel anything strange back then.

Since Karmen usually stayed within the Garmeia anyway only to appear rarely from time to time.

And although they had a lot of reasons to meet up with the rank 1 Sages, they didn't really feel as if it was strange to not see Karmen since it was the norm.

Since the difficulty of the project and the nervousness and fear filled their heads already.

But it was strange for him to have not made a single appearance in the 10-year-long project.

And 800 years had past unlike their expectations?

Their king, Karmen, did not know of mistakes.

Maybe if somebody got Karmen's data and tried to copy the project.

At that moment

All the eyes of the 3rd and 4th rank Sages started to head towards Kel-Durin and the other 1st rank Sages, the Akalachias.

One of the Arukons who were frowning asked Kel-Durin.

“Kel-Durin? What is this.”

“...What do you mean?”

“You guys should know well. As to why Karmen’s statue is creating a havoc over there. Weren’t you close to the king?”

Suspicious that were close to being confirmed.

Kel-Durin frowned and then replied.

“How would we know? We didn’t even know that the king would go crazy in his later years and create a beast such as that. Do you think we would have let him make such a thing if we knew about it? Are you suspecting me, somebody who is trying to control that thing?”

Kel-Durin grinded his teeth as he spoke out.

‘Insolent bastards.’

Because of the dire situation, mere 3rd and 4th rankers were glaring at him.

He would've punished them usually but he could not now.

Since the gazes of the surrounding people were extremely vicious.

Even if they were the powerful 1st rank Akalachias, there were just too many 3rd and 4th rankers.

'We'll see after the issue is resolved.'

Kel-Durin finished his thoughts and clenched tightly onto the Bluestone in his hands.

There was a single reason why this had happened.

The resistance of that giant thing was stronger than he expected.

So the soul couldn't settle properly and he had failed in controlling it.

'Yeah. If there was no effect...Then it wouldn't even have changed its looks or moved according to my will.'

Kel-Durin mumbled as he looked at the Gael-Tara which was swinging its blade in the distance.

The proof of it was the beast which still had the look of a king he had thought up of.

Which meant that the solution was simple.

The direction was correct but strength was lacking.

The Bluestone was effective but there was a lack of souls.

Which means he just needed to smash in more souls.

Kel-Durin thought up to this point and then shouted loudly.

“We should not be splitting up and fighting with each other! Look at that beast! What do you think will happen if we can’t block it? If we aren’t able to block it then we would all die!”

The other Sages, who were threatening, the 1st rank Sages flinched.

It was just like he had said.

Even if that beast only destroyed the Satellite Fortresses it would be a problem.



Over ten Satellite Fortresses were still intact.

This was more than enough to control the other humans and destroy the remaining Sages.

‘And...Kel-Durin tried to attack them earlier.’

Everyone had clearly seen where the giant statue of their king had swung his sword before.

Maybe if they still had their alliance but once the balance of power had been broken, he had tried to attack them.

And since the powers have flipped, there was no way that their enemies would leave them be.

Kel-Durin saw the people’s suspicions dying out despite their mumbles, sighed in relief and then shouted again.

“So we need to put more souls into the Bluestone! Don’t worry, once we calm that thing and end the situation we can just return the souls!”

Kel-Durin then pointed behind him.

Hundreds of thousands of Sages who were lying unconsciously on the temporary tents.

As if they were sleeping, their bodies were lined up neatly.

Kel-Durin pointed towards them to calm the people down but this was a fatal mistake.

One of the 3rd rank Sages who had looked around the tents asked while frowning.

“...Why are there only 3rd and 4th rankers and none of you guys, the 1st rankers?”

“Mmm?”

“If it's so safe then why are there none of your bodies there.”

“That’s for the unification and synergy of the soul...”

Everyone made dumbfounded expressions at those words.

They were all about to die if they didn’t do this but for him to speak about unification and synergy of the soul.

If it was really safe and they could come back, there was no reason the 1st rankers shouldn’t sacrifice their souls to the Bluestone.

‘Treating us as tools?’

As rage filled up the expressions of the Sages.

Boooooom!

The final Satellite Fortress of the Sages got smashed apart and fell down onto the ground.

And Kel-Durin shouted out in a hurry.

“Hurry! There’s not much much! Seriously! If you’re that dissatisfied then the 1st rankers can do it too! Hurry!”

The 1st rankers being sacrificed was a bit of a shame but there’s nothing he could do.

Since the only ones who knew the souls got destroyed was him and Kan-Kun, the two of them.

Getting through this situation was the important part.

The Sages nodded at Kel-Durin’s expression of despair as they headed towards the gem.

.....

Rumble!

The vibrations around Hansoo were getting more and more intensified.

It couldn't be seen from the outside but the inner parts had long been bubbling due to the overwhelming amount of mana.

‘But...I’ve destroyed all the Satellite Fortresses before the time ran out.’

Hansoo shook his head towards the Sages heading towards the Gael-Tara with the Bluestone.

It was an useless act.

You couldn’t stop this beast, this beast which was created from the rage of Karmen, with the Bluestone from the beginning.

That was a useless death.

No, it was worse than death.

Since their souls would now get smashed apart and shredded into bits.

The pain they would feel then was nothing like anything they

would feel when they were alive.

It was actually used as a torture method in the Abyss.

‘For that powerful race to fall like this just because they messed with one person.’

But this wasn’t the time for that.

Hansoo sensed the heat that had come all the way up to the control room and focused on the control marble as well as the Fragments of Seven Souls.

‘Can you hear me?’

Ooooong.

Hansoo’s soul trembled as the message was sent to the clan lord who had the soul fragment.

And the Clan Lord, Khan, who had gained the Soul Fragment and the right to control the Satellite Fortresses gulped as he replied.

Though he had received the responsibilities, his abilities and authority was nowhere enough to handle the current situation.

The real leaders were the ones next to him.

'Yes I can hear. And...They're all around me as of now'

Hansoo checked that all the administrators of Unity were near Khan and then spoke while looking at the Gael-Tara.

'I am going to take this to the Silver Sea.'

'...They're asking why.'

Khan sent the message while blocking the shouts of the people around him.

Khan was confused as well.

The situation had been dealt with and the giant statue Hansoo was controlling would be of great help to them.

Why was he heading to the Silver Sea so suddenly?

Hansoo replied.

'This will blow up soon.'

It wasn't just a normal explosion.

A powerful explosion that would wipe away all vegetation and scorch a giant area around it.

It would be tens of thousands of times stronger than when he had blown apart the Mana Crystal Refinery in the past by crashing the Mana Engine into it.

There was a difference between creating a bomb out of an engine and blowing up a bomb.

And this thing's objective was just that.

It was a giant bomb created to blow apart everything without leaving behind a bit of grass and would activate once the Satellite Fortresses were eaten.

This thing was created to destroy all evidence of the Sages existing, it wouldn't even leave any space for the humans to live from now on if it blew up.

'So I'm going to take this into the Silver Sea.'

The final advice of Karmen.

The Silver Sea suppressed the mana crystals.

If it blew up in there then he would be able to decrease the explosive power to the minimum.

And he had to lead this there.

Since the moment he detached his hands from this thing, it will eat up the last remaining Satellite Fortress and go into the center of the Zone where its explosion would be the most effective.

As soon as he sent that message.

'She said that if you die uselessly like that then she'll kill you.'

'Enbi Arin?'

'...No. Miss Mihee.'

Well, Mihee wasn't the only one who said this.

If he lead a bomb there then the others might be able to live but how would Hansoo survive?

Khan continued to speak while hearing the shouts of the people around him.



# Chapter 215 : Reward (1)

---

Hansoo chuckled as he replied.

<Don't worry. I won't die like that. I'm saying this because I have a method of living.>

<...>

As Khan delivered the message, the people around him nodded reluctantly.

Thinking about it, that Hansoo guy somehow managed to survive the most dangerous situations.

Nobody would want to die if they were sane.

'He's probably doing it since he has a plan.'

Enbi Arin and the others reluctantly agreed as they exchanged glances.

Another message of Hansoo was sent towards Khan, the clan lord, who was watching over this scene.

<Everything has ended. You guys just finish up here.>

It wasn't hard to finish things up.

The Sage's Satellite Fortresses had all been smashed apart by Hansoo's hands and the remaining sages will die off from the Bluestone anyway.

To kill or to enslave would just be decided by others.

Before he could finish his thoughts.

Tototototoong!

He could feel tens of thousands of souls smashing into the surface of the Gael-Tara.

They had started to use the Bluestone in order to take it over.

Of course it didn't matter that much.

Hansoo, controlling the Gael-Tara, ignored these attacks and continued to speak.

<They thought that there would be data here but they were wrong. There's nothing here. Don't worry about it though. It seems the thing they told us about the Mana Pool surgery was all a lie anyway.>

The fact that the Satellite Fortresses could perform the surgery on them was a fact but the thing about it being dangerous for humans without being altered was a lie.

When Karmen made it at the beginning, he had set it up so it could work on any organism.

There wouldn't be much of a problem even if they just started the surgery without altering it right now.

<Farewell. Do a good job.>

Soon.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The Gael-Tara followed Hansoo's commands as it charged forward.

Towards the Silver Sea where it had been born.

.....

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

A 3 km tall organism leaped over mountains and crossed over the lands while causing earthquakes.

Inside the control room where the bubbling sounds and the sounds of the Gael-Tara running were resounding, Metiron continued to babble on as if he still had some strength to live.

“So you’re dying like this as well. Not bad. Though I can’t perform the revenge on my own but this isn’t bad.”

Hansoo chuckled at those words.

“It’s a good thing I kept you alive. It won’t be boring until I get to the Silver Sea.”.

Metiron chuckled.

He was going to die anyway.

As the consequences of him overloading his body from the Mana Jade still remained.

It was beyond something that could be healed through runes.

But this Hansoo guy will have the same fate as him anyway.

“Well. Thankfully the road to death won’t be boring for me as well. Since you’ll be coming with me. You know already, right? That you can’t escape from here anymore?”

Metiron then looked around.

The liquid metal was bubbling.

It looked soft but he wouldn't be able to go through it.

As the mana inside that thing will turn anybody trying to get through it into dust in an instant.

Going through that was basically the same as a normal human trying to walk through lava.

And to traverse it from all the way inside to the outside.

An impossible feat.

He had lied to his comrades.

In case they might get swept by the explosion along with him.

Metiron chuckled at Hansoo.

“What a saint. A hero of humankind.”

No matter how amazing this Hansoo guy was he wouldn't be able

to survive the explosion.

It was an explosion that could send a continent flying.

A human being wouldn't survive such a thing.

Hansoo chuckled back at Metiron.

“Isn't it the same for you? Since you protected this place with your life on the line for Clementine.”

“ ... ”

Metiron became quiet at Hansoo's words.

Hansoo looked at Metiron.

Others didn't but Hansoo knew.

One of 8 closest persons to Clementine.

Shin Taehee and the others of the eight Dark Lords didn't follow Clementine because they had been forced to.

They followed Clementine because they felt a common ground with her and respected her.

As these guys would already follow Clementine's orders to death even without the Soul Fragment.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the noisy Metiron shut his mouth, the control room of the Gael-Tara was just filled with running noises.

But as if Metiron didn't like this atmosphere or just didn't like Hansoo, he broke the silence and spoke again.

"But even so, if I was you then I would've sent an underling in here instead."

There were a lot of reasons why he sacrificed himself for Clementine but there was one distinct reason.

He believed that Clementine could do things he wouldn't be able to.

This was why he had stayed behind in the Yellow Zone with his life on the line.

But this Hansoo was different.

With regards to his group, Hansoo was like Clementine.

Somebody who was in charge of all the forces and the one who would deal with everything.

But for somebody like that to crawl into such a dangerous place.

He was sure.

That without Hansoo, all the other people wouldn't be able to do anything.

Even if they climb up they'll fight with each other and eventually disband.

With this thought, he could suddenly feel the amount of weight Hansoo was holding up.

‘Maybe...’

Metiron stopped for a moment but then shook his head.

He was starting to think useless things as his death was getting closer.

Clementine had much more ability and was much stronger than Hansoo anyway.



Hansoo nodded.

“Well. I agree with you to a certain degree. But since it has come to this, I can’t dodge it.”

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Hansoo mumbled as he felt the tremblings caused by Gael-Tara’s running.

The current situation was really dire.

Even he couldn’t escape it.

But because of the amount of weight on his shoulders, he could not die here.

Actually, even if he knew beforehand it would result like this things wouldn’t have changed.

Since this was by far the best choice he could have made.

Even if he hadn’t come, this thing would have become a bomb anyway.

Because Metiron had touched it.

Even if he knew this thing would self destruct later, he would've come in anyway.

There wasn't anybody to kill Metiron other than him and if that happened then everybody would have died by Metiron's hands.

Actually he could have come out right after he had met Karmen and this thing hadn't turned into a bomb yet.

As it hadn't heated up as much and he could have come out.

But he still wouldn't have come out.

Everybody would have died from the explosion radius if it was left alone.

This situation was something that was bound to happen.

Ever since he came up here, fought with the Higher Races and started to get tangled with the Sages and Metiron.

'No regrets.'

Boom! Clash! Clash!

Hansoo mumbled as the Gael-Tara slowly headed into the Silver Sea.

Chiiiiiiiik!

The Silver Sea cooled down the heated up Gael-Tara but it was not even close to being enough.

Deeper, he had to go in deeper.

Until this thing got submerged entirely.

Kiiiiiii!

It was so heated that the heat was now even reaching the control room.

The glass windows cracked and the floor started to bubble up.

Which meant that it was about to blow up.

Then.

Bubble bubble.

The Gael-Tara reached the depths of the Silver Sea and started to fall.

“Heeeup.”

After sensing it started to sink, Hansoo let go of the controls, breathed in and out and warmed up.

As the controls were released, the Gael-Tara struggled and try to go out but it was useless.

Though it was 3km tall, the Silver Sea was tremendously wide and deep.

Metiron chuckled as he saw this.

“What? Are you preparing for your death?”

Hansoo cracked his joints as he spoke.

“I just said I have no regrets, I never said I’ll die without any regrets.”

“What?”

“I need to try as much as I can.”

Silver Sea.

This was the tunnel to the next zone.

If one goes into the Silver Sea and drinks the water then they would move on to the next world.

Which meant that he could live.

Though he wouldn't be able to escape the explosion radius, he just needed to run away to the next Zone.

“So? You have a way of getting through it?”

This giant body, surrounded by the silver liquid, was a jail in itself.

Actually the body that had been heated up from the mana had cooled down a bit from the Silver Sea.

But then it was even more impossible to penetrate through the body since it had hardened up.

‘Impossible.’

He, who had fought with him, knew better than to think that.

And like his expectation.

Hansoo nodded.

He knew it was a long shot with his current abilities.

He had a powerful body and a lot of mana.

His artifacts were top class as well.

But he lacked skills.

The skills he had were Zero Numbering.

They were a top class skills anywhere.

But they weren't suited for the current situation.

The Pandemic Blade was too lacking to penetrate through this thing.

The Pandemic blade was set for mass murder and didn't really have a lot of destructive force.

Same for the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement.

Though the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement was a top class reinforcement, it couldn't beat an attack skill in terms of destructive force.

It was nowhere close actually.

As the fact that it was balanced actually meant that it didn't excel in any of the fields.

“Phew.”

Hansoo sensed his body having healed and then yelled into the air.

“Come out.”

The final card he believed in.

As Hansoo breathed in and out.

“Oh? I was watching comfortably.”

A translucent shadow trembled in the air and then a fairy appeared.

## Chapter 216 : Reward (2)

---

Hansoo frowned at this organism.

‘Creepy bastard.’

It didn’t come through the void.

It was just silently watching while it was hidden.

Well, this wasn’t the important part.

Hansoo took a glance at the control room which was bubbling intensely and then spoke to the fairy.

“I request a reward. I killed this.”

The fairy laughed.

“You didn’t kill it yet? It seems to still be alive?”

Hansoo replied expressionlessly.

“I killed it. Don’t joke around.”

Actually, if the fairy stayed true to those words then he couldn’t



really do anything.

Since it was indeed still alive.

But the fairies weren't things that would play around like that.

The fairy made a bored expression at Hansoo's words and then spoke while shrugging its shoulders.

“Fine. I admit it but... It'll be a monopoly this time around. Only you would get the benefit but... I'll give you a special treatment. Since you're our Hansoo. Hehe. Are you going to share it this time as well?”

Monopolizing a reward that would be given to hundreds of thousands of people didn't necessarily make the reward that much better.

Of course a tremendous reward will still be given but it was obvious what Hansoo should choose because of his objective.

Since a reward given to hundreds of thousands of people will be of a great help to him when he fights with the Abyss in the future.

But Hansoo shook his head.

“No, I need to live as well.”

If he shared such a thing in this situation then he wouldn't have a way to live.

He only needed one thing.

A powerful skill that could escape this current situation.

“Fine. Shall we gamble like last time or do you want something fixed? A defense skill? Movement skill?”

Hansoo shook his head.

A defense skill would be useless.

Since no defense skill would be able to withstand the energy that would explode out from this thing.

His body would get destroyed in an instant.

The same for movement skills as well.

Skills that could move through the void were extremely rare and for the distance he needed to travel, it would require a lot of mastery.

He had no way of raising the mastery of the skill within those short moments before the explosion.

So the answer was fixed.

Hansoo spoke towards the Fairy.

“Give me the higher skill of the Seven Strands Spear.”

Solo numbering 5, Seven Strands Spear.

A destructive weapon with the highest power.

According to what he knew, there was no attack skill that had a higher destructive force than the Seven Strands Spear.

A finishing move that gathered a tremendous amount of mana, that even Metiron had a struggle controlling despite the Mana Jade, compressed it into seven beams of light to fire.

But this wasn't enough.

He needed something stronger.

He needed an ultimate skill that could destroy this Gael-Tara surrounding him and create a hole in it.

Something that was beyond a solo numbering, something that people didn't know about yet.

The fairy didn't even falter as it smiled and spoke.

“Hmm...So you want a skill that could allow you to escape this situation right? A skill with that much destructive power?”

Hansoo nodded but made a slightly nervous expression.

The liquid metal surrounding him was numerous tens of times stronger than the Satellite Fortresses.

So much that it could withstand the ridiculous amount of pressure applied by the depths of the mercury-like Silver Sea without even breaking a bit.

He needed to penetrate hundreds of meters of this in an instant.

‘Would there really be a skill like this?’

Maybe within the Abyss but there wasn't anything that his body could withstand using as of now within Hansoo's experience and memories that fit that description.

But the Fairy surprisingly gave a positive answer.

“Oh. Nice. There's something just right for you. The thing I will give you is...The Nine Dragons Spear.”

“Nine Dragons Spear?”

Nine Dragons Spear.

He had never heard of such a skill before.

Even before Hansoo’s confusion dissipated.

The fairy spoke.

“A skill created from compiling things a martial artist in a certain Zone had comprehended right before death.”

“A martial artist...”

The fairy smiled at Hansoo’s mumbles and then spoke.

“He was really an amazing person. Since I’ve given it to you, do well with it ok? If it’s you Hansoo then... You’ll be fine. Well we’ll see each other soon if you survive anyway heheh! Be strong!”

The Fairy disappeared into the void leaving behind those words.

And Hansoo just laughed at the Fairy’s words.

‘Well. Giving it to me was indeed enough. Anyway it’s a bit suspicious.’

You’ll be fine...

It was suspicious that the fairy just left without many explanations but there was nothing he could do.

Since he couldn’t really do anything about it or anything.

And since the fairies didn’t scam anybody or anything, the effect of the skill would be quite marvelous.

## Rumble

Hansoo looked over his body for a moment, nodded and then walked out from the control room which was now boiling even on the inside.

The other locations had long been liquified from the heat.

‘I don’t have much time.’

He needed to get out of this place.

Whooosh

Hansoo readied the skill that had appeared within his body.

Nine Dragons Spear.

If the Quintuple Beam gathered five energies to attack and the Seven Strands Spear gathered the seven colored lights to attack then the Nine Dragons Spear went a step further.

Gather nine dragons onto the tip of the spear.

Then pierce the enemy.

An ultimate one-shot-one-kill-type skill.

As soon as the skill was activated.

Boooooooooom!

The Mana Jade went berserk and the mana started to get burned.

The mana resembled a dragon as it swept past his heart and rolled around his entire body, got sent out through his hand and then coiled up the Forked Lightning by following the skill's lead.



And.

The skill started to forcibly squeeze out the mana from Hansoo's body.

No, it wasn't just the mana.

'Damn.'

The skill got activated and dragons coiled around his body causing a change.

The whole structure of his body creaked as it started to bend.

Just to perform a single skill,

Crunch.

Squeak.

Uududuk.

Hansoo exclaimed as he felt the dragon rolling through the insides of his body and causing his entire body to change by twisting and breaking the structures forcibly.

'...This is a skill that puts both the body and one's mana under

strain.'

The Mana Jade felt pressured as a tremendous amount of mana was drained for every dragon and it started to pour out an even larger amount of mana by spinning insanely.

The silver liquid from the Body Enhancement Surgery and the Dragon Essence Blade tried their best to maintain the body that was creaking and twisting from breaking apart.

In order to support the vitality needed for the skill, the three hearts started to beat crazily and pumped.

All this energy, for just a single attack, got sucked into the dragon that was sweeping through his body.

He suddenly felt pain that was comparable to when the liquid metal inside his body hadn't settled after he received the Body Enhancement Surgery in the past.

'Kuhuk.'

Kiiiiing.

Two.

Three.

Every time a dragon appeared on Hansoo's spear the pressure being exerted on Hansoo's body multiplied.

Like being squeezed in from pressure from all around deep under the sea.

But the number of dragons on the Forked Lightning still continued to rise.

Uududududuk.

Surprisingly, the Forked Lightning started to crack and scream as if it couldn't handle the force.

'Eight...'

Hansoo clenched his teeth so hard that they almost cracked.

He could actually hear sounds of his body blowing apart and breaking.

Tuduk!

Craack!

Hansoo finally realized what the fairy had told him.

‘Maybe instead of being enlightened before death... That guy might’ve died while using it.’

A vicious skill that would kill the user if they couldn’t fulfill its strict requirements.

In an instant.

The final dragon grew out from the Mana Jade and headed towards the heart.

Claaangg!

The Mana Jade’s light was turned off.

It had been burnt out from overuse.

It might not even work for a while.

One of the three hearts, where the dragon had passed through, blew up.

Muscles ripped, veins blew up, bones cracked and joints were twisted.

The moment that final dragon flew out of his hand, which had swollen from the veins exploding, and climbed up the spear.

The nine dragons which had gathered at the tip chomped on each other, twisted and turned as they started to gather into one point.

Kooooouuuuuuuuu!

The dragons, which all had different colors, got sucked into one point and condensed.

Booooooooooom!

Hansoo's body exploded forward without his consent.

The body that was created and prepared for this single skill sent the spear forward.

Then.

Kooooouuuuuuu!

The black marble that had gathered upon the tip of the spear started to reach out forward.

Despite the attack flying at the speed of light, Metiron smirked as he looked at the tiny black dot that didn't make any noise.

‘What the hell is that kid doing.’

So much work for just that.

The moment the corner of Metiron's mouth rose up as he watched from the back.

The black dot touched the inner wall of the Gael-Tara that was bubbling up.

Then.

Boooooooooooooom!

“Kuhuuk!”

A sound that rang throughout the heavens and earth rang out.

No matter how strong that attack was, realistically it should only have made a hole the size of the black dot.

Along with the vibrations that caused the already hurt Metiron to cough out blood.

If it was explosive than only the area should've blown up.

But surprisingly, the black dot destroyed everything in its path and continued forward.

Like the air wall in front of a jet plane, leaving behind tens of meters of tunnel behind it.

Kwaaagagagagaak!

The liquid metal of the Gael-Tara, which was much tougher than the defense of the Satellite Fortresses, got smashed apart tens of meters wide and created a path.

Soon.

Claaang!

A long tunnel was created and the silvery liquid metal started to rush in.

With a tremendous amount of force.

‘He really did it...’

And he didn’t do it in a simple manner.

He smashed it apart as if it was tofu.

‘...If he had that then he would’ve been able to kill the Gael-Tara even from the outside.’

Metiron made a shocked expression and then sighed as he looked at the silver liquid that was rushing towards him.

This was the end of him.

This was kilometers under the sea.

The pressure of the liquid metals would be insane.

That guy would be able to live through the pressure and go onto the next Zone since his body was insanely strong but his already broken body wouldn't be able to.

By the time he got to the next Zone, he would've long become a corpse.

Metiron sighed as he looked at the silver liquid that was rushing towards him after taking his eyes off Hansoo and left behind his final words by activating the Fragment of Seven Souls.

<Taehee. Stay well. Say hi to the others for me. Please succeed.>

Soon.

Boooooom!



The Gael-Tara blew up as the energy from the explosion devoured Metiron's body which was already breaking apart from the silver liquids.

.....

Indigo Zone.

Eres made a smile as she looked at the female standing next to her.

Long, straight hair and muscular body were her distinct features.

Kangtae was drooling from behind while looking at her butt.

Eres took a glance at Kangtae as she asked the woman:

“This is it for the Indigo Zone as well. Anyways, why do you look so sad?”

The female made a weak smile as he replied.

“No it's nothing, I just feel a bit down today. What is there to enjoy in this world?”

Eres made a sad expression and then comforted the woman.

“Stay strong miss Taehee. We are here for you. We’re almost there.”

“...Thank you.”

“Heheh. Isn’t it because of that Clementine?”

The female, Shin Taehee, smiled as she looked at Eres next to her and Kangtae shouting from behind.

# Chapter 217 : Exodus (1)

---

“Phew...”

Hansoo got up as he felt the pain from his creaking body.

‘...I lived huh.’

He felt like he was going to die when he had been crushed by the silver liquid but it seems he had survived and came up.

Hansoo first checked his body before checking his surroundings.

And then sighed.

‘...It seems not even 10% of my original strength can be used.’

It wasn’t from the damage to his body.

It was from his body that had been altered for that single attack.

Of course a body for a single attack was not a good body for fighting.

Since it wasn’t like he was going to lay down after a single strike of his spear.

‘Houp!’

Hansoo breathed in deeply and then started to forcibly change the parts of his body.

With his hands and brute strength.

Uuudududuk.

Duduk.

Kaddduk.

He released the twisted muscles and refit the bones and joints.

He massaged his veins and used pressure to reconfigure his spine.

Hansoo quickly reconfigured his body to how it was he had used the Nine Dragons Spear.

Though the Racial Metamorphosis had run out, the Mana Jade, Body Enhancement Surgery and the Dragon Essence Blade quickly healed the damaged cells and injuries.

Crunch!

Hansoo hit his spine by his neck, reconfigured the twisted

structure and then nodded as he figured out the reason for all those twisted changes after moving his body around a bit.

And then smiled.

A skill for which one needed to even shift and twist their own bodies to use.

There was a huge risk.

But the reward was much larger.

The power.

Anybody at similar levels as him would die from just a single hit.

A single strike of ultimate destruction that cannot be dodged or blocked.

And even more so since Hansoo's original battle style revolved around a single deadly strike.

'This is good too.'

Whooosh!

A red powder flew out from the end of Hansoo's hand.

Integration.

The evolved form of the Pandemic Blade which he had been able to use by borrowing the strength of the Mana Engine in the past.

Though he wouldn't be able to use it in a huge area since the Mana Jade was a weaker version of the Mana Engine, the fact that he could use it like this was good enough.

Hansoo checked the status of his body and then activated the Fragment of Seven Souls.

He needed to check the situation below.

Oooooong.

The owner of the soul fragment in the Yellow Zone, Khan, started to speak.

<Are you okay? We were worried, it has already been three days.>

Hansoo made a bitter expression at those words.

For him to be unconscious for 3 days.

‘I really should be careful when I use it.’

Hansoo then started to ask about the situation:

<Any casualties?>

Khan nodded as he replied.

Everything had been taken care of completely below.

A tremendous shock wave was created from the explosion of the Gael-Tara, not much damage had come their way since it happened deep below the sea.

Though the seaside had become a mess, nobody lived there anyway so there were no issues.

10 Satellite Fortresses were more than enough for control.

<What about the Sages?>

Khan chuckled as he responded.

<That....The 1st rank ones got beaten up to death. By the 3rd and 4th ranked ones. It seems like they had forced them to sacrifice their lives by deceiving them. This was found out and it was all fruitless so...>

<The surviving ones?>

<They didn't have any power left so they accepted to stay in isolated areas. There were too many who had sacrificed their souls so...There aren't many that are alive. Maybe they'll be useful for repairing and maintenance of the Satellite Fortresses.>

This wasn't bad at all.

As Hansoo nodded.

Khan hesitated but then spoke.

<Uh...I don't think anybody will be able to come up for a while.>

According to what he had heard, humongous tornadoes and tsunamis were happening at the sea because of the explosion of the Gael-Tara.

They would die before they could even reach the depths to the next Zone if they went in there.

Hansoo nodded at those words and then nodded.

'Since it has come to this, I guess we can implant the Mana Pools with the Satellite Fortresses.'



It would've been much more convenient if he had a few more people with him but since it had come to this, there was nothing he could do.

The things above here would be easier for him to do alone anyway.

It was better to work alone, create a method of control and then call up the people as he saw from the example of Kaltus.

Since people whom he could not control were the same as walking disasters.

And even more so since their numbers had increased and every individual had gotten stronger.

‘I need to move out.’

His body had healed up quite a bit and it wasn't uncomfortable to move around anymore.

Hansoo got out of his seat and then sent a message to Khan.

<I'll head out so stay well.>

Khan laughed as he spoke.

<There are a lot of people who are upset here. There's nothing we can do. A few people here are quite envious of those who had crossed over.>

<Crossed over?>

Khan nodded.

<There weren't enough people when we checked the numbers... It seems a few people who were nearby when the Garmeia transformed into the Gael-Tara just jumped into the Silver Sea while looking for a place to hide.>

Hansoo nodded.

The Silver Sea was actually the best option to run away from that beast.

Since that thing couldn't chase beyond dimensions.

Khan spoke to Hansoo.

<Maybe they'll meet you if they're lucky. Stay strong.>

Khan saluted with sincerity and then stopped the communication.

‘I should move out.’

Green Zone.

This place was very special.

Hansoo looked around.

An entirely white space.

It looked similar to the private dimension of Karmen from before but it was different.

The moment Hansoo took a step.

Craaack.

The air split apart as a familiar face popped out.

“Ah, as I expected! You were alive! I believed in you! Heheheh. How was it? It’s an amazing skill right?”

“...”

Hansoo made a small sigh as he looked at the mess of his body.

The Fairy enjoyed Hansoo's reaction for a bit and then spoke as it spun around Hansoo.

“Now...The people ahead already departed. Only you need to go now. But before that...You need to listen to the important details.”

As the fairy said this.

A panel opened up in front of Hansoo.

[Please choose the location to Log in/out]

-Kasias village/Beltirum's mountain.

-Holy ground of Epos/Akainu's valley.

-Garimto village/Lake of Achilles.

...

“Well... I should explain right? Heehee.”

The fairy smiled and then started to explain about the details.

“The login area will tell you about the place where you start off.

If you press them a brief explanation will be shown.”

Hansoo pressed a location after hearing the Fairy’s words.

Chwaaaaak!

Simple information regarding the village came up.

There wasn’t much of a reason why Hansoo tried pressing it.

Only because this was the place Hansoo had gone to in the past.

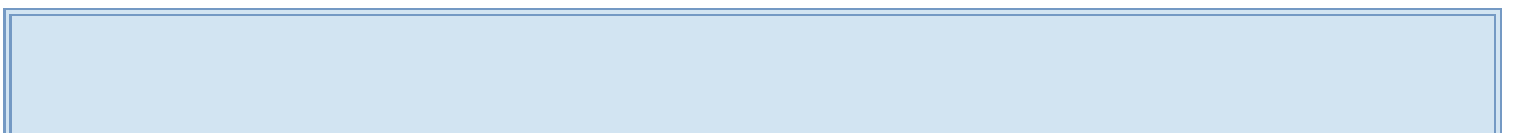
Of course he had to go to a different place this time.

The fairy spoke towards Hansoo who was expressionlessly flipping through the villages.

“The logout area would be determined by the login area. The logout areas are simple. It tells you how far you need to go until the next zone. Let’s see...Where to go? You will go to...”

As the Fairy played around, Hansoo mumbled quietly.

‘Exodus.’



<Exodus>

The Green Zone's nickname.

A realistic game.

A game-like reality.

The name of the virtual reality game that was actually being hosted in a world that was created by the god.

‘It’s probably similar to modern society.’

Even without having been there, one could determine a few things about this place.

A world where the virtual reality, <Exodus>, that god had created was being run on.

The residents of that world didn’t realize that god had created this game and enjoyed an alternative life after logging in.

It was the most famous game in that place.

The fairy’s explanations started to come into Hansoo’s ear.

“Well. Just think of it as a game and enjoy it. You played a lot of games right? Thankfully your systems are similar to this game. There are skills and items. You just need to continue what you were doing. Enjoy it like the residents there.”

‘It's the same you say?’

Hansoo scoffed.

It was indeed similar.

The players could obtain artifacts, learn skills and increase masteries like them.

There were just a few core differences.

The first one being the logging in and out.

The players could log in and out whenever they wanted.

Like a game.

But he and the others were different.

Login.

After coming in here from the Yellow Zone.

Logout.

Going into the Blue Zone's entrance after coming out of the Green Zone.

Towards the exit corresponding to the entrance.

Of course the entrance and the exit wouldn't be close to each other.

If one picked a wrong starting point here then they would taste true hell.

The difficulties were similar at the entrances but the difficulties of the exit zones were like the difference between heaven and earth.

The true meaning of <Exodus>, <The great escape>, was very befitting.

And the second thing.

The Fairy continued to speak.

“The Exodus is a really well-made game so there are no bugs.



Well, that's obvious. Look who made it. Hehe. But as the players observed, there is actually a strange bug."

Players would receive a small penalty or a larger one depending on the situation at death.

But there was a common result.

They revived.

They all died differently but they would all eventually revive.

But the players of Exodus found something strange.

9 years ago according to the time of this place, after the 4th patch.

There were people who didn't revive when they were killed and instead dropped every single artifact they had.

And these guys dropped such large amounts of experience, finding people like this between the players was basically a very lucky break.

The people were curious so they asked their company, Exodus.

Why this was happening.

The company's response was simple.

<They're bug players. People who login illegally. There wouldn't be an issue to kill them on sight. Just think of it as a part of the game.>

Everyone rejoiced.

There was nothing to lose.

PK was limited to a large degree but there were no penalties for killing these guys and they were even rewarded with large amounts of experience and artifacts.

There were actually people who found out the characteristics of bug players and chased these guys around.

This was what the residents of that world knew them as.

And this was the cruel reality for them.

They were players.

And...

He was a bug player.

“You.. Get what I mean right? You are now a walking treasure chest. Mister bug player. Shall we start?”

The fairy spoke while giggling.

## Chapter 218 : Exodus (2)

---

Hansoo nodded at the words of the fairy and then started to look over the login areas.

Hundreds of login areas came up in the glossary with their pros and cons but Hansoo had already chosen where he was going to go.

There was only one place for him to go with his objective.

‘Next to the Spirit Land.’

The difficulties of the login areas were all similar.

No matter where one went, they will see similar-leveled players and beasts, the Infrass.

But there were two main differences.

The first was the logout area.

The difficulties of login areas were similar but those of the logout zones were drastically different.

You might be able to get through within a year if you're lucky but if you are unlucky then it might even take 5 years.

‘Well. Such a thing doesn’t matter.’

This would be important to normal people but to Hansoo, it didn’t really matter.

He wasn’t going to go out of this place until he finished what he needed to anyway.

Quest.

Hansoo spoke towards the Fairy.

“I chose the Bellum War Fortress as my starting point.”

“Oh my!”

Bellum War Fortress.

A battle fortress located in the border area between the Korin Kingdom and the Keil Kingdom.

Though it was a war fortress, it hasn’t been used since a hundred years ago when the 3rd kingdom war had happened.

Of course this wasn’t the reason why the fairy whistled.

The fairy smiled.

“Just saying, there are people there who have to live in the Green Zone for the rest of their lives without being able to get out.”

The location which was linked to the most difficult logout area of the 512 starting points.

It was so hard that if you started alone then you could never finish it.

So breaking through it in a group of 6 was the answer but the amount of people sent up by the Dark Lord, Metiron, was so low that the ones who had come in here earlier could not do anything and were just strapped within the Green Zone.

But Hansoo nodded.

This wasn't the important thing.

The quest he needed to do in this place was much more important.

Since the quest would be the starting point of the incident that would cause the 6th patch for the players and the 6th great change for the NPCs.

Instead of wasting time by starting from far away locations, it was easier to just start here.

“Bellum War Fortress.”

The fairy smiled and spoke.

“Ok fine. I wish you luck. The guys ahead are lucky aren’t they. They will be able to meet Hansoo.”

“Hmm.”

The fairy continued to Hansoo.

“You see, the ones ahead went to the Bellum War Fortress as well. There’s a lot of enticing things about this place from the outside.”

The Bellum War Fortress was actually quite famous to the real players of <Exodus>.

There were already a lot of people due to it being the border area and there were all sorts of good quests overflowing in the <Spirit Land> nearby.

If you wanted to grow your strength or had confidence in your skills then choosing the Bellum War Fortress wasn’t weird.

Since they were the elites of the elites who had followed Hansoo in order to kill Metiron.

‘We will meet once the opportunity comes.’



Whooosh

Hansoo started to get surrounded by light.

The symbol of login.

The fairy left behind a few final words at Hansoo.

“Oh the most important thing! You know about this whole thing being a secret right? If you tell others that you are from another world or get found out...”

The fairy giggled as it drew a line over its neck with its thumb.

As Hansoo nodded.

Paaat!

Hansoo’s entire body disappeared with the light.

.....

Paaat!

The location where Hansoo had appeared from the light was in the middle of a city.

A location where countless people and NPCs were at.

“Hey! Anybody want to go to the Kelhem dungeon? 15-man party!”

“Recruiting clan members for the Auto Clan!”

“A grade spirit stone! Buying A grade spirit stones! If it’s lightning affinity then I’m willing to add extra gold!”

Loud and robust shouts could be heard from all around.

This place was full of the human scent unlike the previous three worlds.

‘It’s been a while.’

Hansoo looked around as he mumbled.

Though they were avatars unlike himself, the amount of people one could meet here was not even comparable to the other Zones.

He didn’t know what the planet looked like but the world where the <Exodus> was being played at from was the host of almost 70 billion people.

And the Exodus was the most played game in such a world to both females and males.

The people online had to be counted in hundreds of millions and that amount grows boundless once the NPCs that lived in this world previously are included.

A huge world and numbers that fit it.

‘So it’s a virtual reality created by the god himself.’

Though they spread out into a huge area, the population density was still very high.

So nobody would really care even if he logged in here.

Since countless people were logging in around him anyway.

‘The difference is that I cannot logout whenever I want.’

They can leave whenever they want but he could not.

Like an NPC.

Hansoo glanced at the players in the nearby stores and the NPCs who were selling items to these players and then walked as he thought about his objective.

The quest that would start the 6th Great Change.

<Lord of the deep underground.>

The giant quest that would shake the game Exodus itself would start at this place, the Bellum War Fortress.

The hidden piece, that nobody had found yet would start all of this.

Originally, it should start from the discovery of some random player a year from now but he didn't have the time to wait for such a thing.

‘I will start the 6th Great Change.’

To those who could revive, the war against the beasts was not dangerous but more like an opportunity.

But that was different for the NPCs, the residents of this place.

And the Bug-Players like himself were in the same situation.

‘My, I’ve become dull after being away for so long.’

Hansoo purposely raised the corners of his mouth and made a

happy expression.

The passing players made strange expressions at Hansoo but then just walked past him.

The first rule to not get caught.

Do not make a nervous expression.

Especially the expression which one made when their life was in danger.

Since the players wouldn't do so.

Of course one wouldn't get caught from that one thing but it was good to be cautious about every detail.

'It'll be annoying if I get caught.'

Their levels were around 201 when they entered this location.

It wasn't proportional to their strength but related to their rune numbers.

201 when their runes were closer to 0.

250 when it was filled.

And level 250 was like the level cap for this place, the Exodus.

A few NPCs went beyond this and got even stronger but it was the cap for the players.

This is why he could win.

Even if his level was low and his opponent was at the maximum level, they wouldn't be able to beat him.

But there were a few very annoying ones in these lands.

'Damned bastards.'

Hansoo thought of the bug players that would be living in various places within this world.

Though Metiron's people thought that they only let through their people but they weren't the only ones in this Green Zone.

There were countless adventurers who had come up along with Eres and Keldian before them and there were also those who crossed through the Great Jungle instead of the Green Road.

Since there were so many humans, they couldn't ignore the amount of people who rushed in through the gaps.

Maybe if there weren't any bug players things would be calm but the bug players were constantly caught in the eyes of these players.

And the result of this.

Since there was game, professional hunters were born.

The players before just looked at him to see if he was an NPC or a player but a few were different.

Guys who only hunted bug players.

<Bug Killer>

Their title was lame but they were very accurate and precise.

‘They’ll probably be around here. I wonder if the guys who had come here before got caught already.’

Hansoo shook his head.

.....

“Aaaak! Noo! If I die...! Please! Pleeeaaasee!”

Kwaddddk.

A player twisted the blade towards the screaming person as he smiled.

“Well. Of course. Since a character created through the bug will have their items erased, how sad.”

Crunch!

As the player, [Flame Warrior-V], sliced with his blade, the head was cut and blood spurted out.

[Flame Warrior-V] looked at this scene and frowned.

‘Tsk. 19+ settings is good but it’s too realistic.’

But if you played below this then there wasn’t any fun.

Since gold powders pouring out when one was stabbed wasn’t really fun.

The man spat at the corpse in order to get rid of the dirty feeling as he checked with the people around him.

“How many died?”



One of man who was drinking a healing potion shrugged as he replied.

“13 out of 50.”

“Crazy bastards. Powerful as hell. Damn. We’re going to lose a lot of money from the revival tags.”

The man mumbled as he looked at the corpse on the ground.

Their characters got deleted when they died so they always retaliated with all they had.

Their controls were so good that they were strong as hell as well.

To the point of these guys giving a feeling that they didn’t live in the real world.

Extremely detailed movements unlike them who used skills awkwardly and swung their weapons weakly.

‘They probably use hacks or something.’

The man mumbled.

For them to use such a dirty method in a fair game.

This is why they needed to bring justice by killing them.

Against these damned bastards.

‘Well. It’s good to get some harvest along the way as well.’

The man laughed as he looked at the Artifacts on the ground.

They dropped all their artifacts and even gave a huge amount of experience.

A profit even after they buy revival tags and spread it around everyone.

This is why they couldn’t give up being Bug-Killers.

‘I hope an even stronger one comes around.’

The man touched the artifact on his hand as he mumbled.

It was better the stronger they were.

Since they had stronger and rarer items.

The man finished his thoughts as he shouted.

“Yo! Chase the ones from before! We can rest for a while after today!”

This was a game.

And since they paid for it, they had the rights to enjoy it.

As freely as they can.

‘I’ll kill them all. The damned bug players’

This was justice.

The man smiled as he looked at the Bellum War Fortress before him.

# Chapter 219 : Exodus (3)

---

Hansoo looked around as he headed towards the east in the middle of the city.

There was the flaming lands in the south and the frozen tundra to the north.

Countless players were heading in four directions of north, east, west and south from the center of the fortress.

This location, a location between the kingdoms in the east and west, had become an extremely popular place for those who were above level 200 after the 5th patch.

Since all four locations had good things.

Especially the south and the north locations were the reason why this Bellum War Fortress was a popular place.

<Spirit Land>

The alpha and omega of this Bellum War Fortress.

The final location of the hundreds of thousands of players coming to this place through the warp gate in the city square.

‘But... Not yet.’

Hansoo glanced at the players going to the north and south noisily as he ignored them and continued his way.

Towards the east.

There was an extremely important dungeon outside the War Fortress in the east.

The dungeon that would become the starting point for the road towards the Spirit Land.

‘The great maze of the Ains.’

Hansoo mumbled towards the strange looking mountain that had hundreds of entrances holed into it.

<Ain>

A race that had a slightly different form from the humans.

Actually the players couldn't even meet this race before the 5th patch.

They could only read about them, they had no idea where these things were.

But once the racial quest, <Forgotten race, Ain's traces.>, was completed they had been able to interact with them after the Great Maze where they were hiding opened up.

At first everybody scoffed.

For just a single Great Maze to have opened despite the size of the quest.

Of course nobody thought this way anymore.

The amount of people gathered around it proved it.

In the vast field in front of him, countless amount of people set up camp there.

These were people who had gathered in order to enter into the giant mountain, <The Great Maze of the Ains>.

As Hansoo approached them, he could hear their loud shouts.

“Gathering one more person for the maze attack squad! We’re planning to share the protection elixirs that come out of the Ains equally!”

“Searching for a party in order to gather protection elixirs! People who have high mana resistances! We welcome any master-tier players!”

Protection elixir.

The item that these guys were shouting about was the core item from this Great Maze.

The item which allowed people to enter the <Spirit Land> where they could not before.

Before the 5th patch.

The Spirit Land was a place that nobody could enter.

It wasn't because the map wasn't built or the game company locked it up.

Such a thing wouldn't happen in this game, <Exodus>, where freedom and game completion was well known.

There was a simple reason.

They died the moment they stepped in.

It wasn't because there were tremendously powerful beasts inside.

It was worse.

The huge amount of DoT damage they received the moment they stepped inside it.

As soon as they stepped into the blazing and frozen land, their health which could even tank against boss-level monsters got shredded apart.

Even level 250 master level players would lose all their health and die after only a few moments.

They would die even before seeing anything.

But the story changed as the Great Maze opened up.

As the <Great Maze of the Ains> opened up and the special liquid that could be obtained inside, the <Protection Elixir>, came to be known, it was learned that it provided a high amount of resistance to the two zones and so the players were able to step into the Spirit Land where nobody could before.

Of course the price of the Protection Elixir which could be obtained from inside the maze rose to the heavens as well.



Everybody who was gathered here had gathered for the Protection Elixir.

One of the players who was passing by Hansoo chewed the Atollen gum, which was sold around here, and mumbled.

“Fuck. Nobody’s coming around. Only weaklings are walking around.

The player looked at the party members approaching him as he frowned.

It had been over 20 years since the game Exodus had opened up.

Though leveling was hard, due to how long the game had been out there were plenty of level 200 players.

Of course there should be countless people who could enter the maze which had the level limit of 200 but it was hard to find useful party members.

This was because in this game, Exodus, differences between individual were very prominent.

Every level 200 weren’t the same from each other.

Depending on their skills, artifact and control the differences of battle power would be huge.

To the point of a seasoned level 250 master player being able to beat numerous tens of beginner master players.

The difficulty of the newly opened Great Maze was extremely high and there were locations where there was a limit to how many people could enter.

And even more so in places where one can get precious items.

He had started to curse as he only saw weaklings when filling his party with only elites wouldn't be enough.

Hansoo nodded as he heard the player's complaint.

'I need to create a party.'

In a normal game, every beast was below the level of a player.

But it was different for this place.

You would get destroyed if you fought alone due to the power of the beasts.

With the unfriendly game system, solo playing would be countless times slower than party playing.

So the game Exodus was better the more you bunched up.

Even more so if the average strength of the party members were high.

The number of people in each party here was around 30 to 50.

This is where most of the new players of Exodus make their mistakes.

Instead of party playing, staying in a group with just the adventurers who had come with them.

It was better to fill up your party as much as possible despite not being able to trust somebody who wasn't serious about their work.

Of course the chances of their betrayal once a precious artifact or a reward came along existed but this place wasn't a place where you were done for once you got killed.

Since one needed to be wary of being revenged by those they had betrayed after they revived so not many people acted like that.

So people grouped around in 40 or 50 players groups but of course they would get caught in the eye if they roamed around the maze or hunting grounds in groups of 10 or 15.

Even more so if they ran around solo because they were

confident.

This was how the bug killers filtered bug players out.

‘Exodus isn’t such an easy game.’

Hansoo mumbled.

Those who can survive and continue at a decent pace alone or in small groups were the best of the best out of the master players.

And because these players had played the game for so long and were famous, they could be found with a simple search.

If no information came up despite them moving around in small groups and if they were also weak, they would become targets of the bug killers and these bug killers would likely kill them on the spot.

The chances were half and half but if they found them then it was amazing.

Illegal PK’s penalties were high but even if they compensate the dead players after receiving the penalties, it was still a profit in the end.

‘This is why...I need to go into the maze in a party.’

He wasn't going into the Great Maze for the Protection Elixir but there was no need to get caught in the eyes of others by acting alone before he got to a certain point.

He would eventually get caught if he acted out properly but there wouldn't be a case where he would get held down until then.

Hansoo found a decent party as he looked around.

People who were well off in the standards of Exodus and had nice Artifacts as well.

He could tell with just a single glance since he had spent quite a time within this place in the past.

Hansoo thought of the adventurers who had come here previously as he was about to join them.

Friends who had come to the Bellum War Fortress.

'It'd be nice if they were with me.'

Hansoo clicked his tongue.

If he was going to party play, it was better to be with adventurers than players.

The chances of being caught would be much lower and their attitudes and habits were different from the players since they could die.

And since they were of the elite squad that Ekidu had hand picked herself, they would have quite nice personalities as well.

Hansoo shook his head as he looked at the countless people around him.

‘Mmm....Finding them here is too much.’

There were at least a few hundred thousand people in this War Fortress.

And he didn’t even know their faces, he could not find them and hide the fact he was an adventurer at the same time.

‘I’ll move out first.’

Hansoo finished his thoughts and headed towards the party members he had chosen previously.

.....

“Maze 5th-level hunting ground. One person please.”

Hansoo spoke towards the male, the party leader, in his mid 30s in front of him.

With a respectful tone since his settings were in mid 20s.

The party leader [Hikikomaria] pondered as he looked at Hansoo.

‘What a common name. For him to choose such a name.’

In his opinion, [Hansoo] was the second most common name after [Chulsoo].

‘Anyways...What we need is two.’

Along with the male who had just come, the total amount of people who wanted to join were 3.

The man who had come first mumbled unhappily as he looked at Hikikomaria who was pondering while looking at the 2 males and 1 female in front of him.

“Isn’t it first come first serve? I came first.”

Hikikomaria scoffed.

“No, it is by personal strength. The 5th level isn’t an easy place.”

The Great Maze of the Ains.

Nobody had seen the end of this place.

The difficulty was indeed high but most of the people who had gathered here came for the Protection Elixir.

Whether they used it for themselves or sold them during when the prices rose to the heavens, the Protection Elixir was one of the highest priced items one could get from the maze.

Which meant that there was no reason to go into the depths of the maze and face the dangers.

Somebody might ask.

Why would one go into the 5th floor when the Protection Elixir came out on the 1st floor?

There was a reason for everything.

The 1st level gave out level 1 Protection Elixirs and the 5th level gave out level 5 Protection Elixirs.

The Protection Elixirs that came out became better the deeper one went in.



Protection Elixirs that decreased more DoT damages and lasted longer.

Fighting the powerful beasts was stressful enough, keeping check on the DoT damage would get one pissed.

This was why the players who were closer to 250 or were at that level look for the higher level Protection Elixirs in the depths.

Of course the Protection Elixir that would get them the most profit as of now from the player's calculations was the level 5 Protection Elixir.

Which meant that although it would be better to go in deeper, there was no need to since it was too dangerous.

‘Well, the 5th level isn’t easy as well. That damned guy, why does he have to have overnight shift today?.’

Hikikomaria made an annoyed expression as he mumbled.

Since there was a limit of 50 people, the ones who he could let in had to be the stronger ones.

He couldn’t allow weaklings to enter.

So the female of the three suddenly spoke.

“Let’s just have a quick test. Circle Formation. It doesn’t seem like you’re looking for a healer or a support... This should be enough right?”

This was the best test for determining those who would be in the attack position.

The man made a slightly annoyed expression at the female’s words and then looked at Hansoo.

There wouldn’t even be a need to get tested if that guy hadn’t come but things had gotten annoying.

The man spoke.

“Isn’t experience the most important thing? I don’t know about others but I have been to the 5th floor before.”

The man then fumbled around his pockets to lift up his wrist.

A clear symbol.

A few people whistled as they looked at that symbol.

Stamp.

The curse of the Ains who live from the 5th floor and upwards.

Once one collided with the Ains in order to gather the Protection Elixir and kill them, they leave behind a line of curse as they fell.

Once this happened a small symbol will appear on their wrist.

A symbol saying that they had gotten the curse of the Ains.

This couldn't be erased and nobody erased it anyway.

It had no effect and it was more like a symbol.

That they had been to the 5th level of the maze.

The fact that they killed an Ain and gotten the curse meant that they had been to the 5th level at least once.

The man touched the symbol and looked at the people around him as he spoke.

“I went with those bug-killer friends before. They are probably near here right now. If they hadn't found some trash bug players then we would've long been in there.”

The man showed them the symbol and spoke with a smile.

# Chapter 220 : The Great Maze Of The Ains (1)

---

“Hmm.”

As Hikikomaria's expression changed from the look of the symbol, the female also raised her wrist while scoffing at the man.

Showing a symbol that had an even deeper in color.

“Does this actually mean anything? The thing that is important is after we get into the 5th floor. Also there have been a lot of fakers recently. Getting into a party with their stamps and then becoming baggage. And how do we know that you haven't been abandoned by the bug killers because you were trash?”

“... Aren't your words a bit too harsh?”

As the man growled the female only shrugged her shoulders and continued to speak.

“I'm just saying because my last party got massacred because of it and we actually were at a loss. I wish to check the skill levels, if not then I'll just leave instead.”

Meaning that she wouldn't join a party where they don't even check one's powers.

If a random weakling triggered a trap in the maze then things

could get really tiresome.

Hikikomaria pondered at the female's words for a moment and then spoke.

“No, no. Let's get this show on the road.”

“Fucking hell...”

The man grumbled as he pulled out his sword.

A basic item with a level requirement of 205.

He felt despair while looking at the shining weapons of those around him but there was nothing he could do.

Since he had used all his gold due to the expensive cost of the warp gates.

Normally one would need to upgrade their items in order to go to a higher level zone but he had no money for such a thing.

‘Fuck. I need to earn money quickly and change my items. That bitch is just too meticulous.’

He didn't even have enough time to hunt but these guys were holding him down.

But he couldn't make a ruckus here.

Since he could waste even more time.

A player would be treated very well in areas where they were lacking but the War Fortress was one of the hottest places.

A region where there were swarms of players.

Of course they would only prefer those who had better personalities and were stronger.

‘Let's calm down for now.’

The man hardened his expression and mumbled.

The Great Maze of the Ains was a place worthy of him to back off like this.

Since he would be able to gain plenty of money for him items if he gained a large amount of the level 5 Protection Elixirs.

And in reality, he had been lucky enough to participate in the maze once which allowed him to change his armor to a better one.

‘It's a real jackpot.’

He needed to calm down.

As the man changed his armor and nodded, Hikikomaria spoke towards the three.

“Let’s start then.”

Then 12 party members surrounded the three.

With their individual weapons and skills.

The moment the people formed a circle.

Hikikomaria shouted.

“The time limit is 45 seconds. Quickly. We will take two people, excluding the first one to be taken out.”

Then.

Papapapapak.

The surrounding 12 people started to pour out their assaults.

Artifacts, skills and levels were all important.

But these were all secondary.

Since a bit of luck or connections can improve all of this.

Which meant that there was only one thing that was truly important.

It was how much one could squeeze this out and convert it into battle strength.

Totototoong!

Boooboom!

Of course since it was a test, they didn't attack to kill.

But even then, one might be taken out if they dropped their guards.

How fast and well one could react to the skills that were flying towards them.

This was very important in Exodus where surprise attacks constantly flew towards them.

Since there were a lot of cases where people died to surprise



attacks from the beasts in a short amount of time.

Hikikomaria looked towards the three in the middle who were dealing with the attacks with a cold expression.

‘Hmm.’

Hikikomaria raised his hands after about 10 seconds.

“Stop.”

The man who had been blocking attacks madly looked around.

‘Did I succeed?’

The man, [EclipticMania], smiled towards the two who had been hurt quite a lot.

Since he had a lot less injuries compared to the two.

But an unexpected answer came out from Hikikomaria’s mouth.

“The two over there will come with us. EclipticMania, sorry but maybe next time.”

“Huh? Why?”

The man asked in shock.

He had been in a Circle Formation a few times already and knew the standards changed a bit depending on the hunting ground but most of them were based on how well one could block the attacks.

And he, who had a good reaction speed, always passed the test.

As the man who had done the best out of the three asked Hikikomaria, he just shook his head and answered.

“You waste too much. You should trust in the healers, take the damage that you can and filter what you can dodge and block. If you continue like that then you would die off on the first floor.”

Blocking it all wasn't the important part.

Since that was impossible.

One needed to save mana from blocking useless attacks and only focus on the fatal ones.

Which meant that one needed experience to determine all of this in addition to just reaction speed.

‘That guy... Seems to have come from a laid back place. For even such weaklings to have come here...’

Hikikomaria shook his head while he looked at EclipticMania.

Though one could raise one's level and set up their artifacts in weaker areas, they wouldn't be able to be part of the most important things.

Like this.

That guy probably heard about this place and came here through the warp gate but soon he will find out the cruel reality.

On the other hand, the two others were amazing.

‘Especially that Hansoo guy. His skills are...’

Hikikomaria mumbled with a shocked expression.

It was not easy to judge every single skill flying towards them from all directions.

Since there were just too many of them.

But that man had sorted through all those and even filtered them in mid-air with the spear, which was a weapon many regarded as being difficult to use.

‘He wouldn’t hold us back with that level at least. Hmm, should I try recruiting him into Spair?’

He didn’t know for sure since they hadn’t faced real battles together but the possibility still existed.

Hikikomaria whistled and then spoke with a happy expression while pointing at the entrance of the giant mountain in the distance.

“Let’s start right away. We will head in. We’ll resupply at the village on the 1st floor.”

.....

Rumble

A giant mountain.

A large stone door around 5m diameter made strange grinding noises as it opened up.

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the door, which had many symbols engraved upon it, that seemed like it had been created to trap something.

‘This is the start.’

The 1st floor was the most important.

Since the hidden piece was on the first floor.

Everything would start from here.

Hikikomaria chuckled at Hansoo who had been gazing at the hole and then spoke to him.

“Don’t worry so much. The first floor isn’t much. It doesn’t seem like you have a symbol on your wrist, is it your first time at the maze then? Where did you play around mainly?”

With this much strength, he should’ve been quite famous in that

area.

Though he himself didn't know the tens of thousands of areas.

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then spoke.

"I was mainly around the Arrancar Zone."

"Oh?"

Hikokomaria was shocked.

Arrancar Zone.

He knew.

It wasn't far away from here and was quite famous.

'One of the few places that a player became a suzerain of.'

While one continued along their quests, they would sometimes receive a quest related to a kingdom or a country.

And when they perform these quests they are able to gain achievement points.

Depending on achievement points these individuals can receive the rights over a certain amount of land within that country and become a suzerain.

‘I heard that it was quite a quiet place. He came from such a boring place huh.’

Normally the people in their 20s would search for areas with harsh quests.

But the Arrancar Zone was filled with only decent quests and there were no secrets to be found so it was a place famous for people like him who were in their 30s and 40s to hunt leisurely.

Which meant that it was a place with low popularity.

And though the Arrancar Zone was close by, it was over the border and in the Korin Kingdom.

‘He should be penniless if he just came over then.’

Though they didn’t take money even if you moved between countries, you couldn’t use money from the previous country in the new one.

And since they didn’t exchange currencies, it was really maddening.

This meant that one would need to earn money from the beginning if they changed countries, this was why there weren't many who moved between countries.

Most played around in that kingdom or that country.

This was something the separate powers had set up in order to prevent the players of their side becoming part of the strength of their enemy.

‘Well. There are a lot of people like this. There's a lot to earn here.’

If you were confident in your skills then it wasn't a bad choice to come over to this place either.

Since this place, the War Fortress, was the hottest place in the game currently.

Hikikomaria shrugged and asked while smiling.

“Why did you play around there? I thought you'd come from a more intense place.”

They had plenty of time to talk until they reached the village on the 1st level anyway.

Hikikomaria thought that he had come from an area filled with



military quests due to his skills.

Hansoo replied while laughing.

“It’s just a place I have fond memories of.”

‘I indeed have fond memories.’

He mumbled as he thought back to the past.

.....

A giant city where millions of people came and left.

The War Fortress showed off its tremendous amount of people as well as its humongous size.

Of course there were places that were not repaired yet and places that nobody inhabited.

And a few people were gathered in the rundown ruins at the corner of this War Fortress.

These 15 or so people’s expressions were filled with fatigue.

No, it wasn’t just their faces that was the problem.

They sighed in exhaustion as they healed the numerous injuries on each other's bodies.

At that moment.

Rustle.

A noise came from the outside of the destroyed ruins which they had covered with the straws.

The people inside flinched.

‘Fucking bastards. Did they come here already...No. How did they figure us out.!’

The leader, Christopher, spat out and tensed up as he thought of the guy who attacked him for no reason.

As Christopher tightly clenched the sword in his hand.

A familiar voice could be heard.

“It’s me! Me! I’m coming in!”

“Phew...”

The others sighed in relief and an agile female rushed inside.

Christopher frowned as he looked at the female.

“...Why are you alone? Where’s Gahee?”

The female clenched her teeth and spoke through them.

“I think he got caught.”

“Fucking bastards!”

Christopher forgot that he was hiding and cursed out.

Though it was a game for those guys, this was a problem of survival for them.

For them to die to people who were charging at them because it was just a game!

He at least understood those he had fought against until now, this was even worse than a useless death.

The female who had gone out for scouting, Ellenoia, made a depressed expression while looking at Christopher.

Since she didn’t feel any better than him.

But Ellenoia suddenly made an excited expression as she spoke towards Christopher.

“I still have good news though.”

“...What is it?”

“While I was looking at the plaza...I saw him. Kang Hansoo.”

“What? Are you sure?”

Ellenoia nodded.

“How could I forgot his physique and his artifacts. After all, we all saw him. I’m sure.”

She wouldn't be able to forget even if she wanted to.

The look of the man who had jumped into the Gael-Tara's body while swinging his spear.

Christopher made a shocked expression at Ellenoia's words.

‘Did he kill that thing and come up? Or did he also run away?’

Christopher pondered as he thought of Hansoo who had gone into the giant body of the Gael-Tara.

He then spoke.

“Let’s join up with him.”

“Would it be different for him?”

This wasn’t a problem of strength.

Since their enemies didn’t die.

Hansoo might be able to kill the bug-killers but what about afterwards?

More would charge at them like a swarm of bees.

Towards Hansoo.

As Ellenoia asked worryingly, Christopher just shook his head.

“I feel as if this guy can even survive in hell.”

Ellenoia subconsciously nodded at Christopher’s words but then asked with a worried expression.

“What if... He denies us?”

How great would it be if he accepted them because they went to him.

Christopher shook his head at Ellenoia's worries and then spoke.

“Forget about freeloading. I heard that he was lacking in terms of searching and movement skills. There would be something we can help him out with.”

‘And...We don't have much of a choice.’

At this rate they would slowly get driven into a corner and die.

This wasn't the best choice but a choice made in order to escape from the worst situation.

‘Fuck. How is that guy planning to deal with this.’

Even ten of them could barely hide here.

If hundreds of thousands of adventurers came here then a great massacre would begin.

Since the players didn't die and there were many more of them

than themselves.

Christopher realized that this was not something he should be worried about right now and prepared to go out.

In order to find traces of Hansoo.

# Chapter 221 : The Great Maze Of The Ains (2)

---

The great maze.

A dungeon where countless players had lost their lives due to its complex structure and traps during the first moments of its opening.

But Hansoo and his party members were proceeding through the 1st floor without any delays.

Though the maze split up into numerous parts on multiple occasions, Hikikomaria was moving forward as if this was his house and he was familiar with it.

And the party members behind followed him as if this was normal.

Soon.

Mumble mumble.

A giant area appeared before their eyes.

A giant area full of people.

Surprisingly, there was a human town in the corner of the Great Maze.



“Selling potions! Essential items! Prepare them quick!”

“Two spots left! Recruiting people urgently!”

Countless people were moving around and shouting within the town at corner of the dark underground structure.

<Level 1 Supply Zone>

A town made from the hands of players.

‘What an unkind game.’

Hikokomaria thought about how long this town took to build and mumbled.

The Exodus did not supply the players with anything for their benefit.

It was just literally another world.

There weren’t NPCs who sold unlimited amounts of potions and neither was there people who handed out quests with set requirements.

The players, who were used to friendly game systems which were designed to attract as many people as possible, were shocked by this game at first but they slowly realized.

That this kind of cockyness in this game stemmed from its confidence.

‘As long as a game’s fun, it will be popular.’

Hikikomaria mumbled as he looked at the countless people in the Level 1 Supply Zone.

Though the game company was unfriendly, the game itself was fun.

So it was up to the players to deal with things that were uncomfortable.

If there wasn’t a clan system then they would recruit them in real life.

If there wasn’t a village then they would create it with people.

The Level 1 Supply Zone here was created in this manner.

They had dealt with various traps and beasts on level 1 and settled upon a wide area in the maze.

As safety was slowly increasing as more and more players traded and resupplied here, the NPCs who were living in the War Fortress also came in, this was how the current Level 1 Supply Zone was created.

Hikikomaria spoke towards the party members.

“Vision Enhancing Stones and other tools have been bought already with the party funds, we’ll rest here for 30 minutes so prepare the things you need by yourselves.”

There were a few things that were a necessity in the Maze.

The Vision Enhancing stone, which increased how far they could see, or the Alarming Stone, which alerted one from sneak attacks, there were countless magic artifacts the mages of the kingdoms in Exodus created and sold.

And since such things were a necessity for the whole group, they could be bought with the limited party funds but personal requirements and preparations were all up to oneself.

Since this game had a tremendous amount of freedom, there were simply countless different types of battle styles.

Hansoo nodded.

30 minutes.

30 minutes was more than enough to do what he needed.

There was no need for him to prepare gears really.

‘Well, I don’t really have gold either.’

Hansoo smiled.

He was penniless so he didn’t even have the money to buy them.

Since this place, Level 1 Supply Zone, was a place which only sold necessary items so their prices weren’t exactly low.

Well, it was closer to the price of items in tourist locations.

Hansoo exclaimed out at the price of numerous price signs while moving through people as he found a grave at the center of the village and nodded.

‘Found it.’

Though the Level 1 Supply Zone was created by the hands of players and NPCs, they didn’t just make it anywhere.

Before this place had been built into the Supply Zone, it was

actually the location where the most amount of people had died at.

<Grave of the Gatekeeper.>

Countless players have melted down from the poison damage of the mysterious, infected warriors who poured out from the small pyramid structure in the middle.

Only after the mages of the kingdoms released cures for the poison and when the high level players got interested by the maze did the jewel deep inside that pyramid get broken.

Of course the construction of this Supply Zone in the largest area within the 1st floor was way after this.

As Hansoo was walking.

Somebody came up to him and started to speak.

“It’s your first time in the Great Maze right? Let’s go together, I’ll help you prepare.”

‘Crap.’

Hansoo shook his head as he looked at his newly acquired annoyance.

The female who had taken the test with him, [Kameira], was smiling next to him.

With a very amused expression.

Hansoo replied expressionlessly.

“I’ve prepared everything I needed already. I’m just planning to go to that grave over there, it seems interesting.”

“That pyramid?”

Kameira looked at Hansoo flirtatiously and then spoke:

“Hahaha! There’s nothing there anymore! The ones who cleared it in the beginning...Well it seems they received a large amount of rewards but nothing is there anymore.”

It seemed Hansoo had been trying to find the remnant of a quest in there.

Of course Hansoo wasn’t the only person who thought this way.

Since Kameira was also curious and had looked all over that pyramid.

Just because the ones who cleared it first got large rewards did not mean every secret inside it had been found.

But everyone had failed.

Countless people have searched inside the pyramid for a long time but they had all failed.

Hansoo smiled at Kameira and then mumbled.

‘You can only find it if you know what you’re looking for.’

One can only see as much as they know.

Since an item that looked like trash in the eyes of the common people may be a heavenly treasure to experts.

Though the Players have been in this game for a long time, they were still noobs when it came to this world.

Since they only thought of this world as a game.

They weren’t interested in the race and the history of this world nor did they even want to know about it.

Even if they were interested, they didn’t dwell too much or pry too deeply.

But of course there were exceptions.

There were a few players out of the countless who were intrigued by this world and solely focused on research and adventures.

‘Well. I don’t remember their ID though.’

A year from now.

Their leveling was slow due to their focus in exploration but they barely met the level requirements for the War Fortress and made their way to this Great Maze.

He will then find the traces that will start the Great Change.

Unlike the other players, whose goals were just the Protection Elixirs and Quests, his objectives were much different.

And there were indeed such traces inside the Pyramid.

It looked run down but those traces were necessary to begin these quests.

Hansoo finished his thoughts as he shrugged his shoulders.

“Who knows.”



Kameia chuckled at Hansoo and then followed after him.

She was interested.

She was famous for her reasoning skills where she had come from but this guy was different.

Kameia decided to get closer and continued to ask questions.

“How old are you anyway?”

“I guess about 21.”

Kameia made a dumbfounded expression.

‘...About? With that physique?’

Guessing one’s age was secondary but for him to be 21 with his looks.

Due to his huge posture and muscles that radiated fierceness, there was no way one would look at him and think him to be 21.

‘It doesn’t seem like he customized his looks.’

The Exodus did not provide the option to customize one's looks so one would need to buy surgery or elixirs for them.

Kameia stared at Hansoo, who didn't have any traces of such work done to him, and then smiled.

Since age wasn't very important.

“Then let's drop the formalities since we're of the same age. It seems like you're from Goryu as well.”

Hansoo flinched at the name of the unfamiliar country which he hadn't heard in a long time.

‘Oh yeah. I heard that this nation's history is a bit different than ours.’

He had heard that their culture was more western than Korea.

Which meant that being informal was more common in that country.

Hansoo pondered as to whether he should continue [being formal or informal](#) but then spoke out.

“No, no. I'm more comfortable being formal.”

The formal speech was uncomfortable but she would continue to stick by if he let her in like this.

‘Hnng. Did the fact that I’m a noona\* get found out? I look quite young for my age though.’

She had faked her age in order to get closer but she was sad that he had walled her off.

Then the entrance of the Pyramid appeared in front of Hansoo’s eyes.

‘Let’s go in.’

As he was about to.

“Stop. You must pay the fee to tour the Pyramid. 10 gold.”

“...?”

‘Was it always like this?’

Hansoo frowned.

Actually he had never been to the Great Maze in the past.

Since the 6th Great Change had been going on when he had come

up here in the past.

Since the Protection Elixir's prices had dropped so much, there wasn't really a need to go into the Great Maze.

He had only memorized the core parts of the Quest, he didn't care about small things like this.

Hansoo frowned as he felt his empty pockets.

He hadn't prepared any gold since he would get some while hunting in the Maze but for such a thing like this to happen.

The NPC who had been working as a guard looked at this Hansoo and then frowned as he spoke.

“Due to a large amount of people visiting, the Kingdoms decided to place a maintenance fee.”

The NPC emphasized on the word <Kingdom>.

Though 10 gold wasn't a large amount of money, there were a lot of immortals, the title given to Players by the NPCs, who were too cheap or caused a ruckus because they didn't like being told by others.

The guard judged Hansoo to be one of those people and spoke out in order to prevent trouble.

Since even the immortal players would have a hard time ignoring the words of the Kingdoms.

At that moment Kameira smiled as she handed over the money.

“Here, 20 gold.”

“Thank you. Have a nice tour. The time limit is 10 minutes.”

“...”

Kameira smiled as she looked at Hansoo who was staring at her.

“You told me you had no money after crossing the border. I can pay this much. Oh and since I’m the noona, I’ll speak comfortably.”

‘...How sly.’

Hansoo shook his head at Kameira who had shoved her way in and caused him to be in debt.

“I’ll pay you back soon.”

“Hehe. It’s nothing.”

Hansoo entered the Pyramid along with Kameraia.

She wouldn't cause much trouble for him anyway.

Since it wasn't like he was going to do something big.

As Hansoo was about to move out.

He heard people mumbling in the distance.

‘Hmm?’

Hansoo's supernatural hearing caught the speech of the people from the village.

<Hey! Did you hear? Apparently the bug players have entered the Great Maze.>

<Huh? How many?>

<I don't know. Maybe about ten?>

<Fucking hell. Jackpot! We shouldn't be loitering around like this!>

<Just ignore it. The word's out far and wide due to the ruckus they caused on the way in.>

The people's talks rang throughout the entire space.

Bug players.

The Protection Elixirs were important.

But bug players had a value far higher.

Beside the artifacts they gave, the amount of experience they gave was far higher.

Killing them was basically winning the lottery.

A large amount of movement had been caused by this.

Because of this huge lottery which had made their way into the Pyramid.

Kameira went into the Pyramid while listening to the mumbles as she clicked her tongue.

“Hnng. What trash. For them to use bugs because they don't have skills.”

Bug players.

They were merely trash unlike the others who constantly struggled in order to live.

‘Sigh. Anyways...If it’s ten then it’s highly likely it’s those guys.’

Hansoo frowned as he looked at the Supply Zone which had become busy.

For those who aren’t familiar with Korean culture : There is an informal and formal speech. Formal speech is used in a situation where respect is needed while the informal speech is more so between close friends or when you’re berating others if you aren’t close. It is seen as highly disrespectful when one is using informal speech when they aren’t close to each other. the And those who are older are given titles? Noona is how a younger male describes an older female.



# Chapter 222 : The Great Maze Of The Ains

## (3)

---

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then shook his head.

‘..If I go in then I’ll get swept by as well. They caused too many eyes to focus on them.’

The entire Level 1 Supply Zone was in a ruckus.

The countless people who had come in to get the expensive Protection Elixirs.

This was how enticing these bug players were.

Though not all these people will go crazy in order to kill them but things will still become dirty if he went to help them now.

‘I can only pray that they’re lucky. I need to focus on my work first.’

Hansoo expression remained still as he just went inside.

Kameira asked Hansoo.

“Aren’t you going to go get them? It’ll be a jackpot if you kill them.”

Most bug players were strong enough to destroy normal players.

Since their controls were much different than them.

Though these people were going crazy, if they met the bug players while roaming around in small parties the ones killed would not be the bug players but them instead.

If they weren't like the Bug Killers who had professional PK items, it would be hard to deal with them.

But Hansoo was even stronger than them.

There was a reason why Kameira wasn't chasing them.

Because she could get smashed apart the moment she saw them and get logged out.

Though she would revive, not being able to log in for an entire day was annoying.

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“Not very interested. And it's not like I'll find them even if I searched for them. It's better to just get Protection Elixirs in that time.”

“True.”

Kameira nodded.

They were like lottos.

Unless they were Bug killers, it was better for them to just do what they had been doing.

Kameira then finished her thoughts and then looked at Hansoo suspiciously.

‘Isn’t this guy a bug player as well?’

He didn’t have a single ounce of gold and had amazing control, she questioned for a moment but then shook his head.

There was nothing in his movements that told her that he was a bug players.

And it might be different for other places but there were plenty of people like Hansoo in the War Fortress.

Since the strong people of various locations heard the rumors and had sold everything for the warp gate fees in order to come here.

Hansoo saw Kameira's expression and then mumbled inwardly.

'It'll become tedious if I show more skill than what I've shown.'

Though he wouldn't hesitate when he would need to accomplish something, he thought to himself that he would control himself better from now on.

As Hansoo continued in, he had arrived at a large area with an altar in the middle after passing through the tunnel.

This altar, which had a large gemstone on the top of it, was the proof that the players had taken over this Maze in the past.

Since hundreds of thousands of corpse soldiers spawned and attacked the players as that gemstone shone.

Though the gem, which had been destroyed by the players, had been fixed and had been placed here again, it didn't shine brightly as before.

Like a broken lamp.

And there were a few other players around the Altar who were looking around the pyramid with lazy expressions.

They had come in because it was famous but soon realized

nothing was here.

It would've been more fun if this place was filled with monsters and guards instead.

But though this place was boring to others, it was better for Hansoo.

Since he could avoid useless fights.

Hansoo walked up to the giant altar and pretended to look at his surroundings as he read out everything at an extreme speed.

From the scratches that didn't seem to mean anything and to even the symbols at the very corners of the pyramid.

And soon Hansoo's eyes turned to the inside of the pyramid's walls.

Countless skulls were hung in the inside of the pyramid.

These skulls had small letters engraved on their foreheads.

These were the skulls of the infected soldiers who had guarded this place in the past.

These things, which had constantly revived from the power of

the jewels, lost their immortality as the gem had been destroyed and the NPCs who had visited here took apart the skulls from their skeletons and displayed them on the inside of the pyramid.

Kameraia shrugged her shoulders from next to Hansoo.

“Well. It’s quite a sight but not that great to look at right? I don’t know why those guys died in here though.”

These hundreds of thousands of corpse soldiers were originally NPCs.

It would’ve been understandable if they died in here after the dungeon opened but these guys had been here even before the dungeon opened.

‘...They should’ve have been placed here randomly due to the game’s mechanics.’

As Kameira was making a confused expression.

A small ruckus was made in the corner.

“You cannot take that.”

“...Tsk. Just an Npc, how annoying.”

A player got annoyed at the NPC as he was about to take a skull as souvenir and then threw the skull onto the ground.

The guard frowned but didn't say anything as he placed the skull back onto the wall.

‘These damned immortals.’

The guard mumbled inwardly.

If they weren't here then none of the countless skulls would still be here.

All of it would've become souvenirs for these guys.

The guard looked at the immortals walking around the inside.

They were never serious and were very vicious and violent.

The guard's eyes landed upon Kameria and Hansoo who were quietly observing things in the corner.

With an expression saying that he wouldn't let them go if they did anything suspicious.

‘I'm going to chase them out the moment their 10 minutes are up.’

Hansoo ignored the guard's eyes as he slowly read the small words of the Ains upon the skull's foreheads.

Hansoo's supernatural eyes allowed him to read every skull inside the pyramid from where he stood.

The language of the Ains which he had painstakingly learned.

He wasn't fluent so it was more like deciphering but he could still understand them.

<You guys will forever repay the debts you owe us.>

This was what they meant roughly.

But of course it wasn't this that was important.

There was something else.

Hansoo looked over the tens of thousands of skulls and then found something.

'Found it.'



A different looking language.

It wasn't the language of the Ains which flowed like water.

It was instead created of straight lines, like a child's play.

It was the ancient language of the Kingdom's mages.

And there were many of these skulls in the pyramid.

A total of 144.

These skulls, which were spread out evenly, drew out a shape which resembled a magical formation. Of course normal people would not be able to figure out the formation due to countless skulls hiding them.

Hansoo continued to read out the words and then found the skull that was located at the core.

‘It's that. I found it.’

But it would be a bit hard to take that right now.

Since the guard was glaring at him from afar.

Though the inner parts of the Pyramid was large, it was hard to

dodge the eyes of the many guards here.

Though it was within a spot where he could reach, the guards would chase him down the moment he touched it.

And it would become very annoying if he collided against them.

The guards themselves weren't an issue but the one standing behind them was.

The players, who had been complaining, hadn't left because they had good personalities.

"What are you doing? Let's go out. Time's almost up anyway. Even if we have nothing to prepare, we should still go there early."

Kameira got bored as she spoke to Hansoo.

Though a bit more time still existed, there wasn't much to see.

Even more so for Kameira who had been here before.

Hansoo frowned at Kameira's words.

'Do I have to aim for another chance? It would be nice if the Bug Killers moved around in here.'

Since it wasn't like he could buy time infinitely it would be nice for him to solve this in the quickest time possible but it had become hard for him to.

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then nodded as he prepared to go outside.

‘I guess I'll come here with a mask, knock down all the guards unconscious and run away with it.’

Though it would be dangerous, this was the only method for him.

And this was the original method of the player who had found it anyway.

As Hansoo was about to turn around.

“Oh hey! We meet again!”

A voice calling them could be heard.

Kameira frowned at that voice.

‘Why did that guy come here.’

The Ecliptic Mania, who had failed the test before, had appeared before them.

Kameira asked the man who had appeared.

“Hello. How did you get here?”

The man shouted as he spoke.

“There are other parties other than yours, isn't it obvious how I got here?”

He wasn't openly angering them but it could clearly be heard that he was annoyed.

It was clear that his pride had been hurt when he had failed earlier.

Anyways, they could guess how he had come here.

‘I thought he would go somewhere else after being infuriated...It seems he came in here with a party that would go up to the 2nd or the 3rd floor. Or came in here thoughtlessly.’

He was nowhere good enough for the 5th floor and would get in the way but he was suitable for the easier 2nd and 3rd floors.

Of course the quality and quantity of the Protection Elixirs were much lower there, it was much easier due to only infected beasts and soldiers existing there instead of Ains.

There were countless hunting grounds around the War Fortress. This place was indeed the best place in terms of efficiency.

And it was the best choice if one was going to remain here for a long time.

‘Well. Since he has come all the way to the War Fortress, he probably wants something out of it. I just hope he doesn’t get in our way.’

Though there was a large difference in their skills, it didn’t feel good to have someone who didn’t like them lingering around them.

And even more so if it was the dangerous Maze.

As Kameira frowned.

Ecliptic Mania gulped and he looked around cautiously.

‘This is the last chance.’

He had shouted loudly to Kameira but his situation wasn’t the best.

He had gone into the first party by luck, no other parties that went to the 5th floor were willing to let him in after they realized

his skills were lacking.

But he didn't want to waste his time on the useless floors like those from the 1st to the 4th where everything had been squeezed out by others already.

Since he hadn't come to the War Fortress by spending a fortune for that.

While he was pondering what to do, somebody approached him.

<You have nothing to do right? I have a request>.

'Korin kingdom huh.'

The Kingdom whose border stood against the original owner of the War Fortress, the Keil Kingdom.

Though it was just an impudent NPC but her request was hard to deny.

'Well, it's not like I will die for real anyway.'

As long as the reward was large, there was nothing he couldn't do.

Ecliptic Mania thought of the female who had carefully

approached him before and tightly grasped the item in his hands.

# Chapter 223 : The Great Maze Of The Ains

## (4)

---

<It'll be very easy. Even monkeys could do it.>

‘Fucking hell...’

Ecliptic Mania made an annoyed expression at the girl's words.

Since being entrusted with a job that even a monkey could do infuriated him.

She didn't have to talk like this.

‘I can only ask you... Is it weird if I do it this way? Maybe it's because I'm an NPC. Damned bastards.’

He knew that if she had said something like this then he would've been suspicious of her anyway.

He knew better than anyone else that there was nothing special about him.

He had shone where he had come from amongst people of 40 to 50 years old because it was quite laid back and had come here with his confidence after investing a large amount of money but he was merely the lowest of the food chain here.



‘I have to take this chance.’

Ecliptic Mania tightly held onto the mysterious gem and then mumbled.

The female’s request was actually very simple.

<If you go into the Great Maze, there’s a giant altar on the first floor. You know right?>

<...Yes. But I heard there wasn’t much there.>

<Heheh. Well that depends on the person right? Well anyways, we don’t ask for much.>

The female continued.

That he just needed to pour mana into the gem inside the altar.

‘So. She’s going to allow me to play around at a decent hunting ground in the Korin Kingdom huh? As well as contribution points.’

It wasn’t bad.

He didn’t how bad the things he would do here would be but it’ll probably become troublesome to move around in the Keil Kingdom

from now on.

But it didn't matter.

Since even if he died here, he could just revive in the Korin Kingdom and play there.

Though he would lose the rights to use the War Fortress, the hottest place, he had long accepted the fact.

That there was no place for him here.

Well, there would be a place for him if he played long enough but he didn't like the idea of waiting that long.

He wanted to climb faster, he wanted to become a master player.

And he wanted to join those people in their respective battlefields and shine.

'Yeah. This isn't the only place in this game. I can just go to the next most famous hunting ground.'

As soon as he finished his thought.

Whooosh!

Ecliptic Mania poured mana into the gem in his hand.

.....

Rumble

“Huh?”

Kameia stopped at the strange noise and the vibration that suddenly rang out.

And then spoke out.

“What did you just do?”

Ecliptic Mania chuckled.

“Why do I have to reply do that?”

He didn’t even like her, why did he have to answer?

And even if he answered her question, he didn’t know what would happen from now on anyway.

Other people were making uneasy expressions but he himself was extremely excited.

Since he was curious as to what he had done would cause.

Kiiiiing!

But the vibration wasn't the end.

Light exploded out from Ecliptic Mania.

“Huh? Hey! What are you doing over there?”

“Damn! What the hell are you doing!?”

The guards were approaching in shock but then started to scream.

Though they were guards, they were strong enough to determine the amount of mana within that light.

Such a tremendous reaction.

If such a thing exploded then the surrounding area would all be erased.

And another thing.

They would all die.

‘Fucking crazy immortals.’

Guard, Moreum, made an expression of despair.

Each individual here were beasts filled with the desire to get stronger even by risking their lives.

And such guys had the weapon called immortality.

Immortality and desire.

These players had done things that were extremely monstrous.

And Moreum made an expression filled with despair, he would die but they wouldn't.

For him to lose his life from their toyous acts without knowing the reason.

He wanted to scream out.

'Fucking bastards! Don't play with us! We are...We're different from you guys!'

Moreum grinded his teeth.

But he knew he couldn't

Since there were rules which existed in this world.

A secret from the immortals.

They were merely existences who were created for those immortals.

<Hahaha! This world almost got destroyed, such a penalty is fair right? Well, try saying it out if you want.>

Kiiiiiiingg!

The gem on Ecliptic Mania which was shining brightly and vibrating intensely was now even letting out a huge roar.

And the sensation that was radiating out from it.

‘So that’s what that is. The thing which used the <Spirit Stone> to create...’

Moreum thought up to this point and then gave up his life.

Since it was impossible to escape it’s vicinity.

‘This is the end. Stay well captain.’

Then.

Boooooooooooooooooom!

A huge explosion swept through the insides of the altar.

A large amount of destructive force.

The inferno swept through the entire altar.

Rumble!

The skulls that were on the walls of the Pyramid couldn't handle the heat as they all melted down.

“Kyaaaaak!”

“Kuuuhaak!”

The surrounding players tried to quickly use their defensive skills but it was useless.

They treated this world as a game and they could revive anyway.

The tremendous amount of energy melted down their body and caused them to log out.

Along with Kameia who was next to it.



The moment Kameia and all other players melted down from the light.

‘They’re all dead.’

Hansoo realized that everyone else died and his body started to move about.

Churrrrrrrrk.

If course Hansoo’s body was also melting down since he was the closest to the flame.

But the durability of his body, the mana he had and his skills were different from those of the others.

Whooooosh!

The Demonic Dragon’s Essence fired up from Hansoo’s body and started to resist the light that was smashing into him.

Chiiijijijiik.

The melting body restructured again and started to resist the energy.

At the same time Hansoo's brain started to work quickly.

An ability which utilized his battle experience.

Once he used this then everything around him would look as if they had all stopped.

‘Phew, So I need to use at least this amount of mana to use this huh.’

Hansoo mumbled as he felt the Mana Jade that was rotating intensely.

Of course it wasn't like he could move quickly in this stopped world but the fact that he could think and judge clearly at normal speed was a tremendous bonus.

First he saw the skulls melting down.

They were resisting the flame because they had some special mana inside of them but they would soon melt.

And the one Hansoo targeted was resisting it more but would also soon melt down.

Maybe about a second in real life time.

And there were three guards below the explosion who had instinctively rolled up.

Residents of this world.

They would die at this rate.

Of course he didn't really have any thoughts of saving them but he was feeling responsible now.

Since he had left the guy in front of him alone from causing the explosion.

He didn't have a reason to not stop him from causing the explosion and he probably could've if he tried but he did not.

Since it was a chance for him.

'I'll take the skull with this chance.'

Hansoo's judgement, which was clear in the stopped world, laid down a decision.

It would've been very annoying originally.

Since there would've been being chasing him if he stole the skull at night.

But the story would change with this explosion.

Since it would be even weirder if a skull remained after this explosion.

Even if he took a single skull from all this, nothing would change.

In an instant.

Boooooom!

The stopped world started to move again at original speed.

The explosion swept through the surroundings and headed towards the guards.

Hansoo quickly moved his body, blocked the explosion and smashed his foot down onto the ground.

Kwaaagagagaaaak!

The ground was forcibly ripped up.

And Hansoo kicked the raised land towards the three guards.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The broken floor of the pyramid smashed onto the guards and then pushed them out of the tunnel.

At a speed which they wouldn't have been able to by running.

‘That’s good.’

Since they had been in front of the tunnel which headed outside and were far away from the explosion, it acted as fortune for them.

Though they would get burned, they would be able to escape the explosion radius.

Since the force of the explosion and the impact of the floor piece of pushing them back.

Like a tsunami pushing back a surfboard.

Hansoo, after smashing away the floor piece, then jumped towards the ceiling.

Boooooom!

He then plucked the skull that was embedded on the ceiling and then shoved it down by his waist.

He then started to resist the flame with all his mana.

Kuooooooooo!

Kuuuguguguuungg!

The bomb Ecliptic Mania brought was powerful but it wasn't strong enough to get through Hansoo's Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement.

If the others were higher level players then they might've been able to block it.

Rumble.

As the flames quieted down, Hansoo released his hand which he had smashed into the ceiling and then landed down onto the ground.

All his surroundings had turned into ashes.

The players and the skulls in the walls had all melted down and then turned black.

A tremendous might.

‘For them to use the Spirit Stones already to create this amount of force.’

As Hansoo was mumbling.

Piiiiing!

The red gem, which had maintained its shape through the explosion, started to make a ringing noise.

‘So their objective was to release the seal of that thing.’

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the sealed red gem, the <Dead Man’s Remark>.

.....

Rumble.

A red flame exploded out from the pyramid as a strange vibration rang throughout the Level 1 Supply Zone.

The man who was swinging his blade, Flame Warrior-V, flinched at this vibration.

Of course his blade didn’t stop because of this.

Crunch!

“God damn. It’s annoying as hell to kill them one by one. Why are they so loyal to each other.”

“Ugh...”

Flame Warrior-V cut apart the neck of the woman who had held him down until the end a few more times and then watched the bug players running towards the pyramid as he smiled.

He didn’t know what was going on but one thing was clear.

‘Try a bit more heheh.’

He could catch them.

But his experience told him.

That bug players would look for other bug players when they fell into danger.

‘Dumbasses. It’s not like they really die.’

“Chase them!”

The other players plucked away the artifacts from the corpse and



then ran after the bug players while laughing.

# Chapter 224 : The Great Maze Of The Ains

## (5)

---

Crunch!

Uuudududuk!

“Phew. You had fun with the bugs up until now right? Don’t be so upset now.”

“Ugh...”

“We’ll use your artifacts to buy some drinks for ourselves.”

Christopher clenched his teeth as he looked at the player who was eyeing the artifacts on his body.

And his comrades had been turned into a mess around him.

People who had been caught and had been ripped part on the way to Hansoo.

Christopher looked at these people with pained expressions.

‘...I shouldn’t have come this way.’

Because it was such a complex structure, he didn't think they would get caught on the way to Hansoo.

But because they were in such a rush, they forgot the most important part.

The fact that nobody in this world was on their side.

There were people who were shouting around him.

“Isn't there anything for us? We were the ones who gave in intel.”

“Though you guys are the one who killed them we did something as well! How would you have done it without us!”

They were trying to negotiate with prey which had been trapped already.

Though they didn't dare to fight the bug players, they could at least give directions.

Because of the others, who had given away their positions, they had been driven into the corner like this.

‘...This is the end.’

As Christopher gave up.

Rumble.

The land which they had been standing on.

The surface started to tremble intensely.

.....

Rumble.

As the inner parts of the pyramid was quaking.

Ooooooong!

A ray of golden light poured out from where Kameira stood before.

And soon the golden light disappeared as a humanoid walked out from it.

Kameira, who had been logged out, had come out.

She then cursed as soon as she came out.

“Uaaaaaa! Fucking bastard! Does he know how expensive the immortality stone is!?”

Boom! Boom!

Kameira, surrounded by the golden light, exclaimed her rage while stomping upon the ground.

Immortality stone.

An artifact that allowed one to revive on the spot where they died without any penalties.

She had bought it in order to use it on the 5th floor if she got ambushed in order to rejoin the party right away but for her to use it like this!

The revived Kameira looked around her surroundings and then made a happy expression as she looked at Hansoo.

“Oh? You used it as well?”

She was happy to have found a comrade.

Hansoo adjusted the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement's golden light and made it look like the light of revival as he nodded.

“Yes. This expensive thing...Ugh.”

“Anyways, what the hell was his quest.”

Kameira kicked away the spot where Ecliptic Mania was standing at as he grinded his teeth.

He wouldn't have had any reason to perform revenge or anything.

He would've done it for a quest.

At that moment.

Kiiiiing!

Kameira looked around and then turned towards where a ruckus was coming from.

She then made a shocked expression.

“Huh? What? That still works?”

As Kameia was making a confused expression while watching the red gem shining brightly red.

Kiiiiing!

The gem slowly radiated its red aura as if it was going to show them something.

Then.

Rumble.

A intense tremor rang out from beneath the floor of the pyramid.

“Huh? What is this?”

As Kameira exclaimed out in shock.

Boooom!

A thick hand exploded out from beneath the floor.

“Aaaaaak!”

Kameia freaked out as she saw this.

A hand with pieces of flesh missing.

And pus which filled the entire arm.

Along with the red eye that could be seen through the gaps where the hand came out from.

Kameira screamed out in disgust.

“God damnit! They said all the infected soldiers had been eradicated! Why is this happening again!”

Kameira groaned out as she stomped upon the ghoulish soldiers who were crawling out from beneath the ground.

Infected soldiers.

The name given to the immortal creatures who resembled ghouls or zombies on the first floor of the pyramid.

Stomping on a few wouldn't do anything.

<Kuuuuhhh...>

<Kwaaa...>

Thousands of hands were sticking out from the melted floor.

And Kameia freaked out again as she saw all these hands.

The soldiers who had been buried here after the eradication.



Kameia was shocked as she saw all these zombies.

‘Damn! If it was like this then I wouldn’t have revived!’

Each and every one of these guys weren’t pushovers.

They were all at least level 190 and above.

The stronger ones even reached level 195.

They had no fear and even had immortality.

She herself would die from fighting just a few dozens.

Since this place was somewhere where people fought in dozens or in hundreds instead of being alone.

Kameia hurriedly looked around and then spoke to Hansoo with a brilliant idea.

“Hey! Let’s break that! We can probably break it too!”

Hansoo shook his head as he looked at Kameia who was shouting while pointing at the slightly cracked gem.

‘It won’t do’

That gem was not something that could be broken with strength.

Everyone thought that people broke that gem and found peace in the first level of the maze but that was not the exact facts.

That gem, <Dead Man’s Remark> was merely a part of this giant maze.

Of course that gem worked as a transmission tower that raised the dead by converting energy so breaking it could buy them time temporarily.

But it would eventually get restored by the strange aura within this place.

The reason why this gem hadn’t been working until now was not because it had been broken by players.

It’s because the mana formation made by the skulls had separated energy from outside and inside.

The mana formation created by the Keil Kingdom was the reason why the 1st floor of the maze had been able to stay sustained.

‘And the ones who broke that formation is probably...The Korin Kingdom.’

Seeing the relationship between the Keil and Korin Kingdoms after the maze had been found, anybody figure out who had broken this mana formation.

Hansoo looked at the red gem and spoke to Kameira.

“I’m leaving.”

“Hhu? Why?”

“It’ll be hard with just us. Did not hear what they had to go through in order to break it?”

“Ugh...”

Kameia remembered.

He was right.

While an elite group of people which consisted of master players surrounded that gem and prevented the zombies from approaching it, the top tier player <Ragnarok>, who was famous for his brute strength, and a few other high tier master players assaulted it in order to break it.

For over 5 minutes.

Of course it was just 5 minutes but the formation they had created had almost been annihilated, it was not possible with just the two of them.

‘Damn.’

As Kameira smacked his lips.

Boooom!

An explosion rang out from the tunnel that lead outside the pyramid.

Hansoo had started to smash apart the zombies which was charging towards him.

Hansoo mumbled as he created a path.

‘...Could probably break it but there’s no reason to.’

Hansoo thought of the skull that was quietly sleeping in this pocket.

He had long accomplished his goal.

And if he showed the might of breaking that gem, it would cause

others to suspect him.

Since despite Exodus having countless players, there weren't many people as skilled as him.

And according to what he knew those players were basically top stars in their world.

'Since there's a witness it'll be tedious. Shall I log her out?'

Hansoo pondered for a moment and decided to not.

Since there wasn't a need to.

Boooom!

'Wow.'

Kameia exclaimed out in shock as she looked at Hansoo who started to focus on clearing the road.

She thought he only had good control but he had a lot of power as well.

'The Arrancar zone? He must've been quite famous there.'

Kameia looked at the zombies being smashed apart and

supported Hansoo from behind.

“Ugh...It’s a shitshow.”

Kameia swallowed her saliva.

“Damn! Why are these guys suddenly crawling out!”

“Fuck! Serious? Aaaak! My sign! I paid so much in order to get this spot!”

“Shit! I’m an alchemist class! Damn it!”

Crunch!

Uddududuk!

The Level 1 Supply Zone was filled with ghouls and zombies.

The ones who had crawled out started to chomp apart the players and was creating a ruckus after stealing weapons.

It was an army of dead.

The stronger people had gone into the 2nd floor and below so the ones who were on the first floor could only suffer.

Kuuuduuduk!

Crunch!

Hansoo continuously smashed apart the ghouls who were charging towards him.

But Kameira couldn't.

Though she was skilled, the Exodus was not a place where a small group of people could go through.

Crunch.

Uduk.

“Ugh! This is annoying! Tell them I'm going ahead! Fuck! Ecliptic Mania, you just fucking wait! Ugh!”

Kameira couldn't handle the attacks infected soldiers as she returned surrounded by golden light.

She looked so pissed that she would've smashed apart Ecliptic Mania if he was right in front of her.

Hansoo chuckled.

‘Well. Since she even used that expensive Immortality stone and died again, it would be quite annoying.’

The Immortality stone was an artifact could only be used once so even if she did revive she would revive at the saved revival spot, the plaza of the War Fortress.

Hansoo looked around and then pondered.

As to go in deeper into the maze where his objective laid.

Or to regroup with his group members.

But he soon realized it was a pointless train of thought.

Since the reason why he had found the party was in order to not buy any suspicion.

But nobody would suspect him for roaming around by himself in a situation like this.

‘I’ll go down alone.’

Ooooooong.

As Hansoo’s spear was about to smash into the infected soldiers.



“Kuhuuk!”

A different kind of scream rang out from the distance than those of the infected soldiers.

Unlike the screams of the players who had died unluckily, it was a scream filled with lament and despair.

Hansoo’s head turned unconsciously.

And he saw the shape of the player who had found him in the distance.

The player who had been chased by the Bug killers and had gotten to this point.

The man looked towards him and the location behind him as he pondered.

Specifically Hansoo and his underlings who were getting chased around and being killed.

‘Did he come for me.’

Hansoo clenched onto the spear in his hand.

Since the moment that player, who had been found out as a bug player, shouted for help he could get swept in it as well.

Since the bug killers would go for him as well.

But that moment.

The man seemed to have hardened up as he turned his head around.

As if he didn't notice.

‘...He's not asking for help? Why?’

Hansoo's eyebrows twitched.

# Chapter 225 : The Great Maze Of The Ains

## (6)

---

Christopher looked at Hansoo with a bitter expression and steeled himself.

‘Ugh...What kind of a delusion did we have.’

The moment the ground broke apart and the ghoul things came out, he had dashed out through the surrounding people.

He had thrown away his underlings to save other surviving ones.

Since he thought that finding Hansoo could clear up everything.

The others agreed with him as they ran here with him and he had finally found Hansoo.

But when he found him, his sanity came out.

What he had found was not a god or a paragon but an adventurer just like themselves.

The crazy rules of this fucked up god’s boardgame set by the fairy applied to Hansoo the same as well.

Since even if the others got killed by Hansoo, those immortals

wouldn't disappear or anything.

Of course Hansoo would probably be able to save him right now.

‘...But afterwards?’

Christopher pondered for a moment but then steeled his mind.

To not cause any trouble.

His underlings pained him but the ones next to him weren't the only ones he cared for.

‘I shall die here without holding you down so please... Make it so the ones who come after us don't suffer like us. I don't know how you will do this but...’

He didn't know what one would have done in the floor below but that guy had done it.

He would be able to do it.

“Fuck! You bastards! Let's die here then!”

He had made sacrifices and given up his underlings until he got here, now he would just become a sacrifice for Hansoo.

Christopher's mind was at ease after giving up as he clenched tightly onto the spear and charged forward after quickly turning around.

.....

“Fuck... So you were only running away?”

Flame Warrior-V clicked his tongue as he saw the bug players suddenly turning around fighting crazily.

He thought it was a jackpot but was disappointed.

There was a rumor in the past.

That a large amount of bug-players were hiding from the normal players within the maze.

And Flame Warrior-V actually trusted that rumor to a degree.

Since these guys wouldn't play the game without any motives.

They had to continuously go on quests and hunts in order to get items, gold and level up.

And for that the Great Maze was a perfect location.

It was a location which still had a part shrouded by mystery in a game like Exodus where everything had been found out.

Since there were less and less players the deeper one went in, these bug players could actually dodge the eyes of the players and hunt there.

Even more so if they were high-level bug players.

He had chased them this far in case they were running towards a larger group but for this small group to be all of them.

Though 15 wasn't a low number, he was still quite enraged because he originally had high expectations.

'Tsk. Damned bastards. I'll play around with you before you die.'

"Hey! It seems like there's nothing else! Kill them all!"

As soon as Flame Warrior-V's words rang out.

The people around made disappointed expressions as they started to charge in.

Since if Flame Warrior-V judged there was nothing else to take, there really was nothing else.

Flame Warrior-V shook his head as he watched the other players charge in like a swarm of ants towards the bug players.

‘There’s no need for me to step in. Anyways...It’s really chaotic here now. How did this happen.’

Flame Warrior-V frowned as he watched the Level 1 Supply Zone which had turned into a mess.

Infected warriors were charging in from all directions.

They had split up into two groups in order to keep the infected warriors back and kill the bug players at the same time.

But since most of the high level players around level 200 had left already, this current location, which was mainly filled with non-battle classes, was getting massacred.

The stronger ones had already gone below.

The ones remaining were getting smashed apart.

Constant logouts.

Of course he had no thoughts of saving them.

Since it wasn’t like he was going to get anything for saving these

guys.

And if his group received more casualties than he, the party leader, would have to bear the brunt of it all.

‘We need to clean up and fall back.’

As Flame Warrior-V was about to turn around.

A unique player came into his view.

‘Mmm?’

A player who was constantly killing zombie soldiers left and right.

And Flame Warrior-V was shocked as he saw this.

‘Huh? Why is there a high level player here? Why didn’t he go down? Did he come down to resupply?’

Everything from skills to artifacts to control.

They were all top tier.

Crunch!



Ududuududuk!

Every time the shining golden spear snaked around, a head flew off and the entire body got destroyed.

He didn't know what skills and armor he had on but they remained spotless despite the sword attacks of the infected warriors.

Flame Warrior-V was shocked.

‘Crazy bastard...How much real life money did he spent.’

Those artifacts and skills looked extremely expensive.

In that instant the greed within the depths of Flame Warrior-V's mind twitched.

‘The infected warriors are mostly dealt with as well.’

Though the infected warriors were immortal, there was a limit to how fast they can regenerate.

Since the 2nd group had cleaned the surroundings well, there would be some time until the other infected warriors, who had gone out to chase other players, came back to them.

Flame Warrior-V tapped his comrade, <Arirangcar.> next to him.

“Huh? What is it?”

“Look over there?”

“Hmm?”

Arirangcar frowned at the location the Flame Warrior-V pointed to and frowned.

“You want us to kill him?”

Flame Warrior-V nodded as he spoke.

“If we’re correct then it’s a jackpot.”

The thing the bug players had ran towards.

And a person who was hunting alone near them with amazing controls.

It doesn’t matter if he was a bug player or not.

If they were right then it was a huge jackpot.

If not then they could just apologize, return the dropped artifacts and pay him fees for the death penalty.

Their bug killer group, <Anteaters>, had kept their image up like this up until now.

The hate the players had towards bug players and the bug killers who dealt with this.

This had given them the right to attack anybody.

‘If we’re wrong then whatever but...If we’re right then it’s a huge jackpot.’

Even if one of those items dropped, it would be extremely expensive.

Since countless players played Exodus and there were plenty of rich people who wanted to fill in the gaps of bad control with good artifacts.

The amount of money they spent was on a different level from normal people, these people used tremendous amounts of money just to get a slight advantage over others.

If that guy was a bug player then not being able to find the lair of bug players was okay.

But Arirangcar shook his head.

“You aren’t sure right?”

“...No.”

“Then let’s just focus. It’s not good to make enemies for no reason.”

Having some expectations and not getting anything was annoying for them as well.

And that person was too strong for them to provoke without knowing for sure.

If that guy had a nasty personality, attacked them back and caused the bug players to run because their formation broke apart then things would get annoying.

“Ugh.”

Flame Warrior-V heard Arirangcar’s words and then came back to his senses.

Since those words were right.

He had seen hundreds of bug players over 5 years and saw the habits of thousands of bug players through records.

Since this was his job.

The reason why he was appointed the party leader was not because of this battle strength.

Eyes.

It's because of his eyes which were amazing at finding out the bug players hiding within players.

That was his strong point and his greatest fortune.

He couldn't tell others how to determine them but with careful observation he could tell.

The strangeness that existed within them.

But he could not feel that with that person over there.

'If that's an act then...That guy has to be somebody amazing.'

One couldn't judge somebody was a bug player just from good controls.

They had to judge their aura, eyes, actions, hands and every other movements to come down to a goal.

And with all this, that guy passed.

Flame Warrior-V did not believe there was somebody who was so good at acting to the point of escaping his eyes.

‘Ugh. I’ll buy you the bag next time Minah. Business isn’t that great for oppa these days.’

As Flame Warrior-V thought of his girlfriend in real life and was turning around.

‘Huh?’

Something strange entered the eyes of Flame Warrior-V

.....

Kwaddddduk!

Hansoo smashed apart the head of the infected warrior charging towards him and then looked towards the adventurers who were dying with heavy eyes.

Even this was a dangerous action.

Since there weren't many who looked to the bug players with eyes of pity.

The only ones who would do that were other bug players.

But this much was okay.

There were a lot of people who looked at bug players like insects but there were quite a lot of others who frowned at the cruelty of what happened to them.

But if he took a step further than that he could get caught.

Since the moment he showed some form of connection to them, the bug players will figure it out and attack him.

But he remembered the expression of Christopher.

And made a decision.

'I can't help them outright.'

Pity and priorities were two different things.

If he got found out then he wouldn't be able to do anything.

Since there was no reason a normal player would help the bug players.

He would go on the blacklist of the Anteaters.

But it'll be good if everything goes according to his plan.

‘I hope that the party leader’s skills are good. And even better if he’s greedy...’

Hansoo finished his thoughts and let loose a few other actions that made him look like a player discreetly.

.....

‘Huh?’

Flame Warrior-V flinched.

The strangeness started to occur.

It increased the more the bug players he had been chasing got driven into a corner.

And Flame Warrior-V was delighted.

‘Fuck yeah! Good job Flame Warrior!’



Flame Warrior-V immediately whispered to Arirangcar next to him.

“Yo. Let’s get him.”

“Dude, I told you...”

Arirangcar froze after seeing his friend’s expression.

It was completely different from the one before.

Arirangcar looked at his friend with a strange expression.

“I can’t see it...You sure?”

He was a bug killer but he was acknowledged for his PK skills, he wasn’t as good as his friend who looked at recordings of bug players all day at discerning bug players.

‘He looks like a normal player to me...’

Flame-Warrior V chuckled as he replied.

“Can’t you trust me?”

“...Mmm.”

Arirangcar agreed and then sent a signal.

“2nd group, since you dealt with the soldiers come over here. We found a new one.”

It was different from before.

There were only a very few rare cases where he had been wrong with such a confident expression.

‘Just wait Minah you bitch. I’ll buy you the fucking bag you were singing about.’

This was a jackpot.

Flame Warrior-V drooled as he looked at the new bug player and mumbled.

# Chapter 226 : God's Destruction Maul (1)

---

Crunch!

Attacks flew into Hansoo who was killing the infected soldiers.

Kuuudududuk!

‘So his eyes were better than I thought huh.’

Hansoo swung his spear to deflect the attack and then asked with a surprised expression.

“Why are you doing this? I didn’t interfere with your hunt.”

Flame Warrior-V chuckled at Hanson's words.

‘Why are all of them same?’

This was a normal reaction the bug players had when they got caught.

“Don’t pretend you bastards. Jesus, all these bug players really need to die.”

Flame Warrior-V had already confirmed it inside his mind, he didn’t even greet him as normal players did.

Well, this was the correct method actually.

Once he found his prey, he had to drive the fact that the other guy was a bug player.

That was the only way to get rid of hesitation when they fought.

Being rude to bug players was normal.

Hansoo clicked his tongue at the feeling he hadn't felt in quite a while.

'These bug killers are rude as usual.'

Because these guys had the majority as their backup, they treated others as criminals.

If not then whatever, if suspicious then catch them first.

Even more so since people couldn't die or anything in this game.

The people who get killed will feel shitty but they couldn't do anything against the bug killers who specialized in PKing and they received quite generous rewards so ignored it most of the times.

And getting rid of bugs was beneficial for them as well.

These bug killers were the monsters the game's system had created.

As Hansoo was clicking his tongue.

Arirangcar shook his head with an uncertain expression while looking at Flame Warrior-V.

Though Flame Warrior-V was sure, he still wasn't.

And if you took into account that guy's strength, it was better to not provoke him.

Arirangcar coughed a bit and then spoke towards Hansoo.

“Are you willing to die once for us? We're willing to compensate you. It'll become troublesome if you resist. If you have a Immortality Stone then we will compensate for that as well.”

If Hansoo wasn't a bug player, this wasn't a bad deal.

But of course Hansoo did not have any intentions of agreeing.

Hansoo made an extremely dissatisfied expression and replied sharply.

“I heard that the Anteaters were shoving their blades everywhere like mad dogs but it was true huh. If you guys ask us to die then do we have to give our necks up and log out like that?”

Arirangcar's expression froze up.

“...You're making things tedious. Logging out isn't that hard you know. We're working hard, you should help us out.”

Of course they were working for a profit but they still had pride in their work.

Since the game had to be fair.

The removal of bug players was not something only they did but something that everyone did.

And they were using their own time in order to do this but for that guy to be this uncooperative.

Arirangcar wasn't the only one who got angry at Hansoo's remark.

“Just kill him! The clan will compensate if we're wrong!”

“Why would that guy be that hostile if he has no secrets?”

“Arirangcar! Do you not trust Flame Warrior? He’s rarely been wrong!”

As the players cursed out and mumbled.

Hansoo chuckled and fanned the flame.

“How patriotic. You guys really think you are doing something honorable. Do you also need a badge for that?”

“This fucking bitch...”

As Hansoo said those words.

Every player’s expressions froze.

‘Most bug players try to evade collision...’

It was even more confusing because he was so direct.

That moment.

Flame Warrior-V shouted.

“Yo! We don’t have time!”

Like water flowing through a hole.

The infected soldiers were charging towards them after their targets had disappeared.

They had to choose quickly.

Whether to only kill 10 and end it there.

Or finish the guy in front of them as well.

The answer came out quickly.

‘Fucking bastard! I don’t care if you aren’t a bug player, I need you kill you at least once!’

Boooooom!

The moment a diamond level skill that one needed to be at least level 210 to learn, <Eroongen’s Chains>, exploded out.

“Kill him!”

Crunch!

Uududuk!



Countless skills exploded out.

Hansoo mumbled while looking at these bug killers.

‘This is more than enough reason for self defense.’

The thing that came after this was the problem.

He could either buy time until the adventurers over there escaped and then come to peace.

Or destroy them all.

Since he was the one who provoked them and they attacked first, it wouldn't be hard to come to peace.

‘But if I destroy them...I'll probably go onto the black list.’

Hansoo pondered for a moment.

He was worried about getting onto the blacklist and the players chasing after him.

Since he would need to get chased instead of quietly slipping away in a party.

This was why he had wanted to join a party and quietly go down.

But thinking about it for a while, he realized the water had already been spilt.

The moment the red gem recovered and this place got filled with zombie soldiers.

The terror incident of the Great Maze should've happened a year from now anyway.

Taking into account what will happen from now on, the collision between the Keil and Korin Kingdom, it wouldn't really become a problem.

'These players...These guys won't have any time to care about this place anyway.'

And another thing.

He remembered something in the past.

How these guys had killed his friends for fun.

As he remembered this.

Hansoo decided.

To make things worse instead of dodging around.

‘Clean these guys up...And go down.’

Then.

Whooooosh!

Hansoo’s entire body flared up with golden light.

.....

Booom!

Boooooom!

“Hey! Use suppression!”

“Fuck! I am!”

“That’s his movement after being suppressed!”

“Aaaak! Crazy bastard, how much money did he spend on resistance!”

“Fucking hell! Dodge! Dodge! He’s charging in with dispels!”

Chaos occurred in a corner of the Level 1 supply zone.

Hansoo who was jumping around like a mad dog and the players retaliating.

Hansoo made an extremely enraged expression.

“You! Bastards! If you’re going to kill then kill bugs! You dare touch a normal player!”

Booom!

Boooooom!

“Uaaak! Hey! Chulbae’s dead!”

“Tankers what are you doing! At least block his kick or something before you die!”

The long range attackers started to scream in the back.

‘Fuck! I just need to....I just need to hit him!’

That guy wasn’t invincible.

He was actually dodging their attacks.

The problem was that he was too good at dodging.

Even if it was his real body, one wouldn't be able to move like that unless they were like a pro fighter.

But that guy was doing that.

He was looking at the minute movements of each fingers and eyes and calculating the direction and expected range of the skills.

The long-range attackers were slowly getting killed one by one despite using their comrades as shields and were barely dodging.

And the tankers grinded their teeth and shouted out at the shouts of the long range attackers.

“Fuck! We’re trying as well!”

Kwaddududdk

But before the guy could finish his words.

The head of the man who was charging forward flew off as his body shined golden bright.

The spear smashed into his fatal location.

And the guy who had just died was armed to the teeth with diamond-level full plate armor.

Somebody who couldn't and who shouldn't die like that.

But he couldn't block attacks that accurately aimed between the plate armor and into one's fatal point.

His defensive skills were good but the opponent's attacks were too strong.

This was a difference of quality.

'Fucking hell...A full plate can't even block that one spear poking around? Is that guy a pro or something?'

Arirangcar, who was leading the long range attackers, was shocked.

Pro players.

Beasts who learned all sorts of martial arts, combat skills as well as used tremendous amounts of experience and calculations to fill in the gaps of reduced reaction speed just to sit at the top of the ladder in this game of Exodus.

In order to show off their quality a company or even an entire country would recruit them and supply them, their skills were not something amateurs should compare to.

Since a single experienced pro player was said to be able to kill 50 to 100 players of the same level as him.

Of course he knew that guy couldn't be a pro but such words did really come out.

He knew the faces of most pro players and such pro players wouldn't sit around in a place like the Great Maze.

The location they played around at was the land where master level players were at.

Something was confirmed in his head.

Arirangcar shouted to Flame Warrior-V.

“Hey, I think this guy is a bug player!”

Flame Warrior-V nodded subconsciously.

He knew that guy was strong but not to this extent.

The reason why he had stepped forward because he was confident that his group would be able to win even if he was a bug player.

But the result was completely different.

That guy had gotten crazy to the point where he was killing both the 1st and 2nd groups and at this rate they would even lose the bug killers they had already caught.

And he, the party leader, would have to deal with this issue later.

‘Fuck...No! I’ll lose a huge amount of income for a long time!’

Failing a hunt was something else but this would be really bad.

As Flame Warrior-V was making an urgent expression.

Crunch!

A spear flew in and filled his vision.



‘Fucking hell...’

Flame Warrior-V disappeared into golden light with his expression of shock.

Watching his friends being massacred and the bug players leaving with this chance.

.....

“Uwaaaaaaak!”

Crash! Clank!

Flame Warrior-V, Kang Junho, stood up from the Connector set up in his house and threw away his desk clock.

The desk clock smashed onto the small apartment room which had fancy clothes that didn’t fit this small room and shattered into small pieces.

‘Fuck...I’ll really starve at this rate!’

Jungo cursed about as he gulped down water.

At that moment.

Oooong

The phone next to Junho started to vibrate and ring.

Junho stopped grinding his teeth and then checked his phone.

At that instant.

Whoosh!

Blood was drained from his face.

<Brotherhood Capital>.

He wouldn't usually be afraid of these people.

Since he repeated borrowing and paying back by calculating his normal income.

But the story would change in a situation like this where the fault of failing the bug player hunt has been shoved onto him and he would lose a huge amount of income.

These guys were people who changed the instant a customer stopped being a customer.

They wouldn't do anything as of now since he had dealt with them numerous times but if he couldn't repay the money then things could get real complicated.

‘I’m the dumbass. Just to make my girlfriend happier...’

He felt himself was extremely pathetic to have sold himself just for a girl but that was not the important thing as of now.

Junho, who had been writhing in anger, calmed down and picked up his Connector.

The Revival Talisman was expensive but that wasn't important.

He would need to work really hard to recover from his failure and he felt like he would go crazy if he didn't let this off somewhere.

‘Fucking bastards. You guys are using bugs because this is just a game but it's survival for me.’

Junho cursed around as he put on the headset shaped Connector and laid down onto the bed.

.....

Crunch!

Hansoo smashed away the head of the final player, swung the spear around and then thought of his objective again.

The reason why he got the skull within his arms.

The core and the goal of the thing that sustained the seal on this <Great Maze>.

<God's Destruction Maul>

Solo numbering 3 artifact.

Hansoo thought of the thing that was sleeping in the 4th floor of the Great Maze of the Ains.

## Chapter 227 : God's Destruction Maul (2)

---

As Hansoo was thinking of his objective.

Christopher carefully approached him from the distance.

He was actually watching from a distance in case something happened to Hansoo while the others ran away and had approached Hansoo after the situation ended.

Christopher exclaimed out loud while watching Hansoo.

‘...He’s unbelievably strong. Seriously.’

“Thank you. But is this okay? You will be in danger too. You should hurry and...”

Hansoo hasn’t been confirmed as a bug player yet.

As Christopher was about to tell Hansoo to split up from him and his group.

Hansoo spoke towards Christopher.

“I would’ve been caught eventually anyway.”

‘Not everything can go according to my plans.’

Things that should've happened a year from now had happened now.

So it was quite clear who had done it.

Clementine's forces.

Those guys had probably done it.

'Though they weren't specifically aiming for me...I'm probably related to it.'

What those guys were afraid of was him bringing his forces up.

And how he would prepare here.

Since the Exodus was very limited in order to set up to billions of people despite being so huge.

The reason why Clementine's forces weren't targeting him was because they didn't know where he would choose to expand from.

If they knew he would pop out from here then they would've used all their forces to stop him.

'I need to finish the 6th Great Change before they realize.'

And he needed to get to the location on the 4th floor where <God's Destruction Maul> laid.

To the space within the maze of the 4th floor before heading down to the 5th floor.

A secret land nobody had found yet.

And he needed the skull in his hands to get to that place.

Like how the player who had initiated the 6th Great Change in the past had done.

‘Since things have turned out like this, I’ll just make things bigger and smash all the way down to the 4th floor quickly.’

According to his calculations, he didn’t have much time.

Hansoo looked towards where the War Fortress should be above the maze.

.....

Oooooooooong.

Central plaza.

Players were reviving with Revival Talismans at the default revival area.

Bug killers who had been killed by Hansoo.

The ones who revived cursed out loud and spat out.

“Fuck...That guy is too much.”

“Hey! You revived as well?”

Arirangcar grinded his teeth as he looked at his comrades who were reviving back at the plaza.

Then.

Oooooong.

Flame Warrior-V logged back in and popped out next to Arirangcar.

And Flame Warrior-V asked Arirangcar as soon as he came out.

“...How many used the Immortality Stones?”



“...23 including myself.”

“You died right away again?”

“Yeap.”

“Fucking bastard...”

Flame Warrior-V grinded his teeth.

They were indeed the ones who attacked first but this was too much.

23 Immortality Stones evaporated into thin air for no reason.

Arirangcar spoke towards Flame Warrior-V.

“Anyways, this is it for today.”

“Huh? Why?”

Arirangcar frowned at Flame Warrior-V’s reply.

“Come on dude. We...We aren’t even sure if he was a bug player or not and do you even know how big the losses are? There are even some who aren’t logging back in because the Revival Talisman are so expensive and they are taking a break today. They

told me they're going to hunt around for a while as well.”

Flame Warrior-V grinded his teeth at Arirangcar's words.

‘These unloyal bastards...Fuck. How did we get pushed into a corner like this.’

Sighs came out from Kang Joonho's mouth in real life.

It was amazing when they, the bug killers, were roaming around in the past.

No matter how much money they used, they could just buy it back by hunting inside Exodus.

But the number of bug players dwindled for some reason as time went on as Anteater group's income also dropped.

Of course they still earned much more than normal players but it was not enough for Flame Warrior-V.

He needed to succeed in his hunts due to having gotten used to the extravagant lifestyle.

But because of one bastard it seems he was in for a huge trouble.

He was going to suffer a lot for a while.

He would need to grind without sleep for quite a while.

Flame Warrior-V grinded his teeth after thinking up to this point.

‘You bastard. You think I’m going to leave you alone? I remember your face. You are now... On the Blacklist.’

Blacklist.

As Flame Warrior-V spoke what was on his mind.

“Yo. Let’s put him on the blacklist.”

Arirangcar frowned again.

‘This guy’s gotten crazy again. Ugh.’

He was a bug killer because he liked the legal PK aspect of it but his friend, who was in it for money, rarely let things pass with just a simple laugh.

Anybody that made his life harder was somebody he needed to kill.

Arirangcar thought of the guy from before.

‘You’re going to suffer for a while.’

That guy was seriously strong.

But once he got onto the Blacklist, only the road of suffering would be remaining.

Even more so if he was stronger.

The stronger he was and the less he died, the more suspicions will stack up.

Since he would need to die in order to get rid of the suspicions.

‘Well. He really is a bit suspicious. To be so strong.’

He wasn’t sure but that guy was indeed suspicious.

There’s a limit to how good one’s control could be.

Arirangcar spoke towards Flame Warrior-V.

“Putting somebody on the Blacklist is your choice but... The situation doesn’t seem that good right now.”

“Huh? Why?”

“Look over there.”

Flame Warrior-V looked around the War Fortress.

And finally he could see things that he couldn't before due to being to angry.

Countless soldiers and knights clad in steel were walking around.

They were clearly different from players who each had their individual outfits, they were all wearing uniform sets of armors.

Flame Warrior-V gulped down his saliva as he looked at the thousands of soldiers marching through the War Fortress.

Though they looked like a large group of crappy soldiers, they knew exactly what those soldiers were after playing this game for so long.

“Fuck...I wondered what the ruckus from before was, did a guy accept a war related quest and blow it up?”

Flame Warrior-V realized what had happened in the underground maze and frowned.

.....

“Heheheheh.”

A player was crossing through the players and was heading towards the western castle gate.

Ecliptic Mania, who had blown up the bomb, revived on the saved spot and was heading out of the War Fortress.

If one left through the west gate and followed the path then they would arrive at the Korin Kingdom.

‘They told me that a large amount of rewards was prepared for me right?’

Ecliptic Mania thought of the words of the female who had given him the quest and then smiled.

He was poor from spending all the money he had to get to this place anyway.

After finding out that he didn’t belong here, there was no other reason to stay.

He didn’t know why he needed to blow up that bomb and what that did but one thing was clear.

That he would've died from that explosion.

‘I hope those guys melted down well. I wonder if the guards got cooked well. Pity I couldn't see it with my own eyes.’

Ecliptic Mania felt good as he thought of Kameira, Hansoo and the NPC guards who annoyed him melting away and started to hum.

It didn't matter what had been caused by what he had done.

Since he just needed to move on and start his second game life.

He didn't want to have a complicated life in game.

What he wanted to do was adventuring not politics.

‘Goodbye. Damned War Fortress.’

As Ecliptic Mania spat and was about to move towards the city gates in the distance.

Phooosh!

A spear penetrated into Ecliptic Mania's heart.

“...Huh?”

This was not something that should happen the moment he revived in the village.

Ecliptic Mania cursed out loud at his body that was slowly becoming transparent as he turned around.

To curse the person off before he logged out.

“Which bastard is it! Do you know what the penalties are for PKing in town...”

But Ecliptic Mania was shocked as he turned around.

Since somebody extremely famous was standing there.

“Uh....Huh...?”

Ecliptic Mania was shocked as he looked at the general who was armored from top to bottom.

It wasn't a player.

It was an NPC in charge of the War Fortress.

The person who stood at the apex of this place.



Great General, <Vouichel Pon Cykrus.>

Estimated level 400.

This man was the one who was in charge of everything in the War Fortress and the one who protected the kingdom at the very frontlines of war.

As Ecliptic Mania was shocked to silence by the aura of the great general.

Cykrus sniffled a bit and then spat towards Ecliptic Mania who was disappearing in golden light.

“Scent of the Demon...You were the one who caused the trouble below.”

‘Fucking immortal bastard. Does he even know what’s below that place.’

Cykrus grinded his teeth as he looked at the man disappearing in front of him with a cold expression.

.....

Rumble.

“Ugh...”

Christopher looked around his surroundings.

He could only see zombies now.

All the decent players had escaped and the weaker ones had been logged out.

He had realized on the way here but these things were no pushovers.

That was why the bug killer's formation had been broken apart.

He wasn't sure about how many of these guys he would need to deal with on the way down.

As Christopher stared at the wave of zombies filling in the space cleaned up by the bug killers in a daze.

Hansoo spoke towards Christopher.

“We're going down now. You have a skill to find the path right? Go. Find the road to the 2nd floor.”

This place was a maze.

He would find it eventually but it would be faster for somebody who had a tracker type skill.

Hansoo finished his words and headed forward.

Towards the hundreds of infected soldiers.

‘What is he going to do...’

As Christopher and the others were making confused expressions.

Kyaaaaak!

“Shit!”

The people, who had been focused onto Hansoo, freaked out at the screams from their surroundings and then looked around.

This was not the time to be in a daze.

They needed to carry their own weight if they didn’t want to become baggage.

Then.

Boooooom!

“Huh?”

Everyone turned around subconsciously at the huge explosive sound.

And then freaked out.

Hundreds of soldiers had been blown apart.

A tunnel of corpses created by dead zombie soldiers.

And Hansoo who was letting off steam from his entire body.

‘He didn’t use this before...He was holding back his strength huh...’

Christopher stuttered at the tremendous change that had occurred in such a short moment and asked.

“Wha..What..What is that?”

“I tried altering it a bit.”

Kiiiiiiiiing!

Everyone flinched as they saw the two dragons which had started to swirl around the tip of the spear with a strange noise.

# Chapter 228 : God's Destruction Maul (3)

---

The incident of the Great Maze had long been spread.

Cykrus, the great general who had penetrated the immortal and killed him, grinded his teeth.

‘...Damned bastards. They dared to use immortals?’

The ones who were behind this damned incident were not the immortals.

Since it was clear who had done it.

There's no way a group of people who weren't serious and lived without a purpose would do something like this.

To create a bomb using a spirit stone.

‘The seal will break at this rate.’

He wanted to charge in there and fix the situation.

Since it was possible with his strength.

Strength that the immortals couldn't even dream of.

The epitome of strength, the result of decades of work.

This strength, which enabled him to become a great general, would more than be enough.

‘But...I can’t.’

Cykrus clenched his fist and looked towards the territory of the Korin kingdom in the distance.

Well, the soldier training program that was going on over there.

He could see his eternal rival managing over the training at the top of the castle.

The one who defended the Korin kingdom to the end.

Great General, Dal-Taran.

Dal-Taran was watching him from the top of the castle.

With an expression that told him he would charge in the moment he himself did something.

And that guy would definitely do so with his personality.

Actually the change which occurred with the appearance of the

Great Maze was more than enough to attract the attention of the Korin kingdom and many other kingdoms.

As Cykrus grinded his teeth.

An aide de camp next to him spoke.

“How are you going to managedo this? About the issue below?”

Cykrus pondered for a bit and then spoke out.

“We hold this spot until support comes.”

The aide, Apsius, nodded at the general’s words.

If they went down to deal with the maze than even a larger problem will befall charge onto the War Fortress.

Apsius asked another question.

“What should we do about the one who caused the issue?”

A vein popped out on Cykrus’s forehead from Apsius’s words.

“Fucking immortals.”



To them, he and the others were merely imaginary existences.

They could play with them and even kill them.

This was why they were doing such things.

People who would blow up a bomb that would end the lives of hundreds of lives of guards just for because of a few coins.

Look at what they were doing now as well.

He and the other NPCs were busy and wary of a war occurring but the players who filled up the plaza were busy staring at him.

“Woah! Great General!”

“Shall we try talking to him? He might give a quest.”

“Hey mister! I don’t know what’s going on but if there’s something you need to do then just ask us! We’ll do it for you!”

“Yeah! You just need to reward us!”

Countless words such as that were flowing into the ears of Cykrus.

‘Fucking bugs. You want to help?’

He wanted to crush those people who were showing off their meager strength.

But he could not.

Since their immortality and their large numbers prevented him from doing so.

‘But...There is indeed something I can do.’

If they had come to enjoy this place then he would make it as painful as possible.

Cykrus racked his brain a bit and then spoke to Apsius.

“Put out a wanted notice for the one who blew up the bomb.”

“Which level?”

“Level 1.”

Apsius flinched.

The wanted notice would have a level depending on the crime.

And the highest level the Great General could lay down was Level 1.

Being right below Special level, this level would cause all royalty of the kingdom to always be wary of the criminal and even send allied nations the notice.

Nothing would be usable.

Inn, stores and even amenities.

They would have to roam the world for eternity.

It was the highest degree of punishment that they could inflict onto the immortals.

“...We will ask for the Korin Kingdom to cooperate as well.”

“Of course.”

That guy probably thought the Korin Kingdom would back him up but that was not the case.

If the Korin Kingdom's guys had brains then they would actually chase the immortal even harder for the reward money.

They would also do so in order to hide the links they had with

this situation.

‘I’ll let it pass with this for now.’

Dealing with the maze was more urgent right now.

“Seal the maze and prevent anyone from entering! Ask the capital for the magic army reinforcement!”

Cykrus glared at the Korin Kingdom’s castle walls and then jumped towards his own castle.

.....

“Which way do I have to go?”

With those words a translucent arrow appeared in front of Christopher.

Towards a path filled with infected soldiers.

Christopher shouted out loudly.

“That way!”

Then.

Whooosh!

Hansoo activated the Nine Dragons Spear.

Ooooooong.

The mana jade cried out as if it was asking Hansoo if he was going to use it again.

It had to.

Since so much pressure was put on the mana jade just for using this skill once, to the point of it almost breaking.

But thankfully for the mana jade, what it had been worrying about hadn't happened.

Ooooooong!

A bit of the mana that came out from the mana jade rushed through his body and created a single dragon.

It was the same up to this point as before when Hansoo had escaped.

Then a second dragon came out.

Oooooooooooooong!

The mana jade and his heart both cried out in shock.

That he would die at this rate.

But Hansoo hadn't activated the Nine Dragons Spear to die.

The moment those two dragons reached the tip of the spear.

Hansoo focused his entire mana and mental strength to control the Nine Dragons Spear.

He suppressed the skill from creating a third dragon and then controlled it to follow his own will.

Crunch! Crrunnch!

The spell of the Nine Dragons Spear that had been embedded into his body tried to gather in any way possible but Hansoo quickly suppressed it.

Soon.

Oooong.

The activation of the skill stopped and the two dragons that had been on the tip of the spear moved forward.

Roaaarrr!

“Jesus...”

The people who had been staring from behind looked at it while flinching as if they still hadn't gotten used to it.

A tremendous might.

Every single soldier took time to kill but he was massacring them in hundreds.

And it seemed like an ultimate skill to them at first but they soon realized that it wasn't.

Since it was the third time that skill came out.

Thanks to this, they were running towards the entrance to the 2nd floor at a extreme speed.

“Uh...Isn't it better to destroy that gem first before we move?”

Christopher asked while running and panting.

Hansoo, with his skills, might've been able to break that gem and they wouldn't have had to run with such hurry like this.

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

Breaking it was hard and there was no reason to break it.

A situation like this where entering the maze was blocked, there was nothing bad for him.

It was better the less players he saw.

Since they were all potential enemies.

Crunch!

Hansoo forcibly fixed his body which had slightly gotten twisted from using the weaker Nine Dragons Spear and then checked his stats for the first time in a very long time.

[Kang Hansoo]

Strength (Green) : 0.6%

Stamina (Green) : 0.6%

Agility (Green) : 0.6%

Perception (Green) : 0.6%



Mana (Green) : 0.6%

Magic (Green) : 0.6%

Physical Resistance (Green) : 0.6%

Magic Resistance (Green) : 0.6%

+Level 201

#### <Skills>

-Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement : 61.5%

-Pandemic Blade : 44.8%

-Nine Dragons Spear: 6.1%

#### <Artifacts>

-Forked Lightning (Green) : 0.6%

-Nurmaha's Ring (Green) : 0.6%

-Thousand Soldiers Armor (Green) : 0.6%

-Dark Cloud (Green) : 0.6%

-Dragon Essence Blade (Green) : 0.6%

-Mana Jade (Green) : 0.6%

#### <Trait>

-Fragments of Seven Souls (3/7)

Hansoo finished checking his stats and then nodded.

Since it was the same as what he had guessed.

The runes were replaced with experience in this world.

So if one's experience points rose, their runes rose as well.

Along with the growing artifacts such as the Dragon Essence Blade.

A factor that was a positive point of this damned world.

Of course killing other adventurers and beasts wasn't the only way to raise one's exp.

Killing players, like PKing, rose it as well.

This was the reason why his experience points rose quickly.

'It's not bad. The Nine Dragons Spear is good as well.'

Hansoo checked something the moment he came up.

As to whether he could use a weaker version of the Nine Dragons Spear.

The power was one thing but it was too risky, if he used this and there was even a single enemy nearby he would be in danger.

A single, ultimate skill.

If he couldn't kill then he would die.

But to use it as an ultimate skill was such a waste of its strength.

Even if one said the terms 'go hard or go home' to him, it was the same as having a blade that could slay a dragon but waiting for a dragon to appear.

So he had tried to alter it.

To twist it around and make a weaker version.

It might've been hard for normal people but due to his trait, his powerful body and his skill at controlling mana, he might've been able to use one or two of them separately.

And the result was a success.

Ooooong!

‘This much backlash and this much power... It’s worth using.’

Hansoo calmed down the Mana Jade that was still trembling as if it was still in rage and then mumbled.

Of course just because he separated one dragon from a total of nine it wasn’t like he got one ninth of the original strength.

It was actually much weaker.

But it was still a blade that could kill dragons.

A destructive force that wasn’t even comparable to the Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement.

If there was one downside then it was its mastery level.

‘It rose to 6.1% when I used it once...It barely rises when I use it’s weaker version huh.’

He saw the mastery level, which had risen quickly, and thought that he would’ve been able to master it using the weaker version but it seems he had been expecting too much.

It was probably because he had forcibly altered a skill to use one to two dragons instead of nine as a whole.

But Hansoo suppressed his disappointment, put another dragon onto the tip of the spear and then attacked.

This power that could split the earth and flip it apart was more than enough.

Boooooom!

A single dragon exploded out as numerous tens of soldiers turned into meat pastes.

And Christopher made a confused expression.

It was still strong but it was much weaker than when two dragons existed.

‘Why one at a time? Is he tired out already?’

There were still tons of infected soldiers around, things would become annoying if this continued.

Booom!

Christopher smashed away the soldier rushing in and then shouted towards Hansoo.

“If you’re tired then we’ll guard you so recover your mana! We can buy some time...”

But Hansoo shook his head.

He understood why Christopher was worrying but there was a different reason why he had only used one dragon.

“We’re here already.”

“Oh!”

The people shouted in glee as they saw the strange orb surrounded by corpses of infected soldiers.

The location to go down to the 2nd floor.

But Christopher’s mind turned heavy.

The moment he saw their target location, the thoughts of people chasing him were brought back up.

Christopher asked Hansoo.

“The bug killers will chase us. How are...”

Hansoo cut him off and shook his head.

“It’ll be fine for a while. Do you know what the current situation of the War Fortress is like?”

Ellenoia and Christopher nodded.

The first thing they had done when they got here was gathering information.

If he knew that this place, the Bellum War Fortress, was like a ammunition storage that was about to explode then he would’ve never come here.

Everything started from the land next to the Bellum War Fortress.

‘Spirit land.’

The hunting ground which had been released after the 5th patch and had turned this place into the hottest place.

Christopher thought of the conflicts he had in his mind.

# Chapter 229 : God's Destruction Maul (4)

---

The War Fortress.

A location that had become one of the hottest places after the 5th patch.

Countless players rode on the warp gate to come to this place and hunted on the Spirit Land located near the Bellum War Fortress and completed the quests prepared for them by Exodus.

The difficulty was high and it hadn't been long since it came out so there was a lack of information about it but this actually encouraged the players even more.

Since the game Exodus wasn't petty in rewarding pioneers.

Well, it was more being extravagant than not being petty.

To the point of Bellum War Fortress and even other kingdoms giving out quests for those rewards.

And if someone received enough honors then they could even own land.

A location which had plenty reasons to attract players.

Exodus showed off a tremendously large world and had plenty of



places where high level players over 200 could play other than this.

The <Ancient Relic Site> in the Imperial Capital and the <Fallen Kingdom> outside the kingdom were part of those locations as well.

Famous hunting grounds for the level 200s to level up and for the few max level 250 master players.

Of course these locations which had decades of struggle and hard work invested in by players with clear information and guides were much more attractive than some mysterious land such as the Spirit Land.

But there was a specific reason why this place, the Spirit Land, attracted so many people.

<Spirit Stone>

This stone, which only dropped in the Spirit Land at a very low drop rate was very sought after amongst players.

It had the ability to enchant gear and even enhance skills.

The S grade Spirit Stones that could enhance master artifacts for level 250s were so expensive that the people who wanted to sell them could basically say any price they wanted and people would

still buy them.

In order to find the Spirit Stones from the two <Spirit Lands>, the players crawled into them over and over again.

To the damned lands that they could only enter after using the Protection Elixir from the <Great Maze of the Ains> of the 5th patch.

It was extremely dangerous but the danger was worth it.

And it didn't only apply to players.

'This is what is causing the problem.'

Hansoo thought of the Spirit Stones and mumbled.

The Kingdoms which were inhabited by NPCs wanted these as well.

Even more than players.

Unlike the players who were just trying to enhance their personal strength, the Kingdoms could use various magical techniques without limits so it was very useful for them.

The problem was that the Keil Kingdom was basically in control

of most of these Spirit Stones.

Since the Spirit Lands were large, multiple Kingdoms were involved but the Protection Elixirs that allowed one to get in these could only be gotten from the Keil Kingdom.

Of course the seven other Kingdoms wouldn't like this system.

And because of this, the Korin and Keil Kingdoms who were at peace for over a hundred years started to get antsy with each other and countless war-related quests appeared in the Bellum War Fortress.

And war-related quests were very sought after by players because it gave achievement points and were related to owning land.

Because of the two Kingdom's relations, war-related quests appeared which further caused countless players to swarm around the first castle wall in order to receive these quests.

War could blow out any given moment.

Since the price of Spirit Stones was too high for a single country to monopolize them.

Of course the war had already begun.

With the terror incident of the maze.

‘Well. It did indeed blow up a year earlier but it’s not that bad.’

Chaos could cause danger but it could also be an opportunity.

If he could achieve his goals from this chaos then what Clementine’s forces had done would’ve just helped him.

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then shouted while looking at the 5m-wide azure marble.

“Be careful with your words just in case after you jump in!”

“Hmm?”

The people made confused expressions but even before they could ask, Hansoo jumped in.

Towards the entrance down to the 2nd floor.

And the people who were watching this grinded their teeth as they followed Hansoo in one by one.

Whooooosh!

Whoosh!

And soon.

The azure marble absorbed all those people and these tens of people disappeared from the 1st floor of the maze without a single trace.

<Kuuoooooooo!>

The infected soldiers only screamed at the disappearance of these people, they didn't have any thoughts of chasing them.

Then they started to split up to oversee other parts of the maze and silence filled the area around the marble.

.....

Whoooooosh!

‘Ugh...This doesn't really feel that great.’

As Christopher frowned at the sensation of sticky liquids swirling around his body.

Whoooooosh!

“Huupp!”

Christopher's body popped out from the marble and floated up into the air.

'I'm out!'

Christopher found his balance in mid air as he lightly landed onto the ground.

Then the words of Hansoo came into Christopher's ears.

"These are my comrades."

Christopher tensed up at Hansoo's words.

'...Others?'

And as he looked around he saw hundreds of people watching him.

He was shocked.

'So this is what he meant by being careful with our words...'

The players who had been hunting in the 2nd floor started to throw questions at Hansoo.

"What is this? What happened above?"

“Fuck! I can’t communicate with my friend who went up!”

“I heard the infected soldiers revived?”

Hansoo shook his head at these questions.

“I’m sorry, I don’t know very well as well. I hurriedly ran down here with my friends. We were resupplying in the supply zone and this had happened.”

“Ugh...”

The people then started to talk between themselves.

“Shit...Did the gem recover?”

“I hope somebody can just smash it apart.”

“Yo? Do you wanna try it out? We might get a ton of rewards for breaking it. The ones who broke it first got a lot too.”

“Ha. You want to get killed huh.”

Christopher felt the difference between him and these players once again as he listened to them.

For him and others, it was a deathly crisis.

But for them it was a chance that they might take.

The people then spoke to Hansoo again.

“We’re going to join hands and go up, how about you?”

Hansoo replied instantly.

“I have friends below. We had split up to resupply.”

“Oh then...”

“We’ll have to go down. Well... We didn’t have the time to get our bags because of the chaos but we still have to go help them.”

The players who had been looking at Hansoo’s group suspiciously then started to look away.

They were wondering why these guys were moving around in a small group but such cases were possible.

Actually, it was common for a small group to rejoin after resupplying with potions and other necessities while the larger group held a spot below.



This was because the damned game didn't provide inventory and made everyone carry bags.

The players started to lose interest and said their goodbyes.

“Well. Stay strong. We'll just do a quest or two if we get the chance to on the way then!”

“Ugh. This is annoying. I used all my extra revival scrolls below.”

“There's nothing bad about it. There'll be more quests above so come on.”

The players started to head towards the marble leading back up casually one by one.

And Christopher's underlings started to fall down one by one as if they finally started to relax.

They had been too tensed up from all that had happened.

‘Fucking hell. A mafia game\* where we die if we get caught.’

Ellenoia, Christopher's right hand, breathed in and out and asked Hansoo while she calmed herself down.

“Why do we even have to go down while doing all this? What's

below...”

Though Christopher’s group was following Hansoo, Ellenoia still didn’t understand why Hansoo was going down like this.

She had gathered a large amount of information when she had first come to this world.

Since that was what she had done before anyway.

People found the hidden race and could receive Protection Elixirs from them.

It was a small but huge change.

Since this gave people the chance to acquire the godly item, <Spirit Stone>.

But there were not many reasons for them to go down.

Since they could just accomplish quests from other places and buy the Protection Elixirs with gold.

As Hansoo heard Ellenoia’s words, he decided to let these people understand to a degree.

To a degree.

“My trait is for something like this. I can feel it.”

“...”

“Don’t worry. I’ve never been wrong until now.”

A strange expression appeared on Ellenoia’s face but then soon disappeared.

“Phew...”

Ellenoia sighed out loud.

If somebody else told her such things and tried to take her down to the depths of hell then she might’ve smashed their face in.

But she had already heard the crazy things that man had said and had accomplished after them.

‘Well, we don’t really have a choice anyway....Well, he really has a lot of fascinating things about him.’

As Ellenoia watched Hansoo with a strange expression.

Ooooong!

The marble trembled and the people who had gone in came back out.

While cursing with nervous expressions.

“Fucking hell!”

“Damn!”

Ellenoia made a shocked expression as she saw the hundreds of people coming back out from the marble.

‘Why did they come back like this? With such shocked expressions? Did something happen other than what we know about?’

It wasn’t that strange for something else to happen.

Since the moment the infected soldiers appeared, the land above had turned into a mysterious land.

Ellenoia asked the group who had jumped out.

“What happened?”

“Well you see...”

But before the player could even answer.

Crunch!

A spear flew out from Hansoo's hand and pierced the player's head.

Ellenoia shouted at Hansoo's actions from shock.

“What...”

‘Why the hell did he attack first!’

Though they had been found out already, the time for the information to propagate was another story.

Like how they had been successful at hiding their identities just now.

Collisions were better the less there were but for Hansoo to suddenly attack like that.

Hansoo tsked and replied at Ellenoia's words.

“We've been caught already.”

“Huh?”

As Ellenoia looked around.

The hundreds of players who had come back down cursed out loud.

“Heh, fucking bastard’s quite quick isn’t he.”

“Damned bug players. Isn’t this a hack as well? We really need to get rid of them.”

As Christopher and Ellenoia were shocked at the news.

Hansoo mumbled inwardly.

‘...They acted faster than I expected huh. On the blacklist already.’

Blacklist.

A kill list managed by the bug killer clan, <Anteaters>.

Then.

Oooooong.

Bright red powder started to gather around Hansoo's body.

# Chapter 230 : God's Destruction Maul (5)

---

“Mmm.”

Flame Warrior-V looked at the magnificent blacklist entry he had created with pride.

Countless comments appeared below the extremely detailed entry which even included a video.

[Woah! Amazing. What armor is that?]

[His spear and skills are amazing too. Why has nobody found him before? Has anyone seen him before?]

[Our lives could flip for the better if we catch him. We might even be able to buy an entire house if we sell his stuff to some rich boys.]

[His control is fucking beyond hacking. Clearly a hacker. Damn, the hacks these days are good.]

[Hey! He's in the Great Maze! Let's go get him!]

[Ugh! They've blocked the entrance at the moment. The ones inside really hit a jackpot huh.]

Flame Warrior-V smiled from the reaction.



‘Good. Perfect.’

Blackist.

A killer list sent out by the <Anteater> group.

It wasn’t much.

They would just upload somebody’s name and an image to a site anybody could access and spread the information.

It was a list created in case the bug killers lost their target.

Once somebody appeared on that list, they would get chased by everyone in Exodus.

Until they die.

‘Now... It doesn’t matter whether you’re a player or a bug player.’

The important thing was fucking him over.

The blacklist was more than enough.

Since somebody's name in the blacklist would stay until they died once.

A rumor about somebody being a bug player would spread extremely quickly but information clearing their name would not spread as fast.

As a result the player would die tens of times over and even more if they were unlucky, there was no better revenge than this.

And because he could get cursed at a lot for this he didn't put up names randomly but it was different for somebody like him.

For him to cause this much damage as well as being suspicious.

Since there were so many witnesses, the job had been accomplished quickly and this was the result.

Flame Warrior-V laughed coldly as he looked at the views that were increasing super quickly.

Even if he survived down below, he would die eventually.

But as Flame Warrior-V was laughing in contentment.

Ring!

A strange noise rang out and a message arrived for Flame Warrior-V.

‘What is this?’

Flame Warrior-V opened up the message with a confused expression and then suddenly the color was drained from his face.

‘Clan master?’

Though they were in the same clan, there was a huge difference in rank between him and the clan master.

Flame Warrior-V made a terrified expression as he looked at the message that he had just received.

.....

“Fuck!”

Booom!

Crunch!

Christopher clenched his teeth and swung his sword at the players who were attacking him.

If only he hadn't been turned into a mess by the bug killers and players who chased him.

As he was bleeding, countless people were charging towards him.

People who didn't have any fear since they didn't have to fear death.

If he didn't know they were going after him and had been ambushed then he might not even be standing here like this.

Booom!

Crunch!

Christopher smashed apart a head of a player charging towards him with a short sword and the grinded his teeth.

'Blacklist, such a thing existed?'

The final tactic of the bug killers who loved monopolizing things.

With this, they would forever become runaways.

Until they left this damned place.

'No, I shouldn't worry about this.'

There were blades coming for his neck at this instant.

As Christopher rebalanced himself and was about to attack the next person charging at him.

Whooooosh.

The red cloud around Christopher suddenly spread in all directions.

‘Huaaak!’

Christopher freaked out at the cloud which had appeared without a trace.

He sensed it due to being sensitive to mana.

He felt the viciousness and mana within every molecule which made up the cloud.

It felt like being thrown into a pit full of man eating ants.

And as he looked around.

“Uuuu.....”

“Huuk.”

His comrades, who were sensitive to the deadly aura, were shaking from head to toe even while fighting.

And the players mumbled with confused expressions.

“Huh? Did something happen? Why are they like this?”

“Keke. Maybe they finally figured out what is going on.”

Christopher cursed out as he looked at the players who were charging in ruthlessly.

The players, who couldn't detect the deadliness of the strange powder, were wary at first but soon realized it wasn't harmful as they charged through the cloud.

‘Fuck. Thank god their perception is so dull.’

If something like this surrounded somebody, it was normal to have difficulty even moving.

Since it felt like their entire body would melt down and disintegrate the moment they moved.

One could clearly see where this red cloud originated from.

But the deathly aura within this powder did not reassure them at all.

It was as if this was the end result of something created for one objective, it was like mass murder having a physical incarnation.

His entire body shook as floods of sweat ran down his entire body and his instincts literally screamed at him to run the hell away from this.

‘Ugh...’

But Christopher groaned as he moved his arm.

There was nowhere to run and he couldn’t just die by getting hit by a blade while standing still.

The problem was that his reaction was too slow.

Chwaaaak!

“Oh yeah! This artifact is mine!”

A player had already arrived before him and had smashed down his axe.

It was too hard to block and the enemy was too close for him to dodge.

Christopher clenched his teeth at the axe that was approaching him and then raised his right arm.

He couldn't give up his life this easily.

‘Fuck. For me to lose my life this easily...’

Christopher made a helpless expression while lifting his arm.

For his sensitive perception, which had saved his life countless times until now, to have failed him this time.

If he wasn't able to sense the deathly aura like the players then he wouldn't have turned out like this.

Crunch!

As the axe broke through the armor on Christopher's arm and was about to dig into his flesh.

Shaaaaaaak.

The red cloud which had extended out from Hansoo's body started to madly stick onto the bodies of players.



Only the players.

Chwaaat!

“Huh?”

Even before the players could voice their shock from the red cloud which had suddenly stuck onto them.

Swoooooosh.

The player's entire bodies started to melt.

Starting from the right hand of the player who had swung his axe to cut off Christopher's arm.

To the legs of the players who had been charging towards him to stop the monopolization.

The players stopped as they saw their bodies melting down, finally realized the situation and started to scream out.

“Uwaaaaak!”

“What the fuck! What the hell is this!”

“Even if he’s hacking this is too much!”

The players cursed out as they saw their bodies disintegrating and disappearing.

Every time the red powder dug in, their bodies turned more and more golden and disappeared.

The screams only lasted a moment.

Chwaaaarrrrk.

Even before a second was up, their bodies all disappeared with a golden flash.

Everyone who had filled up the space around the azure marble which connected the 1st and 2nd floors of the maze had disappeared.

Only Hansoo and the other adventurers had been left.

Pat.

As Christopher and the other adventurers watched the players disappear, their legs all gave out and they fell onto their butts.

It wasn’t because the players had disappeared.

It was because they felt like they had escaped the mouth of a terrifying beast as the red powder which had filled this entire space disappeared.

“Haa....”

“Phew....”

As Christopher and Ellenoria sighed out loud, the other adventurers sighed out as well as if they had returned to reality and everyone then turned to look at Hansoo.

He looked quite tired as if there was a bit of strain on his mana but he still looked healthy.

Christopher asked himself in confusion.

‘...That strange dragon alone was amazing but what the hell is this. Where the hell do you get skills like this.’

The amount of mana he had to use that skill was amazing but the skill itself was terrifying.

If one could have the same result just by pouring in mana then the players wouldn’t have fought head over heels for good skills.

‘Did that trait of his guide him? To the places where he could get

them?’

Suddenly Christopher felt sad.

If he had such strength or had the ability which guided him to places with such rewards then he would’ve been much stronger than now and could’ve done much more.

But he soon shook his head.

The strong weren’t created from luck.

Since the ones who got strong by luck were merely fertilizer for the truly strong.

Only those who can smash through danger with their own abilities and jump into such dangers in order to proceed could capture such rewards and become somebody strong.

Like a single powerful blade which had been tempered tens of thousands of times.

For him to be jealous of his trait when he couldn’t even fathom where that man had gone to in order to earn those skills and that power.

‘Even if I knew, could I have done it?’

Christopher shook his head as he looked at Hansoo.

It was impossible for himself, he always found the safest paths since he was afraid of death.

Even if he knew the answer.

Knowing the path and going through the path were two completely different things.

‘But... I should be able to follow him around and help him.’

As Christopher got up from his spot and looked around.

Something squirmed and got up.

While making a strange noise.

“Hhuuuuuuuhhhh...”

Christopher’s eyebrows twitched.

It was not his comrade.

Which means it was a player.

‘Somebody’s still alive huh.’

Hansoo might not have been able to finish him off because he didn’t have mana.

Since he looked quite tired after using that skill.

But it didn’t matter.

‘I can finish him off.’

Clank.

Christopher clenched onto his short sword and then headed towards the person who was squirming in the distance.

Then.

The one who had been groaning suddenly stood up as he looked at Christopher and shouted

“Woah woah woah! Wait! Wait! No! I’m not a player! Isn’t that why you didn’t kill me?”

“...?”

‘...Adventurer? He’s one of us?’

Christopher frowned as he looked at the man speaking out.

Hansoo made a shocked expression.

‘An unexpected catch.’

It was clear where this adventurer came from if he was hiding his identity here.

<Ant tunnel>

As Hansoo mumbled and looked at the adventurer who was probably a part of that clan.

Rumble.

A faint tremor rang throughout the maze.

Then.

Oooooong.

‘....Great Magic Formation?’

Hansoo frowned as he looked at the skull in his possession which had started to shine.



# Chapter 231 : The Great Seal (1)

---

Hansoo watched the man standing up while dusting himself off.

He could sense anybody within the red powder.

So he knew.

That this man was not a player.

Since there was no player who would've trembled from head to toe from the deathly aura.

One's deathly aura was created for survival and to threaten others.

One who hadn't been in life threatening situations couldn't squeeze out proper a deadly aura.

This was why the players had a hard time distinguishing adventurers but adventurers could figure each other out quite quickly.

Since they just needed to know if somebody had a deadly aura or reacted to one.

The man in front of his eyes spoke with an uncomfortable expression.

“...What are you going to do with me?”

He had seen a lot of people in his life.

And he was clear about one thing.

That even other adventurers did not guarantee his safety.

There were a lot of ways to survive in this world.

And the ones who are confident in surviving will only face more hardships.

Which increased the weaker they were compared to the other party.

The man who had been staring at Christopher and Hansoo, Abanoph, clenched his teeth and spoke.

“Please just let me go. I was merely pretending to be a player within the other players.”

It was different for other places but one thing was clear for those who were at the Green Zone.

Respect each other's territory.

Because they had to hide from the players, there was nothing good for them if they interacted or fought with each other.

Of course grouping up wasn't good as well.

Since it was easier to get caught if they stuck together.

Pretending to not have seen each other.

Pretending to not notice each other.

They survived until the next zone like this.

Until they reached the logout zone.

‘Or calmly stay trapped in here like me forever.’

Abanoph sighed as he looked at the man in front of his eyes.

This much strength was more than enough to become a formidable force in their village.

But for him to be with people on the blacklist.

Even if these guys had multiple tens of lives, it wouldn't be

enough.

Nobody in this world wanted to interact with somebody on the blacklist.

Since it was not something they could live through even if they fought together.

They would just die together.

It would be for the better for them to mind their own business and to just go the way they were going.

Christopher raised his short sword towards Abanoph.

“Where do you think you’re going?”

This man was suspicious.

Everything from the fact that he was hiding within the players as an adventurer to roaming around this Great Maze.

‘This guy’s up to something.’

As Christopher aimed his short sword at Abanoph, his surviving underlings surrounded Abanaoph as well.

And Abanoph sighed as he looked at Christopher.

‘It’s always the weaker ones.’

Abanoph looked at Christopher with an expression telling Christopher that he was being insolent.

For him to raise his weapon against himself while being hurt like that.

It had been over a year and a half since he had broken through the Green Road and arrived at this place.

These guys were just about level 200.

To him, who was at level 215, they were merely cute.

Even more so because hints of being an adventurer came out from each of their movements.

He would win against such a group of weak people any day.

The issue was the other guy.

Abanoph cautiously spoke towards Hansoo.

“Please deal with these guys. Speak quickly if you want

something. Stop watching from the side please.”

Hansoo spoke out.

“Are you from the Ant Tunnel?”

The moment Abanoph heard the words Ant Tunnel.

He flinched and then his expression turned into one of rage.

“...You bastard. You knew already huh...”

Ant Tunnel.

Its existence alone shouldn't be known.

Since it was the final sanctuary for adventurers who could not run away anymore.

Christopher watched the reaction of Abanoph and Hansoo, figured out the reason and then made a shocked face.

‘...That was real?’

He had heard the rumors.

That there was a place here where bug players lived together.

He had thought it was a fake rumor since nobody had found it yet but for it to be true.

Christopher spoke towards Abanoph who was glaring at them with a tremendous amount of animosity.

“Why are you so angry? We’re being chased around like you as well. Aren’t we comrades?”

“Comrades huh.”

Abanoph smirked.

Though there may be rumors, the members of Ant Tunnel were extremely careful about their existence.

Even with other adventurers.

Since it was not an oasis for all adventurers.

The only ones who could come into the Ant Tunnel were those who were strong and whom people like Abanoph himself, the <Watchmen>, judged worthy.

Of course not having been caught by the Bug Killers was obvious.

But for people on the blacklist to know the existence of his village.

He could not go to the village with these people.

‘Shit. Where did we leak the intel?’

Abanoph clenched his hands, gulped down his saliva and then glared at Hansoo.

If they even knew the name then it was pointless trying to fake it.

Abanoph suddenly started to breathe in a rough manner while looking for an opportunity to leave.

“Phew. Fuck.”

‘There are no open spots. Fuck.’

He had thought he might be able to leave with his movement artifact, <Dark Destruction>.

Since he had thought that the powerful man had used quite a lot of mana from the previous skill.

But it was a huge miscalculation.



The moment he tried to run away, a part of his body would've been pierced.

Abanoph continued to breath roughly as he carefully asked Hansoo.

“...What do you want?”

Abanoph was ready to commit suicide.

The Players treated this as a game so they didn't do anything harsh such as torture.

But adventurers were different.

Since his opponent treated him as a human, they could be much more vicious to him.

But Hansoo merely shook his head towards the man.

“Nothing. Just go.”

“....!”

Abanoph flinched at that unexpected answer.

He had thought that this man would've tried to gain some intel out of him.

Even more so since he was an adventurer who had gotten onto the blacklist and needed a place to hide.

But that was for somebody who needed to hide and not for Hansoo who was going to cause even greater problems.

Ant Tunnel.

Those who hid in the corners of this Great Maze in order to survive.

He didn't know where they hid or how strong they were.

People who were stronger than his expectation might be hiding there or a small elite group might be there.

This was why they weren't a part of his plan.

He couldn't plan something out with such an unstable factor.

'Well. It doesn't seem like he would take us to the village... He wouldn't fight for us even if we drag him in.'

Hansoo thought up to this point and emptied his thoughts about

Ant Tunnel.

He didn't have time for this.

“We'll leave so be careful.”

Hansoo, as he was about to walk away, whispered to the man Abanoph.

“It seems like you're a watchman so go back to the village and report this. Increase the number of watchmen, it'll become more dangerous from now on.”

“...!”

Abanoph first made a shocked expression at Hansoo's words and then made a helpless expression.

Knowing the name of the village was one thing but for him to even know the social structure.

‘...What the hell.’

Abanoph pondered for a moment and then started to run away towards a direction.

Christopher carefully asked Hansoo while watching Abanoph

running away.

“Aren’t we going to chase?”

As long as one had a home, they would return to it.

And though he didn’t know what that ‘home’ was, it would be a useful place for them to hide temporarily at.

Since it was clear how good they were at hiding from the fact that they hadn’t been caught up until now.

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

“He won’t go back to the village right away. He would take a tremendous detour. Or use a different method of communication.”

“True...”

“We’re going down.”

Christopher saw Hansoo stand up as he created the arrow in his hand again.

This arrow would easily allow him to find the way down to the next floor.

Elenoia whispered to Christopher with an expression of reassurance.

“It seems like things won’t be that dangerous at least. He’s really crazy. It seems like...It seems like the players won’t be an issue.”

Elenoia spoke while stealing a glance at Hansoo.

A man who had destroyed hundreds of players in just an instant while they had a hard time with merely a dozen or so.

Of course Hansoo looked tired from that feat as well but with this, there wouldn’t be collisions from players for a while.

And the fact that the maze’s 2nd, 3rd and 4th floors were easy, from what they heard at least, reassured her even more.

‘The players above won’t be able to come down that easily as well.’

Even if players rushed in because of him being in the blacklist, there was no way of them figuring out where they would be since this place was a maze.

And if they came in small groups, Hansoo would just deal with them.

Hansoo shook his head as he heard Elenoia’s whispers.

“Only the players inside this place.”

“...Huh?”

The ones who caused a threat were never the weaklings.

It was always the small amount of elites.

Ooooong.

Hansoo clutched the reverberating skull and then looked upwards to the ceiling of the maze.

.....

“What! Why won’t you let us in!”

“No entry! Go to other areas!”

“Fuck!”

Flame Warrior-V made a helpless expression as he was leading an entire group of bug killers.

“...What the hell.”

All the NPC forces who managed the War Fortress had surrounded the Great Maze.

Though they couldn't go in because they feared something but they were vigilant in keeping the entrance closed.

And the small magic brigades that came over from the capital over the Warp Gates were setting up countless suspicious looking magic seals all over the entrance of the maze.

And the players were in daze as they saw this.

“Woah. Horn of the Ainos. Such an expensive item...They're just grinding it and throwing it around...Should I just cause a bit of trouble and deal with it for those items?”

“You're crazy. Damn. When is the level limit going to be released? We can just do anything as long as we are caught up in level.”

The players joked around as they saw the countless artifacts and materials the magic brigade had brought but nobody could jump in.

And the mumbles of the crowd got louder.

“What the hell is in there for them to not allow us to pass

through?”

“I know right.”

The NPCs were using such expensive materials to reinforce the seal covering the maze.

They were trying to completely seal the inside.

As the people looked at the entrance of the Great Maze in question.

Flame Warrior-V watched the NPCs creating the strange formation around the Great Maze and made an expression of disbelief.

Level 330.

Arthus Krancheska.

An NPC who had been titled the greatest genius of the Kingdom and had risen to the position of the vice general of the magic bridge merely at the age of 35.

That guy was somebody who was rare to see unless something happened with other countries or kingdoms.



Flame Warrior-V wouldn't have known if he hadn't participated in the 3rd Great Kingdom War of the past.

He was the man who had burned away hundreds of players who had participated in the Kingdom quest with merely a wave of his hand.

If somebody like him went in then a problem will occur with the mission he had been given.

‘Even he came? What the hell is in there for somebody like him to go in...’

Flame Warrior-V mumbled quietly as he looked at Krancheska who was watching the surrounding players as if they were bugs and at the maze with rage.

## Chapter 232 : The Great Seal (2)

---

‘Anyways...Will I be able to enter at this rate?’

Flame Warrior-V had to get inside the maze first in order to accomplish the Clan Leader’s orders.

But Krancheska’s aura was too fierce.

As if he would burn him and his entire group alive if they tried to go in.

‘What is it for him to be so cautious...’

As Flame Warrior-V was in a daze.

Somebody stomped out from behind him.

Flame Warrior-V looked at the woman who had walked out with eyes full of jealousy and envy.

‘Mmm...Scarlet Demons.’

Flame Warrior-V thought of the blacklist he had activated as he watched the woman.

Even if he did activate the blacklist, it didn’t always work.

Even with the blacklist, there were a few players who didn't die.

Since the bug players who had reached the max level were extremely powerful.

And since these guys roamed around the places where normal players couldn't get into, they were even harder to catch.

So there was a special group created for them.

<Scarlet Demons>.

The hunting group located at the top of the six grades which existed in the <Ant Eaters>.

And the group he lead previously, <Azure Demons> was merely the third out of the six.

But Scarlet Demons was incomparable to his own group in terms of power.

Since the Scarlet Demon was a super elite hunting group created from 15 master players.

‘These guys were nearby huh.’

Flame Warrior-V gulped back his saliva as he looked at their weapons which shone with a strange red light.

These were probably the items enhanced with the Spirit Stones that he had heard about.

And the Scarlet Demons, consisting of master players, wouldn't have used bad spirit stones either.

They at least used ones that were A grades or even S grades that were rumored to be extremely hard to find.

‘...I heard the clan leader poured a lot of effort into this group.’

Flame Warrior-V mumbled as he looked at the artifacts of these people which shone brightly.

These were the ones who kept the pride of the bug killer clan <Anteaters>.

Once a bug player was found, they were not allowed to live.

They could not allow the bug players to escape their hands to laugh at them.

This was how the hunting group <Scarlet Demons> had been created.

Though it wasn't as efficient as it could be, it was created to defend their pride.

Of course their might was nothing to scoff at.

None of the prey that the normal players had missed escaped the hands of these guys.

The Scarlet Demons had come here.

And the second grade hunting troop who had the average level 230, the 3 groups of <Golden Demons>, was here as well.

And the woman who had walked out was the leader of the Scarlet Demons who was in charge of the 15 people in the Scarlet Demons and the 150 from the Golden Demons.

As Flame Warrior-V looked towards the female.

The leader of the Scarlet Demons, <Sharon Stiller>, spoke towards Flame Warrior-V.

“It'll be hard for you to persuade these NPCs by yourself. I'll talk from here onwards. I've already spoken to the clan leader.”

“Mmm...”

‘This is too much.’

A game where countless players existed.

Of course there was a lot of interest with this game and the higher level clans were similar to companies.

Of course there were secrets the normal clansmen did not know of.

Flame Warrior-V was curious about what it was so he looked towards Sharon Stiller with a curious expression but soon realized he wouldn't get an answer and quietly moved away.

Sharon Stiller thanked Flame Warrior-V slightly and then walked towards Arthus Krancheska.

Soon.

“Fucking hell...”

Arthus Krancheska made an extremely dissatisfied expression and handed over a bright blue pouch over after speaking to Sharon Stiller for a bit.

The moment Sharon Stiller received the pouch.

Arthus Krancheska pointed towards Flame Warrior-V's group and the Scarlet, Golden demons.

“...Only you guys come in. I allow you guys to move in.”

Then.

“What? Why not us!”

“Are you being biased!?”

“Give us quests too!”

Dissatisfied voices of surrounding players rang throughout the area.

They were going crazy because they wanted to go in but they had suddenly been enraged since only some were allowed in.

But the one who had been shocked the most was Flame Warrior-V.

‘Woah. He really allowed us to go in. What the hell did she say.’

She didn't even do much.

She merely spoke for a short moment.

But for Arthus to allow them in so easily.

Sharon Stiller walked towards Flame Warrior-V and the Scarlet Demons who were watching her with confused expressions and then spoke out.

“Let’s go in! To catch one fly!”

Flame Warrior-V, who had been standing in a daze, woke up from those words and quickly followed after her.

As everybody was heading into the maze.

Arthus Krancheska’s mumbles could be heard next to Sharon Stiller.

“Fuck...If it wasn’t for the curse then I would’ve gone in.”

“...?”

As Flame Warrior-V watched Arthus Krancheska who was glaring at him in dissatisfaction.

Sharon Stiller laughed towards Arthus Krancheska.

“Isn’t it nice. We’re dirtying our hands instead of you. It’s a win-



win situation for both of us. If we fail then come in instead of us.”

“ ... ”

Arthus Krancheska made an annoyed expression while watching Sharon Stiller and then turned around.

Sharon Stiller laughed in a strange manner as she watched Arthus Krancheska walk away and took Flame Warrior-V and other team members into the maze.

.....

Rumble!

The Forked Lightning in Hansoo’s hand exploded out as it flew towards the people who were charging towards him.

Kwaagagagaaak!

The players turned into golden lights as their vital spots were pierced by the spear and disappeared into thin air.

Only leaving behind curses.

“Fucking bastard! Isn’t he too strong even for somebody in the blacklist!?”

“Waaaak! Fuck!”

Whooosh.

Hansoo frowned as he looked at these players.

‘...I can’t drain any health from these players. Is it because they’re avatars and not real bodies?’

He should be able to drain energy from his enemies once he hit them with the Nurmaha’s ring for vampiric effects but the players were merely disappearing into golden light without giving him anything.

Of course it wasn’t like he was meeting players so strong or so numerous for it to become a problem but it was still saddening for him.

And even more so since it would become harder the deeper he went in and the more skilled players would appear.

Christopher, who had been leading the group with the arrow, suddenly shouted towards the orb in the distance.

“It’s over there! That’s the entrance to the third floor!”

Then.

Whooosh!

Hansoo charged forward and jumped into the marble and Christopher, Elenoia and the other members followed in.

Then.

“Haha! They came in!”

“Get them!”

Boooooom!

The players who had been waiting below poured in attacks from all directions.

“Is there something you need down here or something?”

“Why are you rushing like this? Are you guys retarded?”

If Hansoo decided to hide then even if he was on the blacklist, it would be annoying to find him in this large and complex maze.

But if they continued to climb down with an objective, things would change.

Since there weren't that many portals that lead to the floors below even in the wide Great Maze.

The hundreds of players who had been waiting by the entrance rushed in towards Hansoo and Christopher.

Oooong.

Hansoo pondered if he should squeeze the Mana Jade once more but felt the pressure the Mana Jade was in and then shook his head.

Since it hadn't been long since he used the red powder, he didn't have enough mana for it.

Hansoo decided to save some stamina and mana as he started to swing his spear.

And soon a clash between Hansoo and the surrounding players occurred.

Booom!

Crunch!

“Holy shit this bastard!”

“What the hell! Did he use the Spirit Stone? Why is his attack power so high!?”

The players, who were generally weaker, died off constantly but they still charged towards Hansoo like a swarm of ants.

This was why the players were fearsome.

Those who feared death would be scared even if a few were killed.

But since these guys didn't fear death, they charged in like moths to a flame.

Even if it was incredibly inefficient, the players made sure to leave behind a tiny damage onto Hansoo's body before they died.'

Hansoo frowned as he sensed the injuries that were stacking onto his body.

'This isn't good.'

If he really decided to hide around and break through the groups of players while recovering then he would be able to break through them with ease.

No, he would be able to massacre everyone within the Great Maze.

But if he dragged on like that then something from above might come down.

‘This much magic suppression...They are very strong.’

He needed to deal with it before those guys didn’t come down because of the <Curse of the Ains> applied onto the entire Great Maze finally came.

Crunch!

“Fuck! He’s really strong. Shit!”

“Ugh! Should I have not come?”

Despite countless players dying, they were charging in while laughing.

Hansoo mumbled towards these guys.

‘Enjoy it for now.’

While Hansoo was reducing the player’s numbers while thinking of the infected soldiers above.

A leg of the adventurer who had been fighting behind Hansoo

flew off.

He had accidentally let go of an open spot in his defense because he couldn't handle the countless attacks.

There was a limit to how much fatigue they could handle from the battle since their bodies were weaker than Hansoo's.

And the player's eyes shone as they charged in.

“Hahaha! One down!”

Even if they killed that one person and picked up their artifacts before dying it would be a profit.

But they could not accomplish their goals.

Ssssssss!

“Huh? What the hell is this?!”

The players were shocked as they saw their bodies turning into golden lights from the red powder.

Hansoo couldn't watch it any longer and had released the red powder in a small area by squeezing out some mana.

As all the players around them disappeared.

Crunch!

The players who had been holding onto Hansoo also disappeared into golden lights and the area near the portal was cleared.

The surviving adventurer made a worried expression towards Hansoo despite clutching onto his own leg.

“Ugh... Thank you. But your mana...”

Because of Hansoo had used the red powder in such a short amount of time again, his expression was extremely pale.

A sign of mana depletion.

Christopher frowned as he watched from the side.

‘Fuck...We would all die at this rate.’

Hansoo would be able to safely reach the goal below.

But it was different for them.

Like a boulder slowly being cut away by the approaching waves, they would get cut off one by one.



The power of the remaining players inside the maze was stronger than they had expected.

At that moment.

A familiar voice was heard from the darkness of the maze.

“You’re working hard.”

“...!”

Christopher looked into the darkness with a shocked expression.

He didn’t expect to see that face again.

And it was the same for the man as well.

The Watchman of the Ant Tunnel group, Abanoph, made a bitter smile as he spoke.

“You guys don’t look good.”

“...You didn’t come here to joke with us, what do you want?”

Christopher judged that he needed to buy some time while

Hansoo recovered some mana and spoke out.

And Abanoph nodded at his words.

“I’m here to invite you to the Ant Tunnel.”

“...Why so suddenly?”

That man was clearly wary of inviting them to the Ant Tunnel.

Abanoph sighed as he replied.

“Our leader wants to see you.”

“...?”

Abanoph continued to speak towards Christopher who was making a confused expression.

“Whether you come or not is your choice but it doesn’t seem like you guys have much room to decide. It won’t be that bad for you don’t worry. I don’t know why you guys are trying to go down but... We know every secret portal that players don’t know about.”

“Hmm...”

It didn’t seem bad but Christopher was being wary because he

was suspicious.

As Christopher was frowning from Abanoph's words.

Hansoo, who had recovered a bit of mana, spoke towards Abanoph.

“Let's go then.”

If it was a shortcut then there was no reason to deny him.

He was a bit curious too.

‘...If they hid this well then they might've been able to survive until the Great Unification of the Abyss... Why have I not heard about any survivors?’

He would need to meet them in order to figure it out.

Abanoph made a bitter expression at Hansoo's reply and then spoke.

“...Follow me.”

Abanoph disappeared into the shadows and Hansoo and the others quickly followed him.

# Chapter 233 : The Great Seal (3)

---

Tadadadak.

‘It’s really complex huh.’

Christopher was shocked as he followed the man named Abanoph.

Left, right, left, left, right.

The Great Maze was a indeed a maze, it branched out in all directions and was extremely complex.

Christopher’s brain was about to explode as he tried to remember the path.

‘This...This is why the people couldn’t adventure the entire maze.’

This complexity and the vastness of this place.

According to one user’s estimations, the 3rd floor of the Great Maze was about ten thousand square kilometers.

How long would it take to go through all this?

Of course if there wasn't any Protection Elixirs or the Ains below, the 3rd floor might've been completely searched.

The human's curiosity was limitless and there were countless amounts of players.

But why would they search around this vast useless land here when the valuable things were below.

It would be much more profitable to go down into the 4th and 5th floor of the maze and earn the Protection Elixirs from the Ains.

Thanks to all these factors, many parts of the maze were left as a mystery.

As if Abanoph had read Christopher's mind, he started to laugh and speak out. "Well. This complexity is the reason why we can stay hidden. And... Because we still feel uneasy, there are <Watchmen> like us."

"Watchmen?" Abanoph replied with an expression full of pride.

"Yes. We are in charge of roaming around the maze and looking out for players."

People who roamed around the Ant Tunnel within this maze, hide amongst the players to accomplish their goals.

Of course it consisted of people who can very adapt fooling others into thinking they are a player and run away quickly in times of danger.

The Watchmen, like Abanoph, had 2 main roles.

First.

Lead players, who might go astray and accidentally reach their village, somewhere else.

Second.

Find Adventurers within the maze, look them over and pull them into the village.

“We need to help each other when we’re all being chased. At least here.”

“...”Christopher looked at Abanoph with a new look.

He didn’t have a great impression of him because they had met in very suspicious and hostile circumstances but for him to be doing such good deeds.

If everything that guy had said was true then they were basically acting as a sanctuary for the surviving adventurers.

Abanoph spoke to Christopher with a heavy expression. “I’m not actually not sure if I’m doing the right thing. For me to bring you guys, who are on the blacklist, into this place...”

It might’ve been different for unknown adventurers but those who were on the blacklist usually got chased down quite meticulously.

There was another huge problem.

If they find out that this person did not leave the maze then there are those who would search every nook of this maze.

Those who would search this humongous place in order to find that one person.

‘Scarlet Demons... Damned bastards.’

Abanoph grinded his teeth as he remembered his clan of the past which had been killed off after being chased to the end of the world.

His clan leader was at level 250 in this world’s standards.

He was much stronger than himself but couldn’t escape the Scarlet Demon’s chase and had died before he reached the Ant Tunnels.

A group created to just keep their pride.

That was the main reason why they were even more careful and even more meticulous than others.

‘I have no idea what the leader wants to do.’

Abanoph started to quickly move out as he shook his head.

He was curious but he did not question the leader.

Since he would’ve long been ripped apart by the players if the leader hadn’t pulled him into the Ant Tunnels.

The reason why he had become a Watchman was to repay what little he could.

As well as saving those who are in similar situations as him.

Toong Tootoong.

Abanoph suddenly made a strange noise inside the maze.

And from afar a similar noise echoed.

Similar but a bit different.



“We’re almost here. Come on.”

Hansoo, as he watched Abanoph’s actions, figured out how these people had been able to survive inside the Maze for so long.

‘So they don’t stay in one place huh.’

Because then there wouldn’t be a need to alter their routes by sending signals every so often.

At the same time he felt very sad.

About the people here.

They had to constantly move around in case they got caught.

They were living in a constant state of danger.

But even before Hasnoo could finish his thoughts.

A faint light appeared in the distance and lit up the paths of the maze.

At the same time.

Something that looked like a trailer could be seen in the distance.

Trailers that resembled camping cars.

“Huh...”As Christopher and the others exclaimed out loud at the presence of other people.

Abanoph sighed and spoke.“We’re here. There’s space for you guys too so... Take a break.”Abanaoph looked at the empty trailers out of the hundreds and spoke with a bitter expression.

.....

“Ugh... Be a bit more gentle.”“Shut up. You can regenerate the injuries on your leg if you use regeneration skills anyway. Just wait a bit more.”“Fucking hell. Just because it’s not your own leg...”Christopher and the others felt relieved as they started to heal their injuries.

Well, they hadn’t really dropped their guard yet.

Though they had followed Hansoo, they didn’t know if the people here would be friendly or hostile to them.

Even more so as they saw the eyes of hundreds of others who were looking at them with uncomfortable gazes.

But the reason why they had felt so relieved was because of the

scenery inside the trailers.

Extremely familiar looks.

“So it’s not just the exterior that looks like camping cars huh.” “The interior is the important part.”

Abanoph replied to the people who had been looking at the camping cars with shocked expressions.

TVs, sinks, beds and even simple drawers.

There was actually a picture which seemed to have been made from dyes.

‘...A couple?’

As Christopher frowned at the portrait with a man and a woman, Abanoph kindly answered him from beside him.

“These are people who had lived here previously. They were both Watchmen. They both got chased and became a couple after coming into the Ant Tunnels.” “...”

Christopher asked carefully after realizing what Abanoph’s words meant.

“...So it’s not completely safe huh?”“Ha.”

Abanoph scoffed at those words.

Complete safety.

There was no place where a cockroach would be safe where humans lived.

Since the cockroaches were just <Bugs>.

It was the same in this world.

No matter how well they hid, there would be traces and tails sticking out.

There were about 900 people here.

And about 50 to 100 people came in every year.

People who had been chased into the end and came into the Great Maze in case there was a hiding place here and had gotten rescued by Watchmen like himself.

But this number did not change from year to year.

Since a similar amount got killed by bug killers and players.

They couldn't just sit idle here hidden, they had to find things to eat and hunt as well.

They needed to raise their strengths like this and prepare to head towards the logout zone.

Of course there was no way to not get caught in the eyes of players and a large amount of people being sacrificed was normal.

‘But living in this much luxury is not bad.’

The interiors which resembled the modern days was to just allow them to remember the place where they had lived in peace.

Of course there were no mechanical tools but they, with their monstrous strengths, could easily twist around metal boards to make things which resembled items such as TVs.

This was the reason why pulling these things around wasn't hard for them.

Abanoph looked at the traces of the dead and then spoke towards Christopher.

“Well. It's just replicas but you can alter the interiors any way you like. Since these things were all custom made to one's own likings. There are some things stacked over there so you can bring

some from there. Return the ones here back there too.”“...”

“Well we need to recycle or something right? Hurry and go.”“It doesn’t seem like there’s much of a reason to. There’s no guarantee we’ll be staying here.”“...Ah.”

Abanoph stopped.

These guys were indeed irregulars.

He didn’t know what would happen to these guys.

He had forgotten because there had been nobody else before who had come here and had left.

And this pissed him off.

‘Fuck. They really display the fact that they just came up.’

Those who had been chased for a long time were afraid of leaving this place.

But for him to think about leaving.

‘You guys need to know you are lucky. To meet such a powerful person.’

Abanoph made an annoyed expression and then spoke towards Hansoo. “Oh, right. Let’s get to the main point then. If you healed enough then let’s go. The leader’s on the inside.”

“ ... ”

The adventurers walked out from their camping cars at Abanoph’s words, walked through the eyes of those who were on guard against them and headed towards the camping car at the center of the entire place.

.....

“Welcome. I am the leader of this place. Kamiyou.”

Christopher and Hansoo looked at the man who had an artificial leg in front of them.

They knew what this man had gone through from just looking at this leg.

Hansoo spoke towards the man.

“Why did you call us?” Kamiyou laughed at Hansoo’s question and replied.

“Befoore that, let me ask you a question. Why are you trying to go down?” Everybody else looked at Hansoo as well.

They were curious as well.

But before Hansoo could reply.

Kamiyou laughed as he replied.

“Are you perhaps trying to rip out the God’s Destruction Maul and destroy the Great Seal that is placed upon this place?” Then.

The surrounding people made confused expressions. And Hansoo frowned.

Kamiyou laughed as he looked at Hansoo.

“I’ve gone through a lot of things here. And I’ve met a lot of people while living here. And out of those... I’ve even met those who weren’t human.” “...You met the Ains huh.” Kamiyou nodded.

“Yes. Well...meeting the Ains is not really special. I’ve actually met a special Ain. I’ve met the one who was leading the Ains who had been sealed below. He seemed to have a lot of special tricks.”

Hansoo realized what this man had heard after hearing up to this point.

And how he knew about his own plan.



‘He met the Prophet huh.’

Ain.

The race who had the protection of the Spirits.

The one who had the protection from the Great Spirit, could see the future and had received the role to lead the race.

Prophet.

Hansoo looked at the man who had met the Prophet with an amused expression.

# Chapter 234 : The Great Seal (4)

---

Roaaaarrr!

‘Uaaaa.’

Flame Warrior-V made an expression full of fear as he looked at the infected soldiers who were being swept off after being turned into dust.

Countless infected soldiers were crawling around but they were moving towards the entrance down to the 2nd floor at a constant pace as if they did not pose any threat to them.

Of course the thing that caught his attention was the red light on Sharon Stiller’s sword.

Every time the red light exploded out, it felt like the entire maze got lit up.

Flame Warrior-V looked at the weapon with envy.

‘I heard the weapon itself changes when one used S rank Spirit Stones on them.’

A weapon which he couldn’t even dream of having.

At the same time Flame Warrior-V got curious.

About what exactly was their objective below.

‘...Would she answer me if I asked her?’

If she was going to hide everything from him, she wouldn’t have brought him along in the first place.

“Uh...By the way, why are we going down? Is there a reason for us to head out with this large of a scale?”

Sharon stiller pondered as she looked at Flame Warrior-V for a moment.

‘Hmm. I did hear that this guy’s abilities were quite good.’

But there was an issue.

‘This guy belongs to Michael Dawson’s branch... Am I allowed to tell him?’

The Anteater clan was led by two clan leaders.

Himura and Michael Dawson.

They had gotten together in the beginning because they didn’t like bug players and in order to hunt them down.

But as the size of their organization grew and they became a clan which was comparable to the 10 great clans, the opinions of the two started to diverge.

Himura stuck by the roots of the Anteater clan and put his focus into killing the bug players.

He said that everyone gathered in this clan had come to kill the bug players and needed to continue hunting them.

On the other hand, Michael Dawson said that they have expanded enough so they needed to now focus on finances.

Since he felt that it was a waste for such a giant clan to invest such a large amount of money in killing bug players.

Both sides were correct.

Though Exodus was a game where they could have fun, it was also a world which gave them the chance to earn large amounts of money.

And according to what Sharon Stiller knew, Flame Warrior-V was neutral but still a bit closer to Michael Dawson.

Since he was indeed interested in earning money.

And herself and the Scarlet Demons were with Himura.

The Scarlet Demons was a hunting team which Himura invested a lot of money in to create.

Sharon Stiller spoke up to that point and cautiously continued.

“This is as much as I can say. If you want more then you have to join our side.”

Since she had heard that he was quite capable, it wouldn't be bad to work together.

Since once he signed the contract he would keep the secrets even if he needed money.

“Mmm...” Flame Warrior-V nodded after a brief moment of thought.

‘I've been... Marked from the mistake this time. It might be better for me to cling onto another rope at this point.’

As Flame Warrior-V nodded, Sharon Stiller made a content expression and spoke.

“This is information that is hard to come by so listen well. Even out of the Master Players, only those who are interested in the history of kingdoms know this.” Sharon Stiller then looked around

her surroundings.

“Do you know who created this maze?”

Flame Warrior-V looked at her with a confused expression.

What was the name of the maze?

It was the Great Maze of the Ains.

Obviously the Ains on the 5th floor made it, who else?

Sharon Stiller laughed as she looked at Flame Warrior-V.

“You think that the Ains made it right?” “...Didn’t they?”

Sharon Stiller shook her head.

“Hmm. You aren’t wrong. Half correct.” “Mmm?”

Sharon Stiller continued to laugh.

“It’s as you said. Well, the humans made it but the curse of the Ains is laid on top of it.” Usually, cooperation would be a case where both parties were content with the result.

But this cursed maze was different.

The humans and the Ains hated each other and they fought, this structure was the result of it.

A giant maze which pressed down the Ains but at the same time despised the humans.

The grave of people and the place where the Ains are sealed.

“This is why we’ve been able to come in by trading with the Kingdom. They don’t like coming in here. Because of the curse.” “Curse?” “You saw on the way here. The corpses.” “Ah...”

Flame Warrior-V realized.

He figured out how the infected soldiers on the 1st floor had been created.

“It seems they not only lose their powers when they come in here but the Ains apparently attack them as well. This is why they let us in instead.” “Hmm...”

Flame Warrior-V didn’t know what had been traded but he understood the situation.

The Scarlet Demons would do what the Kingdoms had trouble doing.

And the Scarlet Demons would also take care of their business while they were in here.

Then.

Sharon Stiller looked around at the ground for a bit after coming down to the 2nd floor through the blue maze and then smiled.

“Found him. Let’s go. I’ll tell you more later.”“...Mmm.”Thinking about it, he would figure out why he had followed them in later anyway.

Flame Warrior-V used his skill and started to follow the others.

.....

Ain.

The delegates of the Spirits.

The race who had been crushed down into the maze and could not come out.

Kamiyou asked Hansoo.“He told me this when I met the Prophet in the past.”



“What did he say?”“He said that one day you and the others would come to help him and the other Ains, he told me to guide you guys well.”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders at these words.

“How do you know I am him?”

“I was curious so I asked as well. But the answer was simple.”<If you feel that when you see him there would be nobody else who you had seen or will see would be more befitting then that man is the one. In the prophecy, his appearance is all but destruction and blood.>

Kamiyou chuckled as he thought of these words.

Blood and destruction.

There were no adventurers who were strangers who these things.

This is why he had thought that it would be hard for him to find the man.

‘For him to appear in front of me.’

He realized the moment he saw Hansoo.

That nobody else would fit the prophecy better.

Kamiyou looked at Hansoo and smiled as he spoke. “It seems correct right?” “Hmm.” Hansoo shrugged.

It was quite similar to him indeed.

Kamiyou spoke towards Hansoo.

“I was curious. How you would help us and the Ains. Will you help us separately? Or is the thing you’re trying to accomplish beneficial for all of us? After thinking about it, I came to a single conclusion.” The thing the Ains dearly wanted.

It was to leave this cursed seal, the Great Mazed.

And his goal was to get revenge against the cursed people who had trapped them here.

“So, you’re probably here to release the seal. The one on the 4th level.”

People thought that the Great Maze lead all the way up to the 5th floor but that wasn’t the entire truth.

The maze the humans had built stopped at the 4th floor.

The floor below, the 5th floor, had been created by the Ains.

So the Seal existed in the deepest part of the Maze, the 4th floor.

In a mysterious corner that nobody had been to.

‘Probably only the magic brigade who laid down the seal knows where it is.’

No player knew where it was.

So Kamiyou was curious as well. Wondering how the man in front of him would find it.

And another thing.

‘...I’m not sure if it’ll help us.’

The Ains being unsealed wasn’t necessarily good for them.

It wasn’t like they were going to fight for the adventurers.

The Ains despised the Kingdoms and the countries who had trapped them.

But they didn’t hate the players.

And he and the other adventurers despised the players who massacred their friends and family.

But in a sense, they didn't hate the kingdoms and countries who were in a similar situation.

According to the prophecy of the Ains, helping this man would be beneficial to the Ains and in result would be beneficial for them as well but nobody knew how this would play out.

And Kamiyou wasn't the only one to think this way.

A swift-looking beauty next to Kamiyou spoke towards Kamiyou. "Mr Kamiyou. How could you let these people into the village with only a prophecy!? The Scarlet Demons might chase us down at this rate!" Well, only the Scarlet Demons finding them wouldn't be bad.

But if the players rush in while the Scarlet Demons buy time then they would all get massacred.

And for just a prophecy?

The woman, Einchel, did not believe in those words.

If there indeed was a Prophet and he could see the future, why did they lose to the humans?

After their loss they had been trapped within the maze and had become something which only dropped Protection Elixirs when killed.

Knowing the future and preparing for it was the same as being unbeatable.

If they had a prophet then how did they turn out like that?

Kamiyou shook his head at Einchel's words.

She was right.

The best thing to do might be to hide in here until the storm went past.

But the last words of the prophet were on his mind.

<When the storm hits, the only safe place is in the center. The eye of the storm.>

'Ugh... What do I do? How much should I help him?'

The feelings that came from the Prophets felt too real for him to ignore the words.

Since if the prophet's words were true then he should take everyone from the village and go with Hansoo but then they would collide with the players.

On the other hand, if he were to help the least possible then he could just tell them the ways to the secret portals below.

Kamiyou started to ponder while staring at Hansoo.

.....

Flame Warrior-V couldn't hold onto his curiosity while running with the Scarlet and Golden Demons and asked. "Uh, what is the thing we need to do for the Kingdom?" "Is it related to the blue pouch from before?"

As Flame Warrior-V mumbled while thinking about the blue pouch she had received from Krancheska, the leader of the Magic Bridgade.

Sharon Stiller laughed as she replied. "We can do it slowly. It's not like it's hard." "Huh?" "Well. They did seem hurried but that's their issue. We can deal with our issue first right? We can do it after we finish with our job." "Then what is the thing we have to do?" Sharon Stiller started to open her mouth and Flame Warrior-V, who had finally been able to hear what they had to do, focused his hearing.

Sharon Stiller spoke. "Mmm. If you had a secret farm with

animals...And if the entire farm was about to turn into a wreck what would you do? If it's a situation where you can't keep them anymore?"“,,?”“Shouldn't you turn them all into minced meat? Before you lose everything? Or before others find out? Oh, I found it.”Sharon Stiller found the traces here and there in the Maze and started to hum.

# Chapter 235 : The Great Seal (5)

---

Kamiyou pondered for a moment, looked around and then shook his head at Einchel.

“Let’s move. We need to go with him.”“What... If we move together like this, we will definitely get caught!”

Einchel freaked out as she spoke.

The players weren’t stupid.

They already guessed that something was hiding here and were always looking for their traces.

They just weren’t quite interested in them because there were more precious things in deeper floors.

And even in such a situation and themselves moving discreetly, they lost around a hundred people a year.

What would happen if a number close to a thousand moved at once?

There was only one answer for so many people moving when the other players weren’t notified of it.

Bug players.



They would get chased down immediately.

‘Why must we go through such lengths...’

Einchel clenched her teeth as she looked at Kamiyou who had a very resolute expression.

She wanted to say the ones who opposed this idea should stay and only those who wanted to follow should.

Though Kamiyou was a good leader he didn’t really force anybody.

But that was actually the worse choice.

The reason why the players hadn’t searched the corners of the Maze was because they didn’t have any real proof.

Though a small number had been caught, because of the secret of their location and existence being bounded by Kamiyou’s trait <Contract>, they had been able to stay hidden.

But the story might change if a large amount of people got caught.

It would be impossible not to become suspicious when hundreds of people got caught at the same time.

They would pour all their strengths to search the entire maze.

Which meant that if Kamiyou didn't change his thoughts, there was only one choice.

For all of them to follow.

Einchel thought up to this point and then shouted towards Kamiyou in rage,

“Fuck! Are you crazy? Even if you're the leader, you cannot just trust in a piece of some random prophecy and do this! What's so great about those things that are trapped below!?”

Even if Hansoo did succeed in destroying the seal, that would be the end of it.

Those things were still the ones who had lost.

There's no way they could win with them.

And there was an even bigger issue.

The ones where kingdoms and countries outside would charge in to kill them.

‘It’s terrifying...Fucking hell.’

Einchel’s body shuddered as she remembered the massacre caused by the captain of the Magic Brigade, Francheska.

That person alone was that strong.

And there were plenty of people stronger than him in the kingdom and there were people who were even stronger in those countries, the empires that ruled over this damned world.

The players alone were hard to deal with, they couldn’t afford to make enemies with them as well.

Kamiyou spoke out with a dark expression towards Einchel who was looking back at him with eyes full of despair.

“...I see, they’ve just been blindly following me the entire time.”

Kamiyou shook his head.

Losers.

They didn’t lose because they were weak.

Instead they had been tied down below in order to bear the consequences of their strength.

If the Ains were indeed that weak then why would the kingdoms and the empires try so hard to maintain the seal and were always on their toes about the seal breaking?

And why did they not come down to kill the Ains?

‘And that Prophet was really... Really....’

Kamiyou finished his thoughts and then made up his mind.

‘Yeah. The important thing right now isn’t... Maintaining the current situation.’

Unlike Einchel, Kamiyou decided to look further ahead into the future.

Countless players would get in their way while they traversed through the Green Zone.

At this rate, they will slowly sink into the depths and get killed off.

He didn’t know if the AIns being released would be beneficial or harmful to them as a whole.

But he was sure of one thing.

That a change that would sweep across the entire Green Zone will happen.

A great change.

Moving quickly wasn't enough to escape from the Green Zone, the swamp that dragged them down.

They needed a change that would sweep across the entirety of this damned place.

Of course there was no guarantee that they would be safe from this change.

‘...I just need to pray that the prophecy is true then.’

Though there would be people who opposed him, there was nothing else he could do.

He would just take everyone who would come with him.

Kamiyou finished his mumbles and then spoke to Hansoo. “Let me lead you to the secret portal.”

All the portals that have been found were already swarming with players who had seen the blacklist.

It was confirmed by the Watchmen.

Even Hansoo would get slowed down if he had to go through thousands of people.

But in this place, there was a portal for them to escape during an emergency.

A portal which hadn't been found by them distracting and misleading others through the Watchmen.

There was a portal for going up and another for going down but the only important thing was the one going down.

As Kamiyou looked around to persuade everyone to go down with him.

‘Ugh...’

Kamiyou clenched his teeth as he looked at the eyes of the people staring at him.

Chaos and distrust.

Why did he have to go this far?

But this was a reasonable reaction since their leader was trying to make all of them leave after finally securing a safe haven for them to stay just because of some random stranger.

Kamiyou looked towards Hansoo with a sorry expression and spoke.

“Could you give me a bit of time?”

He needed to persuade as much as he could, if not all.

And he had the confidence to do so if there was time.

Since there wasn't much choice for the ones staying.

Hansoo nodded at Kamiyou's words.

Since it wouldn't take long.

‘....He probably has a contract type trait.’

Maintaining the security of this place was impossible just through hard work.

Them not being found despite a hundred of them being caught and killed each other meant one thing.

That he had a method or a trait to control the ones who entered.

And the trait <Contract> which could put restrictions on those weaker than oneself could easily accomplish this.

‘And...He probably has a few other methods in the contract that could be used for this situation.’

Since the weaker ones separating at an important moment would only make them weaker.

Even if he didn't like to do such things, as long as he wasn't a stupid leader he would've set some things up.

It wouldn't take long by using it.

‘Tsk. I wish I could help with the persuasion...’

But sadly there was not much he could do.

Since he had indeed come to break the seal but being with him wasn't particularly safer or anything. “I'll wait and we can...”

As Hansoo started to speak.Rumbleee.

Classshh.



Sounds of thunder and lightning echoed throughout the maze from a distance.

A vicious sound that was different from the ones the Watchmen made.

Everyone’s expression froze as they heard this.

.....

Rrrrummblee!

Endless amounts of flame poured out from the sword of the captain of the Scarlet Demons, Sharon Stiller.

Towards the trailers at the outermost parts of the Ant Tunnel the watchmen set up as residence.

Whoooosh!

The fire, which rushed forward like a dragon made of flames, ate up the trailer as the giant trailer started to melt down.

The trailer was merely made of steel after all.

There was no way it could handle the S grade Spirit Stone, <Scarlet Flower>, that could buy an entire house at the center of

the capital.

Basically it was like using a weapon meant to slay dragons just to kill a few chickens.

Others might call her stupid for doing so but would Sharon Stiller have used a weapon imbued with a spirit stone just to melt down a trailer?

Screams came out from the trailer surrounded by flames.

“Uaaaaaaa...” “Kuaaaak!”

People, who though were low level, had been armed with artifacts and magic resistance skills.

But even they could not withstand the flames from the spirit stone.

Sharon Stiller smiled as she saw this.

“Though it’s a bit much to kill a few bugs...We should use a secure method since they’re strong.”

Sharon Stiller then pointed with her chin towards the back.

Towards those who had been looking at the Bug Players with

green in their eyes.

The moment the nod came, five members of the Gold Demons walked out in glee.

Towards the bug players who were burning up in the distance and barely maintaining their life.

And Sharon Stiller and the other fifteen Scarlet Demons just watched the Gold Demons walking by.

It wasn't that they didn't have the confidence to handle the situation.

Since they didn't bring the Gold Demons because they lacked strength.

The 15 of them, armed with S and A grade Spirit Stones, were sure that they could erase any group of bug players.

They was only a single reason why they brought the Gold Demons.

“Uaaaaaak!” “Kuuhuk!”

The Gold Demon members swung their blades towards the Watchmen,

And the two watchmen who were ablaze were people who could easily deal with five members of the Gold Demons.

But they could not fight the Gold Demons while being surrounded by Sharon Stiller's flames that were burning them alive.

They couldn't even resist as they lost their lives.

At that moment.

Kiiing!

Two of the five members of the Gold Demons shined out brightly.

A sign of leveling up.

And the other members looked at this with satisfied expressions.

“Keke! This is why I can't stop being a bug killer.”

“Why did I farm dungeons until now?”

Of course they wouldn't usually level up once from just this.

But the remaining exp they needed which they would've had to

grind out had been filled up in an instant.

Flame Warrior-V nodded as he looked at this scene.

‘...So she brought them to raise them huh.’

Experience was useless to the Scarlet Demons who were already at cap levels.

But the tremendous amount of experience would be waste to just throw it away.

Sharon Stiller laughed towards the Gold Demon members and walked forward.

“Don’t be happy about just this much. There’s so much more to go.”

The Gold Demons who had been following shouted out in glee.

“Hahahaha! Yes!”

“Let’s chase them down before they run!” “For justice!”

There was nothing more fun than leveling up in a game.

Especially more so in a game like exodus where some say the max

level is when the game began due to all the contents made specifically for those at level 250.

As the people were shouting in glee. “Aaaah! Cursed bastards!”

A person jumped up from the flaming trailer and started to run away.

A Watchman had been hiding despite burning up and started to madly run the moment he saw an opening.

And the Gold Demons immediately started to chase.

“Where do you think you’re going?!”

It was pointless to run.

Since one wouldn’t be able to run at their full speed with injuries.

The Scarlet Demons shrugged their shoulders as they saw the Gold Demons chasing.

There wasn’t much for them here since they were already at max level.

They just needed to do the job they were tasked with, receive rewards from the leader.

‘It won’t be dangerous anyway.’

Sharon Stiller mumbled inwardly.

The bug players would get erased once they got killed.

A sane person would not be able even think of fighting them.

They would just focus on running away.

And this was why she had dealt the first blow.

Since it was easier to hunt those running.

‘And it’s useless to run anyway.’

As Sharon Stiller was looking at the Gold Demons who were running up ahead with a calm expression.

Boooooooooom!

Something giant flew in from across the maze and smashed into the Gold Demons.

With a tremendously loud noise.

“Kuaaaak!”

“What the fuck!”

One of the Gold Demon members melted away and the other seven’s bodies got smashed apart and were flung backwards.

The only one surviving in the tunnel was the Watchmen.

“Huuaak...Phew...”

The Watchmen, who had barely dodged the attack which resembled a dragon, lost strength in his legs and fell down onto the ground.

At the same time.

Whoosh.

Hansoo raised the man and then pointed towards the back.

“Go back there and join the others.”

Hansoo, who was fixing a bit of his body back, then spoke while looking at the Scarlet and Gold Demons in the distance.



“It seems I’ll have to ‘talk’ with these guys for a bit.”

“Ha.”

It was clear that he wasn’t talking about exchanging words from the way he was holding the spear.

Sharon Stiller raised her sword with a dumbfounded expression.

## Chapter 236 : The Great Seal (6)

---

Sharon Stiller realized who the person in front of her was the moment he came into view.

Since he was the man who had become incredibly famous in such a short amount of time.

The blacklist of the Anteater clan was that effective.

But she had never thought that he would appear in front of her.

‘It seems he became confident because he only dealt with lower levels...’

Well, he wasn’t particularly low-leveled relative to those around level 200.

But she could do the things he had done just now as well.

‘Just how do you think I earned this.’

Sharon Stiller clenched the artifact imbued with the <Scarlet Flower> in her hands.

Though it was a game, it was almost like real life.

And this game was actually more realistic when the game itself was more important for them then real life.

There were an invisible wall between males and females and she had gone through a tremendous amount of rough work to climb to the position as the captain of the Scarlet Demons.

And, ironically, even by using a weapon only a female could use in order to deal with the weakness a female had.

‘Himura... Fucking bastard.’

Sharon Stiller forcibly tried to erase the disturbing memories as she looked towards the bug players.

This is how she had gained strength.

But these guys had gained them way too easily.

By using unfair methods such as hacks.

Since there were people like the bug players who fought at an uneven playing field, people like her had to give up things they shouldn't have in order to survive.

As she thought up to this point.

Crunch.

The rage and hatred she had towards Himura deep inside her was transferred onto the person in front of her.

At the same time Sharon Stiller's expression crunched up.

To the point of shocking Flame Warrior-V next to her.

'What the. Does she have a personal grudge or something? Why is her expression like this?'

It was the first time he had seen Sharon Stiller's expression, which was usually always smiling and calm, scrunch up this much.

As Flame Warrior-V was still in shock.

Kiiiiiiing!

The weapon in Sharon Stiller's hands started to heat up.

While spewing out red light like a furnace bellowing out fire.

At the same time.

Boooooom!

A giant flame scorched out and flew towards the bug player in front of her.

A much more intense flame melted the walls of the maze and headed towards Hansoo.

Hansoo frowned as he saw this.

‘As I expected...I cannot win in a head on fight.’

The ones who had used the S grade Spirit Stones were no joke.

Since it was a fragment which held the souls of the spirits which ruled this world at one point.

Of course this much wasn't enough to beat him.

But there were the Scarlet Demons and even 150 Gold Demons behind.

And since they could fight without fear of death, it would be even worse.

But there was a reason why he had come.

‘...Not bad Kamiyou. A threat.’

<Buy some time while I take them below ! Or else we won't move a step towards the portal!>

‘Not bad.’

He could buy at least two hours.

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders and swirled up two dragons with his spear.

Kuuududuk.

As his body slightly got twisted.

Boooooom!

Two dragons clashed into the inferno.

The dragons which had killed the Gold Demons from before.

Soon.

Rummbble!

The entire maze shook from the collision of the dragon and the

flame.'

'...I can't get held back from just you.'

Sharon Stiller mumbled as she looked at the Scarlet Flower.

A power which he had gained through large amounts of sacrifice.

It wasn't something which would go away simply by shutting the game off.

It was strength which could give her honor, strength and a place on society in real life.

And for this, she had to lick the soles of Himura temporarily.

By using the strength he had given her.

'I'll erase you all...'

"Clean him up!" Then.

Rummblee!

The Scarlet and Gold Demons started to charge at the same time.

.....

Rumble.

‘Fuck...Faster. Faste!’

Einchel got into an even bigger hurry from the vibration that shook the entire maze.

“Leave behind the trailers! Just take the weapons!”Einchel screamed out as she took the lead position instead of Kamiyou who had gone ahead.

“Fuck! How did those guys find out about us!”It was funny how she was pondering whether to go or not just a few moments ago.

For the Scarlet Demons to crash in so suddenly.

Einchel grinded her teeth while thinking of Christopher and the other blacklisters but then shook her head.

‘No, it’s not because of them. Fuck.’

They weren’t retards, they wouldn’t have left behind such obvious tracks.

And the location of collision was completely opposite from the



direction they came from anyway.

Well, all of this didn't matter anyway.

‘There’s...only one path now.’

Einchel mumbled inwardly as she looked towards Kamiyou shouting in the distance.

Well, towards the skulls in Kamiyou's hands.

The skulls Hansoo had left behind before leaving.

Hansoo told Kamiyou.

<This skull has a formation similar to the sealing formation the magic brigade created. If you pour in some mana then you can sense it minutely reacting to other magic formations.>

<Then...>

Hansoo nodded at Kamiyou's expression.

<Yeah. If you pour in mana then you can find the location of the seal in the fourth floor. Though there wouldn't be much reaction because of the distance but it wouldn't be hard for you to catch such a thing.>

Hansoo gave them a simple task.

While he bought time, they had to clear a path to the seal.

Einchel nodded as she flew towards the portal.

‘Thats easy...’

Whooosh!

Einchel saw the last member of Ant Tunnel going through the portal and flew into the portal as well.

Then.

The strange noise of the portal gulped in Einchel and led her to the fourth floor.

Kamiyou quickly spoke to Einchel the moment she came out.

“Is everyone here?”

“Yes. But the method of finding the parth...” Kamiyou nodded at those words. “That doesn’t seem very hard.”

It might've been hard if there were a lot of players but the secret tunnel had remained hidden from being discovered.

And the players looking for the bug players actually helped them. Since most of them gathered around the other portals.

‘We need to hurry.’

Kamiyou finished his thoughts and spoke towards the people.

“Let’s go.” Then.

Christopher spoke next to him as if he didn’t like some things.

“Can’t we just go by ourselves? We can break the seal by ourselves right?”

Christopher didn’t like the fact that Hansoo was buying time for the people here.

Of course he knew that them going against the players who couldn’t die was meaningless and was basically suicide.

But for them to hand over so many people to just one person.

‘This...Isn’t this too much?’

Of course Christopher didn't like the current situation.

Kamiyou shook his head towards Christopher.

"It doesn't seem that our path would be that safe." "...?"

Oooooong.

Slight vibrations of the skull guided Kamiyou.

The vast and wide great maze.

Towards the deepest parts.

The Seal.

The Great Seal.

The thing which the kingdoms and the empires created to deal with the Ains.

'...Would hiding such a thing be the only way to protect it?'

Kamiyou gulped as he spoke.

"We shouldn't fight between ourselves. Let's find the path first.

Hansoo said he would buy time and then... Rejoin us.”

It wouldn't be hard to follow them since they would leave behind marks only themselves would recognize.

Christopher made a displeased expression but nodded and started to move towards the darkness of the maze.

.....

Shuaaaaaak!

A Gold Demon member got surrounded by a cloud of red smoke while running through the maze.

And he freaked out when he saw this.

“Fuck...”

Even before he could finish his scream.

Kwaaaaarrrrrrrk!

The Gold Demon member melted down from the red spoke.

And the other members were shocked as they saw this.

“What the fuck.” “Would that skill come out if we kill him?”

The Gold Demons freaked out but the Scarlet Demons merely shrugged their shoulders.

They started to see positives and negatives.

‘Dumbasses. Even if you guys get that skill, you guys wouldn’t be able to use it because of your lack of mana. And fucking hell Exodus. Do your job properly.’

They didn’t know what kind of hack this guy used but this guy’s health and mana were seriously abnormal.

In other words, he was using that skill because of this.

This was why the Scarlet Demons weren’t in a hurry.

Though he was strong, there was a limit to someone’s mana.

And that skill was indeed powerful but that guy was using it carefully.

He wasn’t invincible.

If he was invincible then he wouldn’t have run away from the

captain of the Scarlet Demons, Sharon Stiller.

He would've just melted down everyone here and then.

‘Well. It does seem that it is disturbing her.’

One of the Scarlet Demons, Olsen, chuckled towards Sharon Stiller.

It seems her pride had been tainted because she had left him an opening to run away while fighting one versus one.

Then.

Sharon Stiller spoke expressionlessly.

“Split the team.” “...How?”

Vice-captain, Olsen, frowned at Sharon Stiller.

“There’s no reason to drag out time against him. It’s not like we will get a tremendous amount of exp for killing him. Ten Scarlet demons including me will chase him. That should be enough.”

Olsen nodded.

Since losing hundreds of bug players because of one person

would be a tremendous loss.

And fighting up to this point, ten was more than enough to suppress him.

‘His level isn’t that high.’

If he was actually at level 250, he would’ve been a monstrosity.

But he was merely around level 200 to 205.

Ten of them, armed with top tier Spirit Stones, were more than enough.

‘It’s better to do this than half-heartedly giving Gold Demons some exp.’

Olsen nodded.

“Then the five including myself will chase the others.”

Sharon Stiller shook her head.

“No, only four of you go.”

“Huh? What about the remaining one?”



Olsen asked.

There were 15 people in the Scarlet Demons.

If ten followed that man and four chased bug players, there would be one left over.

Sharon Stiller took something out as she spoke.

“Let’s just take care of the thing we promised the Kingdom on the way.”

“Hmm... That...”

Olsen frowned.

The blue pouch she had received from the captain of the magic brigade, Krancheska.

‘What is it anyway?’

Olsen looked at Sharon with curiosity.

## Chapter 237 : The Great Seal (7)

---

Rumble.

‘Hmm.’

Hansoo cracked his neck and checked the status of his body.

Since he hadn’t pushed himself, it was more than enough to fight.

Rumble.

Rummblee.

Hansoo quietly moved his ear towards the wall of the maze and then sensed the slight trembles of the maze.

Footsteps.

Sounds of people smashing weapons against the walls.

A much wider range of sounds than what he could hear with just his ear could be heard.

He then visualized what he could hear and then mumbled.

‘They’ve split up huh.’

About ten would chase him and the rest would chase the people from the ant tunnel.

Though the people from the ant tunnel would have erased their tracks quite well, that wouldn’t help much.

The ones who went down would probably get caught by the Gold Demons.

Hansoo thought for a moment and walked around while fixing his body about what to do and then just made a decision.

‘I’ll join them.’

Even if he smashed through everyone here, they would revive and come back down.

It would be better to just go down and break the seal instead.

While Hansoo was fixing his body and returning himself back to his normal condition.

Ooooooong.

A strange vibration rang throughout his mind.

A soul vibration.

Soon.

<How is it?>

A voice could be heard through the soul fragment.

‘Gwanje huh? He’s probably bored. Or just curious.’

Hansoo thought of the owner of the voice and mumbled.

Gwanje.

The person who was in charge of the Orange Zone with the Crown of Thorns and the artificial soldiers.

And the one who was in charge over the body of Elkadion, the previous leader of the Akarons and the one who knew he came from the future.

So Gwanje knew as well.

That he came from the future.

‘Well. One’s okay.’

It might be different if he tried to use this information to influence others directly but one person knowing about it wouldn’t make much difference.

Hansoo rang the soul fragment and replied.

<Well, There’s not much going on yet.>

Well it was just a matter of time, getting chased in a world like this where there are players everywhere was bound to happen.

Though it happened a bit faster, he could still handle it.

Gwanje sighed in relief from Hansoo’s answer and then continued to speak.

<Anyways, they’re really fucked up huh. Even if they have nothing holding them down. I want to come over and beat them for you.>

Of course these guys weren’t entirely at fault.

As the adventurers were just bug players in their eyes.

But that didn’t erase the fact that there were casualties.

Gwanje mumbled in discontent as he thought of the ones who died and then asked Hansoo as if he suddenly got curious.

<I see, I guess I need to beat them up a bit when I meet them... Did you ever meet one of the players in the Abyss? Isn't that place still a place where that 'god' has influence ?>

A place where the game created by a God took root in.

The reason for the creation of this game wasn't to please the people who would go through the Green Zone..

Well, it was the opposite.

If somebody told Gwanje that this game was created just to give pain to adventurers then he would easily believe it.

Of course that was a bit too much but with the ability of the God, he could easily do this and from the way the fairies acted, a joke at this level would be normal.

'No. It doesn't seem like he contented himself with just making the game.'

Gwanje mumbled quietly.

The creator probably did a few more things in order to kill off

more adventurers.

For example, make it so that players won't feel guilty about killing the adventurers or just make it so they could not see the adventurers as humans.

Hansoo thought for a moment and then shook his head.

<Well. I haven't seen any of them. Since it's so vast and wide, it wouldn't be abnormal to say I haven't seen them>.

The Abyss was actually very large.

And there were still many places where Hansoo hadn't been to despite living in the Abyss for 50 years.

Not meeting somebody in a place where tens of thousands of people from different races mingled together was quite normal.

And he wasn't that interested either.

Gwanje's curiosity didn't get resolved from Hansoo's half-hearted answer and complained.

<Ugh. You don't know anything. Don't you know anything about that world?>

As Gwanje asked with a curious expression, Hansoo shook his head and answered.

<To find that out, I need to talk directly with the players but...That's a bit hard. And it's not like I spent long in the Green Zone during my private life either.>

<Ugh...>

Gwanje groaned.

Thinking about it, even if Hansoo came back from the future, he wasn't omnipotent.

No, even if he could rule with strength over the entire battlefield, if he could do everything with power then he would be closer to a god than a savior.

Gwanje suddenly stopped after thinking about a few things.

He then asked Hansoo with a confused expression.

<It didn't take long for you to get through the Green Zone? How the hell did you survive that zone in the past? Was it that easy back then?>

.....



Rummmble.

Rumble.

Hurry! Hurry up!

As Kamiyou ordered the adventurers up ahead, he swung his blade sideways.

Cruunnchh!

Crunch!

“Waaa! What the fuck! If you guys PK so brazenly then...” “You retard! What the hell are you saying? Can’t you tell? Those bastards are bug players!”

“What? How can there be so many bu...”

Crunch!

Even before the man could finish his words.

The players got split in two at the hands of the adventurers and then disappeared into golden light.

They tried to resist but they couldn’t deal with the adventurers

whose strengths were far above their own on average.

Even more so since they were the minority.

The players, who created parties in groups of 30 to 50 people, had no way of beating the hundreds of people who were with Kamiyou and Christopher.

But Kamiyou's expression was very gloomy.

'Fuck. I didn't want to smash through people like this...'

Even if they were searching for their objective, there was no need to smash through the players.

Though hundreds of people moving together might get them caught, 20 groups of 40 pretending to be player parties could easily get to their objective without too much resistance.

It would take longer, but they would all get there safely and with few issues.

But if they charged through like this, even though it would take much less time, the other players would flock to them like swarms of ants.

But Kamiyou didn't really have much of a choice.

Since he didn't have any leisure.

Craack!

A cold aura chased the adventurers from behind.

While freezing the walls of the maze they ran through.

Whooooosh!

Kamiyou withdrew his foot from the chill that was trying to tie him down and then gritted his teeth as he looked behind him.

‘...Fucking hell! <Azure Land>’

The blaze-type S-level Spirit Stone, Scarlet Flower.

And the freeze-type S-level Spirit Stone, Azure Land.

From the darkness of the maze which Kamiyou was staring into.

Kang! Kang!

Sounds of two blue gauntlets clashing could be heard.

Though he couldn't see the faces, he knew who was making these

sounds at once.

‘...Olsen.’

The infamy of the Scarlet Demons was widespread between the bug players.

Since the bug players who got onto the blacklist had been ended by these guy’s hands.

And the most famous of them were this duo.

The captain who wielded the scarlet flower, Sharon Stiller.

And the vice captain who controlled a wide field of blue ice, Olsen.

Even amongst the Scarlet Demons who had received all the support they could, only these two had the S-level Spirit Stone.

It wasn’t an issue of money, just that there weren’t many of them in the first place.

‘Fuck. This one’s hard to deal with.’

Kamiyou felt a chill run down his back as he saw the blue waves that chased him from behind.

Though it was weaker than the Scarlet Flower, the range was much larger.

Since he could spread ice from places that he didn't even see.

And at this moment, it was actually more threatening than the Scarlet Flower.

The most annoying thing about the Azure Land was its effect of lowering movement speed.

Though the adventurers were indeed superior to the players due to their control but their physical bodies or skills didn't have much difference with theirs.

Which meant that there wasn't much of a difference in running speed between the players and them.

If they got caught by that chill then they would get killed.

By the hands of the Gold Demons behind Olsen.

Kamiyou gulped.

'...There's still a lot of way to go!'

Oooooong!

Kamiyou clenched his teeth as he touched the skull in his possession.

The vibration of the skull was getting more and more intense.

Which meant that the magic formation that resonated with the skull got closer.

Soon he would arrive there.

But Kamiyou sighed out in despair.

‘...What could I do even after I get there?’

They needed to fight with the Gold and Scarlet Demons in front of them.

And the rest of the players on the 4th floor would swarm to this location.

Since the rumor would’ve long spread.

Kamiyou clenched his teeth as he thought up to this point.

He had promised go to the seal with Hansoo.

But at this rate, they would all get caught.

‘And... We don’t know what the hell will be at the Great Seal. How can we bring these guys in there?’

If there was something dangerous inside then they would get surrounded and all die.

Kamiyou thought for a moment then smiled as he clenched the skull in his hand.

‘I need to... Make a decision.’

Then.

Boooom!

Kamiyou sent out a signal to all the people running with him.

And Einchel was shocked out as she saw the signal.

‘...Spread out and meet at the objective?’

For him to try to buy time.

Einchel freaked out as she looked at Kamiyou.

Then shouted.

“What are you trying to do?”

Kamiyou.

The leader she had met in this place, the Ant Tunnel.

They had only known each other for about 1 year.

So she didn't know everything about Kamiyou but one thing was clear to her.

That he could not block the ones chasing them by himself no matter what.

Kamiyou clenched his teeth and spoke.

“Don't worry. I heard something extra from the Prophet of the Ains in the past. Oh yeah. Take this.”.

“...”.

Einchel clenched her teeth and nodded as she looked at Kamiyou who handed over a skull to her.



‘I don’t know what’s going on but...I can only trust him.’

She didn’t know about the prophecy of the Ains but nothing else mattered as long as Kamiyou wouldn’t die a meaningless death.

Einchel clenched the skull in his hand and then spoke.

“You... Have to come back alive.”

Kamiyou smiled as he replied.

“Sure. I’ve survived in this damned world for 7 years already. That would be easy.”

Kamiyou stopped his movements with those words and Einchel continued to run ahead with the skull.

Towards their objective, the location of the Great Seal.

.....

“Look at these bastards.”

Even if he couldn’t see it, his skills told him the movements of his enemy.

Olsen smirked at the people scattering in front him him and then shouted out.

“Split into four groups! Like how we practiced norm...”

Then.

Olsen stopped as he looked at the man standing in the middle of the frozen maze.

A man missing a leg.

One of the Gold Demon members smiled as he tried to swing his sword.

“This is min...”

“Wait!”

“...?”

The Gold Demon made a confused expression as he looked at Olsen who was blocking him.

Since this had never happened before.

Olsen smiled as he looked at Kamiyou in front of him.

“You are important to our Ant Eaters, we should treat you properly.”

Kamiyou’s expression froze up at Olsen’s words.

## Chapter 238 : The Great Seal (8)

---

One of the two leaders of Ant Eaters, Himura, fell into a deep thought one day.

<...What a fucking grind.>

Their clan, the Ant Eaters, originally only had the strength to barely compare to the other large clans in terms of battle power.

Since there was a limit no matter how much he and Michael Dawson worked.

Though they were quite skilled, the large clans were clans created by those who were far superior to them.

It was hard to beat their connections and backings.

The reason why the Ant Eaters had been able to survive against them like this and grow was because they had the justifications.

With the reason of getting rid of the bug killers who harmed the game, they kept their honor with this and slowly rose their strength through this.

Though it looked like they killed indiscriminately, there were those they needed to kill among their victims.

They rounded up everyone they needed to kill and killed them as bug killers.

Even if they would get rewarded in the future, winning the battle for strength then and there and get the support of the kingdoms or the empires was the best choice since it would be hard for their powers to get dispersed or threatened this way.

Which meant that hunting for bug players was a job the Bug Eaters had to do whether they liked it or not.

Michael Dawson only said they would lower the ratio, he could never guarantee getting rid of them entirely.

Since they wouldn't be able to win against the other clans in the battle for power otherwise.

But a problem came up.

Finding the bug players became harder and harder as time went on.

Even if they tried to kill normal players, only non-bug players turned up.

They were able to justify themselves when a certain ratio of bug players roamed around, but this would shake their entire clan.

Which meant that the power would get skewed towards Michael Dawson inside the clan.

Himura thought up to this point and then made a decision together with the captain and vice-captain of the Scarlet Demons, Sharon Stiller and Olsen.

<It seems we need to follow our ancestors' insight.>

<...What do you mean?>

Himura chuckled at Olsen's words.

<The thing our Ancestors used to do. They were hunter gatherers and then... they started to raise livestock and farm crops.>

<Uh...>

From then things went smoothly.

The Great Maze opened then from the 5th Great Change and the fame of the War Fortress was sharply rising.

Himura decided to kill two birds with one stone and just cut the leg of a bug player and let him go.

And then spoke.

<There's one thing you need to do. Get the bug killers who come in here and make them stay in here and hand over a certain amount we want every year.>

The plan was simple.

Getting those, whom they had a hard time finding, to gather into the Great Maze by themselves.

And that person would release enough for their hunting group to maintain themselves.

It was extremely beneficial.

They were able to raise the levels of the hunting team way faster than finding them one by one.

And they had been able to increase their power even faster in the War Fortress with that justification.

The man who had his leg cut off spoke while grinding his teeth.

<Bastards... You think I'll do it?>

Logically speaking, his reaction was a bit too much for just handing over a few comrades.

His reaction was like those of the NPCs who actually died for real.

But Himura just let it flow past him.

It didn't seem very important to him for some reason.

And he liked the painful expressions of these people more.

‘Whatever. It’s just a virtual reality game. There could be side effects like this.’

Himura chuckled.

<Look, you guys aren’t really losing out. If we go all out, you would all lose your accounts. Isn’t it better to just lose a hundred than all of you getting killed?>

Since the others would figure it out if they killed everyone, they needed to handle the ratio.

At a rate where they could still hunt and grow.

And make it so nobody else knew about the deal.

Since it would become troublesome if others found out about it.



A few of the people from the Ant Tunnel would roam around as Watchmen and the Azure or Gold Demons would 'luckily' find them and kill them.

Himura thought up to this point and added something extra.

<Or, you could just end it all. Your friends. You. We can just find others... Wouldn't it be better for you to do it?>

.....

Kamiyou's expression froze as he thought of what happened 3 years ago.

About 10% a year.

The amount they stayed here for was about 3 years.

Though 30% would die during the 3 years, the remaining 70% would grow and leave safely.

This is why he had decided to take over this place.

But from the way they were chasing him, it didn't seem like it'd end that simply.

Kamiyou asked Olsen.

“You. What are you doing? Me and... Himura...”Olsen chuckled.

“Oh. You had a contract? Well. You did.”“...But?”Kamiyou’s expression turned gloomy.

Even to Himura, this would be like killing the goose which laid golden eggs.

Since 10% was a huge number over 10 years and it was more than good in terms of stability.

Olsen shrugged.

“I don’t know. How could I know what the uppers up decided?”

Kamiyou’s expression froze as he saw Olsen’s attitude.

‘No can do.’

He was afraid of the possibility but it seemed these guys really were trying to kill all the adventurers.

Kamiyou took out his final card.

“Is it okay for all the money you guys spent on me to just disappear?”Back then.

Kamiyou denied the deal at first.

10% surviving was just a deal of words, if Himura wanted then everyone inside the Ant Tunnel would get massacred.

So Kamiyou had gotten angry and put out another deal.

<If you are really going to keep your word... You should be able to accept it.>

There was one thing he wanted.

It was that the large amount money for managing the clan that was invested in the owner of the War Fortress, Keil Kingdom, would be under his name.

It was so that if he didn't agree, they wouldn't be able to get the money back.

And surprisingly, Himura easily accepted the deal.

Even if he did agree with the deal, it was clear who had the upper hand anyway.

Kamiyou clenched his teeth while thinking of Einchel.

‘...Sorry. There was no such thing as the prophecy.’

How would he be able to deal with these vicious guys with just some words from a Prophet?

He had lied to her because she wouldn't have left if he didn't say this much and because this was something he didn't want anyone else to know.

And this was the last resort he had.

The contract.

The only hand that he, a traitor amongst the adventurers, could use.

The Kingdom was something even the Ant Eater clan could not deal with.

Which meant that these guys wouldn't be able to deal with him that easily either.

He had used the final hand he had put so much trust in but still made a fearful expression.

Because Olsen's mouth started to curl up into a smile.

‘No. Even the Anteater clan... Cannot ignore such a large amount of money.’

They needed him to get the money back.

Kamiyou swallowed back the fear that was slowly crawling up from the dark depths of his mind and then spoke towards Olsen.

“Go back. We will resettle in the Great Maze. If there’s not enough harvest... I’ll try harder. If another person dies I will commit suicide...”

“I said you don’t need to.”

Crunch.

“Kuhuuuk...”

Kamiyou made an expression of disbelief as he saw the blade which cut through his body.

Since this was not part of his expectations.

“Fucking...You are willing to lose all that money...”Olsen smirked at Kamiyou’s words.

How could they give up such a large amount of money?

It was not a trifling amount.

The situation had just changed a bit.

“Hahaha. How could you know what is going on around in the world since you’re always hiding in the ground.”

Crunch.

“Ugh...”

Kamiyou groaned as he saw Olsen twist the short sword embedded in his body.

Olsen spoke towards Kamiyou.

“Things will change from now on. You will hear from your friends.”

Kiiiiing!

The moment Olsen was about to activate the <Azure Land> skill of his gauntlet.

Charrrrrrrk!

The air split apart as something popped out.

“Huh...?” But before Olsen could even reply.

Whoosh!

Somebody took Kamiyou who still had a dagger stuck in his belly.

“This rat...”

Olsen realized the situation as he quickly activated Azure Land.

Craaacckckckkk!

The entire area, with the gauntlet as the center, started to freeze.

Right before Kamiyou and the man were about to freeze.

Whooosh.

The man who had come out from void with the dark aura hugged Kamiyou and returned to the void.

Then.

Clang!

The air in front of Olsen froze and a huge block of ice appeared.

But there were no traces of the two within.

Olsen gritted his teeth as he saw this but then quickly calmed down.

Since running away wouldn't change anything.

“We'll continue with our original plan. Chase.”

Soon.

Papapapapak!

The moment the Gold and Scarlet Demons were about to split up within the maze.

A voice came out from the darkness behind them.

“Wait. Let's go together.”

“Huh?”

A slightly tired-sounding voice.



That wasn't the issue.

Since the owner of the voice should not be here.

Olsen was shocked at the unexpected voice and spoke.

“...What's up captain? I said we'll deal with the things here. Why aren't you chasing the blacklisted guy and...”

The expressions of the ten Scarlet Demons including Sharon Stiller turned gloomy.

.....

“Haa....Haa.. Ugh...”

Abanoph, who had saved Kamiyou by using <Dark Destruction> and ran off, groaned out while looking at his frozen right hand.

Though he could move through space in an instant, it didn't make him invulnerable during that time.

Kamiyou looked at Abanoph with a sad expression but then looked around after feeling a sudden chill.

A tremendously large area that didn't fit the maze.

And the thousands of mysterious crosses.

‘This...’

As Kamiyou was shocked at the mysterious place.

The adventurers who were gathered around the 10m-tall crosses looked towards Kamiyou.

With complex emotions.

And Einchel, who was at the very front with the skull, spoke to Kamiyou expressionlessly.

“Found it.”

The location of the seal which had suppressed the Ains for hundreds of years.

‘This is the place the prophecy mentioned...’

As Kamiyou looked around in a daze.

A voice was heard from the entrance of the place.

“Welcome.”

“...!”

‘Already?’

Kamiyou made a shocked expression as he looked at Hansoo.

Even if he followed the traces, it was too fast.

Since their opponents weren’t stupid.

They should’ve dispatched a force they thought was enough for Hansoo but he still arrived at this place at the same time as them.

‘How the hell...’

Kamiyou made a confused expression.

# Chapter 239 : Unsealing (1)

---

“What happened? Why is your face like that?”

Olsen made a confused expression towards the Scarlet Demons who were charging at him with pissed off expressions.

They had chased after Hansoo with confident expressions.

Olsen was actually jealous of the 10 who had chased him.

Since it was likely that those guys would get his artifacts once they killed him.

But for their expressions to be that gloomy.

‘What the hell happened within that short time...Was there a hole to escape through?’

If he had escaped through a path which they didn’t know about then their expressions could be understood.

As Olsen looked at the ten including Sharon Stiller with a strange expression.

Sharon Stiller grinded her teeth and spoke out through them.

“...Stone of Immortality. How many do you guys have?”

“Huh? Stone of Immortality? Why do you need that?”

Stone of immortality.

A peculiar artifact that allowed one to revive on spot without any penalties.

Though no more than two could be used in a day, it was extremely practical to use so the demand for it was high, causing it to have a high price.

But that was only for normal players.

To the Scarlet Demons who had the direct support of the Ant Eater clan, the Stone of Immortality was part of the standard equipment.

‘They should have one each...’

Though they can use up to two a day and Olsen had received some before coming here, they didn’t carry two at the time.

Since there weren’t many cases of them dying twice in a row.

‘We need to have some backup measures. Wait. Wait a

moment...’

Olsen looked at Sharon Stiller with a dumbfounded expression.

“The hell? You got killed?”

“ ... ”

Sharon Stiller’s expression became incensed at Olsen’s words which seemed like he was smirking at her.

But Olsen wasn’t joking.

‘...She underestimated him?’

That was impossible.

The reason why Sharon Stiller was the captain was not only because she had skills but because she had a good eye for people.

Both for work and for personal affairs.

She was good at estimating their opponent’s power and distributed forces efficiently.

Not everyone could become the captain of the hunting group of a large clan.

There was no way that this Sharon Stiller failed to estimate someone's abilities.

If Sharon Stiller had ten people go then it was because the ten of them were enough to deal with the opponent.

Sharon Stiller gritted her teeth and spoke.

“This bastard. He was hiding his skills.”

.....

Crunch.

‘For them to all have Stones of Immortality.’

Hansoo shrugged as he thought of the battle from just then.

He wanted to remove them by waiting for the revive timer and killing them one more time but he held back and reunited with the adventurers here.

They could at most use two a day.

The remaining time he had to reunite with the ones who left for the location of the seal was a bit awkward and it would take too

long for him to deal with them if they all had two Stones of Immortality each.

‘I cannot forget about my objective.’

Whooosh.

Hansoo held the Nurmaha’s Ring and then looked towards the location of the seal with thousands of crosses.

‘Things are going well.’

He had done well smashing apart those chasing him and had succeeded in reuniting with these guys.

And there was another catch.

He had been able to confirm the skills of the Scarlet Demons.

‘It’s not bad.’

Hansoo smiled.

In the Green Zone during his previous life, due to a certain incident there hadn’t been many chances to deal with players so he had been able to safely grow his strength and climb up to the next Zone.



So he wasn't quite sure before.

How strong the master-tier players of the Green Zone were.

Or how powerful the Spirit Stone was.

But while fighting them, he realized he was mistaken about something.

'I see... Just the Spirit Stone is not enough to have such strength huh.'

When he had been living in the War Fortress in the past.

He had seen a man who had a tremendous amount of strength.

A power which he couldn't even imagine back then.

He was sure that it was the strength of the Spirit Stone.

This is why he had thought that everyone with S grade Spirit Stones had that much strength.

He had hid his strength, judged that it was too dangerous to deal with those with S grade Spirit Stones and split them up.

So he could kill them off one by one.

He couldn't underestimate them because of the man he had met in the past.

But it seemed that wasn't the case.

‘Jiang Oh.’

<Hahahaha! I worked so hard to gain this strength. It was truly worth it!>

Hansoo thought of the man's shouts, shook his head and then looked towards the crosses in front of him.

‘Anyways...This place is really impossible to find without the skull.’

Hansoo swirled his tongue around while looking at the mana formation that filled the entire space within the crosses.

Blurred vision, space distortion and mana disruption.

With these many formations, it would be impossible to find this place even if it was in the middle of the War Fortress.

Since even he had a hard time finding this place with the tracks.

‘...That guy who caused the Sixth Great Change really is amazing huh.’

Hansoo chuckled as he thought of the player who caused the 6th Great Change in the past.

Even if he knew about it, for him to find this thing in the middle of nowhere.

‘Sorry but...I’m going to use it first.’

Hansoo looked towards the crosses in front of him.

Since he had found it, he just needed to finish things.

The Great Seal.

Remove the seal and drag out the Ains.

Then the adventurers would also get the opportunity.

The chance to use that tremendous strength.

Hansoo finished his thoughts and beckoned Einchel with his hand.

“ ... ”

Einchel, who was frowning, handed over the skull to him.

Then.

Whooosh.

Black smoke came out from Hansoo's body.

Dark Cloud.

The Dark Cloud came out from his body and seeped into the skull in his hand and the crosses next to him.

The Dark Cloud tainted the skull and the crosses as it drained the information of the mana seal within.

And Hansoo was shocked as he saw the information.

‘...So complex.’

As if it was proving to have been set up by the forces of the kingdoms and empires, there were very complex formations within the skull and the crosses.

Formations to suppress the entire maze, the space where the Ains

lived.

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then shrugged...

‘Ugh... I can’t handle it the traditional way.’

This is something that even the magic brigade will barely be able to solve in a week.

And Hansoo, who didn’t have much information in this field, couldn’t solve it by himself.

It wasn’t like he had a lot of time.

And breaking it apart would be a bad choice.

Since the entire maze might break down if the mana that was flowing here blew apart.

The intricate system of mana that allowed a tremendous amount of strength could easily blow apart with a careless touch.

So he needed to use the third method.

Whooosh.

Hansoo followed the flow of the mana and then headed toward

one side.

Toward a place where the complex mana formations all gathered to.

Then.

‘Here.’

Crunch.

Hansoo stood above an ordinary looking boulder of black granite after following the mana flow which resembled a spider’s web.

Einchel, Kamiyou and Christopher all made confused expressions while watching him.

‘Why...’

It was a location looking completely ordinary compared to the thousands of crosses around them.

Then.

Cruunnchh.

Hansoo’s foot dug into the granite below.

Crraccek.

The granite floor only seemed normal on the exterior but it was extremely hard.

The granite floor broke apart like tofu under Hansoo's feet and started to show what was inside it.

Crunch. Crack.

‘Why is he digging the ground...’

Clang.

Sounds of chains clanking could be heard about a meter down.

Hansoo smiled as he looked at the red chains in the ground.

‘Found it. God's Flail..’

Well, the thing he found was just a single line of chain.

A red chain that had the width of about four human fists.

The tens of thousands of chains that originally existed couldn't

be found anywhere as only a single one could be seen.

Hansoo jumped into the ground and grabbed the chain.

The rest of the chains were hidden deep within the ground.

Tightly tied around the seal.

These chains were the 3rd godly treasure of an Empire but something they had given up to seal the Ains.

The Keil Kingdom gave up the space where a main mana node was located, the Korin and other Kingdoms poured in 66666 people as sacrifices for this seal.

This is how this seal was created.

By using the tremendous mana of the mana node, the despair and curse of the 66666 people and the Empire's godly treasure, God's Flail..

He couldn't get rid of a mana node.

He couldn't get rid of the curse laid down upon the entire maze either.

But the seal was created with these three things working



together.

And getting rid of one was enough.

Ting. Tingtingting.

Hansoo's body started to change as he pulled the chain apart a few times.

Rooaaarrrr.

His muscles swelled multiple times over and scales covered his entire body.

Two extra hearts grew next to the original one.

Hansoo felt the tremendous amount of power running through his body and then pulled apart the chain again.

Craacck!

Then.

A bit more of the chain got pulled out from the ground.

About Hansoo's height.

At the same time.

Rrrumblee.

The thousands of crosses made rumbling noises as the entire area shook.

As the seal broke apart, the mana and the curse loosened up and in turn, the crosses started to cry out.

Hansoo frowned.

“ ... ”

‘This is going to take forever.’

Hansoo shouted behind him.

“Help me a bit.”“ ... ”

A few other people who had been staring at Hansoo around him ran to him and started to pull at the chain.

Clang.

Christopher, who stood behind Hansoo, asked carefully.

“Do we...Just need to pull this out?”

Hansoo nodded.

“Just pull this out.”“...”

It felt like the entire bloodthirsty aura of the maze was flowing into them.

And Christopher realized what Hansoo meant as he poured more strength into his arms.

.....

Booom!

The intense lightning strike from the A level Spirit Stone, <Atle’s Seed>, smashed the ground in front of the member of the Scarlet Demons, Kangmin.

Chiiiiik!

The infected soldiers of the 1st floor couldn’t even resist as they melted down.

Kangmin frowned at the tremendous amount of infected soldiers who continued to charge at him despite so many of them having already been killed.

‘Fuck. This is annoying. We should’ve just done this on the way if it was on the first floor, why did we ignore it?’

Well, since he had received payment he had to do his job.

Boom! Boooom!

Kangmin swung his weapon, headed towards the Jewel of the Dead and chuckled while thinking of Sharon Stiller.

They wouldn’t fail.

Even if the bug players were very strong.

They had another method other than the Scarlet and Gold Demon’s strengths.

‘I just need to focus on my work. With this...The Seal will get strengthened?’

The deal they had made with Arthus Krancheska on the way in here.

Kangmin mumbled as he looked at the blue pouch he received from Sharon Stiller.

## Chapter 240 : Unsealing (2)

---

The four jewels which existed in each floor of the maze.

The players and the NPCs called them the Jewels of the Dead.

The host of the curse, the powerful spell which prevented the humans from proceeding further into the maze.

The alliance of all the kingdoms and empires of the past had succeeded at pushing the Ains back down underground hundreds of years ago.

But that was it.

Though they had won, they were afraid of finishing their jobs.

So they had created this maze with the power of the giant spell and proceeded to seal the entire place.

Because though their powers were similar after the war, if one side stagnated and the other grew in strength, the gap would widen.

The Ains would stagnate but the humans would grow.

And later they would just need to suppress the Ains with their superior strength.

But the Ains were not stupid.

Right before the maze was completed, the Ains performed a surprise attack, set up the cursed jewels and ran downwards.

This was the Jewels of the Dead.

The curse which had a terrifying effect on the humans as long as it was working.

And because of this, the kingdoms and the empires couldn't go down to kill the Ains despite having built the maze and having restored their strength.

They could just prevent the Ains from coming out by setting up a powerful seal and reinforcing it.

Even after the players came into existence and had sealed all four of the Jewels of the Dead, they still didn't like to come into this place.

They would just order the players to get the required Protection Elixirs.

Anyways, the Kingdoms wanted this seal to be maintained.

And this was why they were willing to ask the players to

reinforce the seal from the inside.

Olsen thought of the blue pouch and spoke.

That's...To power the Seal?"

Sharon Stiller shook her head.

"Half correct."

If the Great Seal suppressed the Ains, the minor seals affected the Jewels of the Dead and suppressed the curse in the maze.

One of the four minor seals had been damaged by an explosion and because of that the entire Great Seal had shaken.

They were merely calming down the Great Seal which had been shaken from the explosion in the 1st floor.

'Well. That just proves how dangerous the Ains are.'

Sharon Stiller muttered.

Though they were dealing with it the best they could, in order to deal with the main problem they would need to go down to the area of the main seal on the fourth floor.



But of course the issue was with the minor seal which had broke on the 1st floor.

Arthur Krancheska didn't believe the humans.

Since the minor seal had broken and the entire 1st floor of the maze was cursed again, Arthus Krancheska and the other Magic Brigade members would be extremely weakened if they stepped in there.

Which would cause even the players he could wipe out like bugs to become threats to him.

This was why Krancheska wanted them to fix the minor seal instead of the Great Seal.

The minor seal.

A seal which was suppressing the Jewel of the Dead which had been broken from the explosion.

Once the seal was placed back on it, the curse will get weakened again and Arthur would be able to come down and deal with it himself.

This was the deal she had with Arthur.

Flame Warrior-V made a confused expression.

Since they were currently on the 4th floor.

“Why did we go past the 1st floor?”

In order to accomplish the job given to them by the Kingdom, they needed to be on the 1st floor.

Sharon Stiller smiled towards Flame Warrior-V.

“Some trash would come in then.” Once they reseal the minor seal with the materials inside the blue pouch, the curse will lose effect and the Magic Brigade would come down to enhance the seal on the fourth floor.

‘Arthus Krancheska. He’s going to come in himself.’

She had gone past the jewel because she didn’t want that man to come in.

In order to deal with her problems first.

But since all this had happened, it would be better to work together.

Sharon Stiller’s expression turned dark.

‘Yes. Let’s not forget our original objective.’

They had one goal.

Change all the guys below into experience for the Gold Demons to grow.

The time of crisis which would shake all the kingdoms and empires would be here soon.

Power was a necessity.

They needed powerful people.

And the Gold Demons who devoured all the bug players below would easily fit that role.

‘There’s no real need to deal with that man.’

Sharon Stiller spoke towards Olsen, the Scarlet and the Gold Demons.

“Don’t forget. Our objectives are taking their artifacts and gaining experience. The Scarlet Demons will tie down that Hansoo guy. Then..You guys need to kill the bug players and take their artifacts. We can just die then.”

“Understood.”

As the Scarlet and Gold Demons nodded at Sharon Stiller’s words.

Olsen asked.

“...Wait, if that guy is really that strong, aren’t we not enough to deal with him?”

Sharon Stiller nodded.

“Yes, it is indeed a bit stressful.”

There were about a thousand bug players who were quite skilled.

Though she herself and the Scarlet Demons were high level players who had amazing control, the bug players were a level above.

This was why she had even thought of calling everyone in the maze to deal with the man.

Since that would make things much easier.

But then they would be sharing.

‘It belongs to us, we farmed them.’

Sharon Stiller mumbled inwardly.

They would not share them.

And honestly, there wasn’t a need to.

As they had a final card.

“We have this.” “Well, I guess.”

Olsen shrugged as he looked at Sharon Stiller staring at the Stone of Immortality.

This would change the story.

They would have three lives each if they used two stones.

This was more than enough to deal with them.

“Let’s go then.”

Soon.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Over a hundred Gold and Scarlet Demon members started to charge through the maze.

.....

Rummblee.

Rumble.

“Uaaaaaaa!”

Christopher made a shocked expression while pulling the chain with all his might.

‘What the hell! How is this so hard!?’

It was so well embedded into the ground, this damned chain was extremely hard to pull out.

Since it was barely being pulled out despite almost 800 people pulling on it with all their might.

They weren’t just pulling either.

They used every reinforcements and skills to increase their strength.

Strength that could rip apart steel bars.

And it wasn't like the people were not doing their jobs seriously.

Since the foreheads of the 800 people were coated with sweat and the muscles of their arms and legs were bulging.

But this chain was giving no signs of being pulled out.

‘What the hell...He pulled this out on his own?’

Einchel looked at Hansoo pulling out the chain at the very front with the form of a dragon with a terrified expression.

Because Hansoo had pulled this out at the very beginning by himself with ease, they had thought that 800 people pulling on it would make it so the job would finish very quickly.

But what the hell was this.

The damned chain was buried so well that the skin on their hands felt like ripping away as they pulled.

Since the chain was getting harder and harder to pull out the more that came out.

And if Hansoo, who was at the very front, wasn't here, it would be twice as hard as this.

And there was another issue.

'Fucking hell! Is this ever going to end?'

Einchel cursed out loud.

The fucking chain was so long that there was no end to it.

The chain they had pulled out at the beginning was already hundreds of meters long.

But these chains continued to get pulled out.

And there was another thing which scared the adventurers.

Rumble.

"Again..."

"Ugh..."

Everytime a bit of the chain got pulled out, the thousands of crosses trembled and shook the entire space.



That wasn't all.

Kiiiiing!

Kyaaaaak!

Every time the crosses shook, terrifying and vicious sounding screams resonated outwards.

Voices filled with hatred, despair and rage.

Einchel asked Hansoo after hearing it.

“...Why is that happening?”

She wanted to ignore it but it was extremely terrifying and it occurred every time they pulled on the chain.

It even got louder the more they pulled.

Not to mention the chain was getting harder and harder to pull.

Combining these things she currently knew, it was almost as if they were pulling something at the end of the chain that was buried.

And these were the warnings saying to not do it.

‘Fuck... Is there really something down there?’

Einchel mumbled inwardly.

Because she thought of what Kamiyou had said earlier.

<Would they have left the seal defenseless?>

It wouldn’t be weird for a seal like this to have at least one guard.

Hansoo merely shrugged his shoulders at Einchel.

“The despair that was buried here acts as the binding force between the seal and the chains.”

If the chains were the medium, the mana node gave energy and the despair within the crosses supplied it with will.

As the chain was getting pulled out, the mana node and everything else above it was being shaken.

Vengeful spirits were a condensation of yin energy and did not like change.

That was another reason why they had been buried in the sealing

zone.

As the chain got pulled out, the spirits who wanted things to remain the same went crazy and started to stick and hold onto the chain.

By using all the energy of the mana node here.

This was why it got harder the more they pulled.

Einchel made a confused expression but still continued to pull.

Since she knew now that they weren't pulling a giant monster or anything.

‘And though it's a bit hard. It should be completed quickly.’

It was hard but the chain was indeed getting pulled out.

It was only a matter of time, they would be able to pull it all out eventually.

‘Anyways, this clearly looks like a chain. Why is it called a flail?’

Einchel looked at the chain in her hands with a confused expression.

A flail was some sort of weight that smashed things.

Though it was very durable, it didn't seem like it had the worth to be the 3rd godly artifact of an empire.

While Einchel was making a confused expression.

Kuurrirk.

‘Huh?’

Along with a strange noise, the sensation of the chain being locked could be felt.

Something that they hadn't felt until now.

If pulling on the chain until now was like pulling a fish that had been caught by a fishing pole, this sensation felt like the hook had been stuck on a giant rock.

Kuuududuk.

As people were becoming shocked at the chain that wasn't getting pulled out any more.

Einchel looked at Hansoo.

Hansoo was looking at the strange thing that protruded from the ground and was attached to the chain.

‘The hell is that.’

The chains were red as well but the thing which had come out was at another level.

Compared to that blood-colored object, the chains almost looked pink.

As Einchel looked at Hansoo curiously.

Boooom!

An explosion could be heard from the distance.

‘Fuck! Screw their timing.’

The expressions of everybody turned sour at that sound.

But Hansoo’s sight was locked on the thing which had popped out from the ground.

‘Found it. Finally.’

God’s Flail.

Hansoo muttered to himself while looking at the red object which had been pulled out from hundreds of meters underground.

# Chapter 241 : Unsealing (3)

---

Above the Great Maze.

“Huh? What the hell?”

“What is this? Is it a quest?”

Rumble.

The players felt the entire maze shake and made confused expressions.

Since the entire giant maze was shaking in a strange way.

For most of them who didn't know what was below, this didn't mean anything so they were just confused about it.

But for a few others, it was different.

“Fuck! We need more Ram Manon Eyes!”

“Suppress it! The Seal is going to break at this rate!”

All the magic brigade members above were thrown into a hectic state.

People whose average level was 290, those who didn't even consider players as bugs were all in a frenzy.

From their dimensional pouches, countless magic ingredients flew out into the giant rune-shaped formation around the maze.

The one kilometer-wide giant magic formation that surrounded the area around the maze shone with numerous colors and started to bind the entire maze.

As if it was trying to suppress something that could not be let out.

And Arthus Krancheska, who was managing the whole thing, grinded his teeth.

'Fucking hell! What the fuck are these immortal bastards doing inside!'

He could understand the seal having shaken a bit from the work of the bastards from the Korin Kingdom.

But for the entire seal itself to be shaking.

This only meant one thing.

That some bastard had gone into the core area of the seal, where the God's Flail lay, and was ripping apart the actual seal itself.



The surrounding air around Arthus Krancheska started to burn up and caused the temperature to rise.

This was a sign of his rage.

‘I don’t know which bastard is doing this... But if I catch you, I’m going to rip you apart.’

Arthus Krancheska continued to grind his teeth.

He had heard hundreds of times about the dangers of the Ains.

That this seal was the artifact that kept the humans safe.

This was the symbol which signified the winner between the humans and Ains from the <Great Massacre> that happened a thousand years ago.

But some bastard was breaking this apart.

With brute force too.

‘Scarlet Demons...You bastards. Hurry and restore the minor seal! Suppress the curse!’

He wanted to go in himself but he couldn’t.

The curse of the Ains was too powerful.

His own life was important as well.

As long as the minor seal wasn't in place on the 1st floor, going in would be dangerous.

'Damn...If the commander came himself, we could've just gone in.'

Arthus Krancheska frowned.

The commander.

The commander of the magic brigade who was as powerful as a Great General, someone of his level could deal with the situation even if the curse of the Ains tied him down.

Even if he was weakened, his power level was different to begin with.

But he himself was not at that level yet.

If he got weakened from the curse, even those bugs could be a threat to him.

'Damn. I can't help it, there's no time. Ugh, no one here is

likable.’

As Arthus Krancheska frowned at the thought of the Korin Kingdom.

Oooooong.

Arthus Krancheska, who was watching over the seal, felt a strange mana shockwave.

Arthus Krancheska’s expression brightened up at the mana shockwave.

‘Yes. Those immortal scrubs are doing their job properly.’

This shockwave meant that the seal was being restructured around the Jewel of the Dead.

In the blue pouch he gave them, there were materials to reform the minor seal.

If one destroyed the Jewel of the Dead and spread the powder inside the pouch, the minor seal would start to form again and the curse would disappear.

Arthus Krancheska opened and closed his fists as he felt the minor seal being fixed at a slow pace.

‘Hurry... And get fixed.’

The moment it would get fixed.

He would charge into the 4th floor and smash down everyone.

The ones who were breaking the seal.

However, he was actually relieved.

‘Yeah...No matter what they do, they can’t break the seal apart entirely.’

The seal which their ancestors had placed.

‘Fall into despair... And just wait.’

Arthus Krancheska stared vehemently towards the depths of the maze with.

.....

The adventurer’s expressions froze as they heard the sound.

‘They’re here.’

A trap which was set to react once enough players were within the area.

The activation of that thing symbolized something.

That the Scarlet Demons had chased them all the way to here.

Whooosh!

A scorching heat started to charge in from the distance.

Which meant that Sharon Stiller was already here.

Kamiyou looked at Hansoo.

“Mister Hansoo! Let’s fight!”

‘We can win!’

Despair felt the moment hope was just within their grasp.

Right before the seal broke, the ones chasing them had caught up.

But then it wasn’t necessarily that bad.

At least they could now understand what it felt to see hope within this damned world.

‘Once we get rid of them... And break the seal!’

Though there would be a lot of casualties, they could see something.

They didn’t know what would happen but they could still feel something.

But Hansoo’s expression was grim.

“No.”

“Huh?”

“We can’t fight them.”

“What...Why?”

He was unsure up until now but it was now clear.

A powerful aura existed around powerful people.

And the current Hansoo who had the look of a dragon was more than enough to smash down all those guys charging towards them.

Someone who could deal with the Scarlet Demons.

If they fought by themselves, they would almost surely get annihilated.

Since having and not having someone to deal with the Scarlet Demons was a huge difference.

Hansoo spoke as he placed his hand on the seal.

“The minor seal is being fixed.’

He could sense it from the flow of mana.

Somebody was fixing the minor seal from above.

And once it was fixed?

‘...Somebody would definitely come down charging.’

The magic brigade of the kingdoms wouldn’t just sit and watch as the seal got fixed.

The commander of the magic brigade.

Or the captain.

One of the two would definitely come down here.

‘Well. I guess the one who would come down here is the captain.’

Hansoo mumbled.

Thinking about the situation with the surrounded countries and the fact that they hadn’t charged down yet, it was clear that the captain was in charge.

Well that didn’t really matter.

If Arthus Krancheska came down here after the seal was fixed, they would all die.

He wouldn’t be able to deal with a monster at level 330.

He needed to break the Great Seal before the minor seal was fixed no matter what.

Kamiyou’s expression turned dark as he heard Hansoo’s words.

“My god...Then..!”

He finally understood the situation.



They couldn't fight.

For them to have a limited amount of time.

They had to split into two teams where one blocked the ones charging at them and the other continued breaking the seal.

Until the seal finally broke.

Kamiyou spoke towards his surrounding.

“People who are relatively higher-leveled fight. The others will pull the chain.”

Everyone clenched their teeth and nodded.

Of course pulling the chain was safer than fighting.

But in terms of efficiency, this was much better.

Though there wasn't much different of physical strength between a level 200 and 250, the battle strength which came from their masteries and artifacts was very different.

A high-level adventurer pulling chains was a waste in a lot of ways.

Einchel smacked Christopher and spoke.

“Weaklings go over there and play tug of war. This sister will be fighting.”

“...Fucking hell.”

Christopher made an embarrassed expression but did not retort.

It wasn't the time to step out.

The task he was entrusted with was just as important.

If he couldn't pull out the chain while they were fighting, they would all die.

‘...We just need to pull this out?’

Christopher walked up to the chain and stood in front of it.

Well, in front of the bloody red object the chain was attached to.

A giant metal object was protruding out from the ground on the end of the chain.

And Christopher finally realized why this was called a flail.

A human-head-sized metal object that resembled a bell, or an anvil.

The flail was actually covered by hundreds of veins that resembled the veins within a human's body.

The hundreds of the bloody mana currents that were tying down the flail had been dragged out along with the flail.

Blood didn't flow through these veins but the energy from the mana node did.

This actually made those veins look even redder than actual veins.

Christopher decided to call these things veins and realized what they were connected to.

‘...They come out from below those crosses huh.’

Christopher made a terrified expression at the strange veins but still grabbed onto the chain.

‘Yeah. It wouldn't take long.’

It seems he would just need to rip out the flail from the veins.

How hard would it be to cut apart something that already came out onto the ground.

Crrrrrk.

As Christopher pulled onto the chain.

Chiiiiik!

Strange red lights exploded out from the veins along with an intense wave of heat.

At the same time.

Ttdddk!

The chains that had stayed linked despite hundreds of people with monstrous strengths pulling on it melted in an instant.

And Christopher made a dumbfounded expression.

“What the fuck...”

The veins which gave off a wave of powerful energy and intense hatred freaked out Christopher.

The more surprising thing was the flail.

Despite being surrounded by hundreds of veins that had melted the chain in an instant, it stood intact.

Christopher grinded his teeth as he watched the hunk of metal become red hot.

‘...We have to pull that thing out?’

Then.

Christopher’s right hand, Elenoia, slashed down with her dagger and shouted.

“We can just break these!”

The seal would break the moment they rip apart the veins from the flail.

And they could just cut the veins off instead of pulling the veins out.

‘There’s no time!’

They needed to deal with the seal as quickly as possible.

As Elenoia was about to slash down with her dagger.

Grab.

Hansoo grabbed Elenoia's wrist and spoke.

“If you don't want to die, don't.”

“What...”

As Elenoia made a shocked expression.

Hansoo spoke towards the flail.

“You can't break this thing.”

As long as the mana node existed, the veins would reform and the seal would stay intact.

If one struck it, they would just get killed from the heat.

There were no traps or beasts that defended the seal.

There was no need for such a thing.

The flail was surrounded by a tremendous amount of these veins that existed as its guard.

‘Well, more like a test.’

The higher the numbering, the harder something was to obtain.

The God’s Flail was no exception.

The final trial that one needed to go through in order to obtain it.

They needed to get its approval.

“Hoo.”

‘Let’s go.’

Hansoo watched the heated up flail as he breathed in and out.

Chiiiiik.

He then grabbed the flail.

# Chapter 242 : Unsealing (4)

---

Chiiiiiiik.

The moment Hansoo's hand was placed on the flail.

Whoosh!

A tremendous amount of energy and heat started to burn Hansoo's hand.

Einchel, Christopher, Kamiyou and the others realized why Hansoo had stopped them as they saw the scales of Hansoo melting down.

‘We... Would get burnt the moment we touch it. Jesus, is that guy even human?’

A tremendous amount of mana.

And a powerful reinforcement skill that could turn him into a moving fortress.

A body that was countless times more powerful than the others.

He was barely holding on because he had all of these things in addition to his artifacts.



A scene which befuddled Kamiyou who thought that everyone eventually ended up at similar levels and only had time and hard work as a difference.

If runes and skills were the basis of one's strength, that guy's foundation was at a whole other level.

It felt like he belonged to another race entirely.

Then.

Chiiiiik.

Hansoo spoke towards Kamiyou while grabbing the blazing flail.

“I’m going into the test now.”

A test.

As they looked at Hansoo with a confused expression.

Kamiyou asked a different question.

“...Can we help you with anything?”

“Nope.”

Kamiyou made a bitter expression as if he had expected this answer.

‘As I thought.’

In terms of overall strength, the eight hundred of them were more powerful than Hansoo.

But a test.

A test was something which tested an individual’s ability.

At the same time.

Squirm.

The veins started to climb up the arm of Hansoo who was grabbing onto the blazing flail.

Like hundreds of tiny snakes.

The veins which heated up the flail, filled with a countless amount of despair and mana.

The heat from them was no less than from the the flail itself.

Chiiiiiiiik.

The thousands of red veins covered Hansoo's arm as they climbed up.

‘...We are nowhere worthy huh... How powerful is he to be able to handle that...’

As Kamiyou looked at Hansoo, whose body was covered by the red veins, in shock.

Hansoo, whose body was slowly being covered by the snakes and were now climbing up to his neck, spoke towards Kamiyou.

“While I go through the test, I'll be completely cut off from the world. Think of one thing during that time. Survive.”

Chiiiiiiiiiiiik.

Soon the veins climbed up above his neck and started to cover the lower parts of his face.

Right before he was covered entirely from the veins.

Hansoo spoke some words for everyone who was listening.

“Hold on until I get back.”

With those words.

Kuuudududuk.

The red veins covered Hansoo from head to toe.

At the same time.

Badump! Badump!

The red veins started to aggressively thump.

As if they were happy at gaining something to devour.

Einchel spoke to Kamiyou while watching the strange scene.

“...We need to fight for ourselves I guess.”

Kamiyou nodded at her words.

‘Can’t change anything now.’

In a fight where they had to fight for themselves, there was no hatred.

Hansoo breaking that mysterious seal was the most important thing.

The moment the Scarlet Demons decided to hunt them, fight was inevitable.

Just when and where they would fight was the issue.

‘And...I need to take charge.’

Though he had created the Ant Tunnel which was supposed to be for everyone’s benefit, the results clearly told them something different.

He had led them here and had to take responsibility for them.

‘But not yet.’

Kamiyou spoke to the surrounding adventurers with a resolute expression.

“There’s something I haven’t been able to tell you guys.”

“...?”

As people looked at Kamiyou with confused expressions.

Kamiyou tightly grasped the weapon in his hands and shouted.

“It’s a very important matter so please survive. Since it’s important, you guys all need to be alive to hear it right?”

Everyone chuckled and somebody spoke.

“Heheh. You yourself should stay alive captain. If there’s no mouth to say anything, we can’t hear it right?”

“Keeping you alive will relieve my curiosity huh. Don’t be too harsh when you’re missing a leg.”

The people warmed up their bodies and started to gather around Kamiyou.

As if they were protecting him.

Kamiyou was a leader who protected them and had done his best for their safety and their survival.

He had the right to be respected and was much more precious than themselves.

Even if they survived here, they needed someone to lead them.

No, just receiving a means of safety for them who roamed around the Green Zone without a clue was a huge debt in itself.

3 years of safety and survival.

This was the time for them to repay their debts.

Kamiyou clenched his fist tightly as he watched the groups of people surrounding him.

‘Please don’t. I’m not worthy of all this.’

He wanted to shout.

About the contract he had with their opponents, the Ant Eaters.

That he was the one that should be killed.

But he couldn’t shout it yet.

Since it would cause the minds of the people to falter and fall into chaos.

Kamiyou thought of the words Hansoo left behind and clenched his teeth.

‘Just like Hansoo said...Just focus on surviving.’

At the same time.

Boooom!

A giant tower of flame charged toward them from the maze.

“Kuhuk! Block it!”

Kwadddddddudud!

They had already expected that these guys would come.

Rumble.

Though they had been able to block it because they were prepared for it, their expressions weren't that good.

Since everyone knew.

That this was the beginning.

Then.

Boooom!



“Hahahahaha! It’s been a while!”

“You’re all here huh!”

Over a hundred people started to charge towards them from behind the flaming pillar.

The Gold and Scarlet Demons.

And the extremely chilling blue light and the scorching red light in the front.

Olsen and Sharon Stiller.

The tremendous amount of energy that radiated out from these two filled the entire area.

While suppressing the aura of the adventurers.

Soon, they will die out in large numbers.

At the hands of those two.

‘Fuck...’

Kamiyou turned around at the vicious aura of the two.

Towards Hansoo who was surrounded by the thumping veins.

‘Please...Please hurry.’

They needed to hold on until Hansoo came out.

With him taking the brunt of it at the front.

Kamiyou clenched his teeth and charged forward.

Towards Sharon Stiller who was approaching them with a demonic expression.

Soon.

Boooooooooom!

The entire area was soon filled with countless different lights.

Along with sounds of explosions and screams.

.....

Rummblee.

Hansoo's soul was in a different place.

A red space.

Some red liquid was up to Hansoo's ankle on the floor and as he looked up, the sky was blood red as well.

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the red space.

'...It seems my body didn't arrive here. Did only my soul come here?'

His body was probably surrounded by some red veins.

Then.

Ssssssk.

A ripple was created from the red liquid on the ground as a change occurred.

Kuuuurrrrrruk.

The red liquid bubbled and rose up as it started to form into a human.

Not just in a few locations but in tens of thousands of locations.

Hansoo mumbled as he watched the liquid form into people.

‘...These are the souls huh.’

The 66,666 souls that were sacrificed for the Kingdoms and Empires.

Some looked like farmers and some looked like soldiers.

Some looked sick and some resembled cripples.

But they all had two things in common.

First, they were all either weak or had some form of disability.

Second, they all had looks of rage hiding underneath their dazed looks.

Soon Hansoo was surrounded by countless souls and the tens of thousands of these vengeful spirits started to mumble at Hansoo.

<It’s been a long time.>

<...Fucking...Bastards.>

<Those who come in here...>

<...Can he really...>

Then.

A loud voice could be heard from somewhere.

<800 years. Since somebody came into this place. Well, you have the right to at least.>

Hansoo looked towards where the voice came from.

A man covered in scars with a sword in his hand was looking at him.

The moment the man spoke.

The voices of the souls stopped.

Hansoo looked at that man and thought.

‘So this guy is the leader huh.’

But the silence only lasted for so long.

The spirits started to mumble again.

<The ones who came into the maze were all empty husks.>

<What does it matter if they cannot die. Since there's no filling, there's a limit to their growth. Since they are limited, they can't even handle the test of their physical body.>

<Sad. If they were our descendants, they might be able to accomplish it.>

<They don't dare to come in because they're scared of the curse. Fucking hell, if only the curse wasn't there...>

<At least this guy isn't that bad.>

The test of one's physical body.

Hansoo realized what this test was about.

‘Surviving the blazing heat of the veins is the first test.’

Even if the players could get in here, they wouldn't be able to handle the test.

Since they had a limit on their levels.

No matter how many skills they stack, they wouldn't be able to handle the test.

'If I didn't go through the Body Enhancement Surgery or had the Mana Jade then it would've been hard.'

Then.

The man, who looked like a leader, started to speak.

<Quiet>.

The 66,665 spirits surrounding him quieted down.

As they all stopped talking, the man started to speak again.

<I don't know the reason why you came all the way here but there is one thing we want from you. Strength.>

Hansoo nodded.

His goal was destroying the seal.

But of course obtaining the God's Flail was part of his plan as well.

The man started to speak again.

“Some random half-hearted ability is nowhere enough to control the strength within the flail and our hatred. Since you can withstand the energy from the mana node, you have some potential but... The test of the spirit is a different matter entirely. If you don't have the qualification then... Even if you gain the strength, either your body will blow up or you will go crazy.

“Let's hurry.”

There was an ongoing battle in the outside world.

There was no time to waste.

The man laughed coldly.

<Woah, you should at least listen until the end. Even if you pass the test and obtain the right to use the strength...There's no meaning if we don't give you the strength right?>

Hansoo frowned at the man's words.

He realized they wanted something from him.

“What do you want?”

The man, who was laughing just a bit before, started to turn extremely grim.



As if he remembered something he had kept hidden.

The man spoke to Hansoo while trembling in rage.

<Simple. Can... You avenge us?>

The spirits surrounding them started to chatter again.

<If you nod... And pass the test. We can give you the strength of an immortal.>

<But if you deny, you won't get anything. Even if you pass the test, we won't help you.>

<It'll be the same if you break the deal after you gain the strength. Your body will get ripped apart.>

Hansoo spoke as he watched the enraged spirits.

“Revenge huh...Who are the targets? The Ains?”

These were people who fought against the Ains.

They might want to get their revenge against the Ains.

The spirits started to laugh out loud.

<Hahahahaha! Why would we hate the Ains?>

<If they hate us then they can hate us. They've done nothing wrong.>

<What we want are the flesh and blood others.>

Soon.

They all started to scream.

The shouts of tens of thousands of spirits filled the entire red space.

<We want the flesh and blood of those who turned us like this.>

<Kill them all. The ones who did this to us. All the citizens of the Kingdoms and the Empires.>

<Those who sacrificed us because we became useless.>

<We just got tired and injured much faster because we fought at the front. They just treated us like trash.>

<We, who should be hailed as heroes, are now suffering for all

eternity. Kill all those who are living their lives in glory up above.>

<Sacrifice their flesh and blood to us.>

<That is what we want. We want them to be shredded apart.>

The shouts that were filled with hatred entered Hansoo's ear.

# Chapter 243 : Unsealing (5)

---

Hansoo scoffed.

‘This is why the players who found this previously couldn’t use the flail huh.’

He had thought something was amiss when he heard about it in the past.

Because the flail wasn’t in the hands of the person who had found it.

Back then, he had thought that there might’ve been a specific reason but he knew now.

‘He wasn’t good enough probably.’

Hansoo mumbled.

Those players probably didn’t have the ability to withstand the test of the physical body nor had the ability to accept their deal.

That’s probably the reason why they went to find that man.

‘Jang Oh.’

Hansoo laughed in a cold manner as he thought of the previous owner of the flail.

Jang Oh didn't declare a war against the empires.

But the seal itself had been broken properly and the 6h Great Change had still occurred.

Jang Oh had used the weapon and pissed many people off and was able to use the strength..

Which meant that they had some form of deal.

Which meant one thing.

‘That this isn't a necessity.’

Hansoo laughed coldly as he spoke.

“Yeah? Then let's not do this.”

<Hmm. You're going to deny it then?>

Hansoo nodded as he looked at the spirit which had a shocked expression.

‘Heh, pretending to be calm.’

They had said it themselves.

That it's been 800 years since somebody came in.

Well, there had been a reason to it.

The powerhouses of the kingdoms and empires who exceeded well over the limit of level 250 never even had the thought of obtaining the flail for themselves.

They wouldn't dare breaking the seal they set up themselves.

And the players, who had a level limit, couldn't pass this test.

Even if they could pass the test of the physical body, they would never be able to pass the test of the soul.

Which meant one thing.

'Could you guys really reject me? A ray of hope that finally came after 800 years?'

Even if it wasn't him, the seal here would break in about a year anyway.

Since he wasn't the only person in this world who could pass this

test.

But in these spirit's point of view, the story is a bit different.

Since they wouldn't know about such a thing.

Hansoo continued to speak.

“I understand that the strength you guys can give me is enticing. But have some conscience. You know how powerful the kingdoms and empires are for yourself but you want me to destroy all of them with just this?”

<Mmm...>

“Making an enemy out of all the kingdoms and empires, it's better to just give up this strength. It's not like I'll fall behind anybody in terms of strength anyway.”

Actually, he couldn't give up the flail.

Since he had to release the seal on the Ains no matter what.

But these guys didn't know that.

Logically, someone like him wanting to break the seal on the Ains is a pretty stupid thing to do.

<Hmmm...>

As he expected.

Unlike the expression of the leader, the faces of those behind him started to turn dark.

<Ugh...Fuck. Until when...>

<The heavens are unfair. How long are they going to tie us down here...>

The expression of the leader turned grim as well but he soon sighed.

Since all of Hansoo's words were correct.

<...Fuck off then. Bastard.>

They were trapped here so they knew.

Though they had the strength from the mana node, the magic brigade of the kingdoms could easily suppress them.

It was indeed one of the 3 godly treasures but this also meant that there were two other objects in the empire just like it.



They had a tremendous amount of hatred held inside them but they were still losers.

They would only burn in rage while being trapped in here.

That man wouldn't be able to smash apart the kingdoms and empires with just this flail.

'Maybe if it was the legacy of that person who almost destroyed the world.'

Then.

Hansoo continued to speak.

"Well, it's not like I'm not interested in this strength either. It's really tempting. Having more strength is always a good thing as you know."

<...What are you trying to say?>

The leader spat out as if he was trying to hold onto a last bit of hope.

Though the man was saying such words, there was no greed within his eyes.

He had the eyes of someone who had nothing much to lose.

Hansoo laughed as he spoke.

“Let’s have another deal. Something you and I can both agree on.”

<...Say it then.>

The leader didn’t like this situation but it wasn’t like he could do anything else.

He couldn’t give up this chance that had finally come after 800 years when he didn’t know when the next one would be.

Hansoo laughed as he looked at the man.

.....

Boooooooooom!

A blade covered in flames flew towards Kamiyou.

An attack which burnt all the surrounding atmosphere.

The flame held within the spirit stone, <Scarlet Flower>.

A head on fight was not possible.

The war fortress wasn't a famed location for no reason.

The spirit stone was something that distinguished people even at the master player level.

Then.

Whooosh!

Seven different skills exploded out from Kamiyou's body at the same time.

The skills which exploded out worked together with each other to twist the space and push back the air and pulled Kamiyou's body back.

Zwooooosh!

Sharon Stiller frowned as she looked at Kamiyou backing off with an amazing amount of control.

'Not bad...'

Sharon Stiller made an annoyed expression as she looked at Kamiyou in front of her, who was buying time.

At first she was quite happy.

The one she was the most worried about was nowhere to be seen and the bug players who might've ran away were all gathered here and were prepared to fight her.

Dealing with everyone here and then receiving a reward from Arthus Krancheska above would be the perfect outcome of course.

If the Scarlet Demons helped her to push them back then it would be easy to swipe them all off.

But this damned bastard was holding on with all his might.

The bug players having great control was an obvious thing but the attitude of these guys was the issue.

They were working with each other and blocking the Scarlet Demon's attacks even by giving up a leg and an arm for their comrade as they slowly reduced the numbers of the Gold Demons.

'Though we would still win at this rate...'

Sharon Stiller frowned as she looked at Kamiyou spinning around her at an extremely fast speed and looking for an opening.

She would still win at this rate.

Though these guys were fighting back pretty well, the dead Gold Demons could just rejoin them with the Stone of Immortality.

Since their numbers were slowly decreasing.

But one thing was on her mind.

Chiiiiiiik.

‘That. What the fuck is that thing.’

Sharon Stiller stopped fighting and then looked at an object in the center of the crosses.

A red, egg shaped object that was surrounded by something stood in the center of the crosses and was radiating heat in all directions.

Not just heat but steam and smoke as well.

The heat was so intense that it was burning up everything around it and was even covering the entire space with smoke.

And this smoke was also interfering with the fight.

Unlike themselves, who were quite dependent on vision, the bug players were not.

They were much more advantaged in a place like this, filled with smoke.

Well, the smoke itself wasn't that much of an issue.

Sharon Stiller was actually feeling something off from that mysterious object.

The person who she was the most afraid of was nowhere to be seen.

And instead there was a strange ball of red veins.

'I thought we were going to end it quickly but...They're holding on quite well.'

Sharon Stiller frowned as he looked at Kamiyou who was making strange sounds and gestures and giving people orders.

Because of this man's leadership, the bug players were being even more annoying.

'Just a traitor...Pretending to be a leader. Annoying.'

Then.

Sharon Stiller smiled faintly.

‘Heheh. Just a traitor indeed. ’

Don’t the ones whose accounts were getting erased over there have any right to know?

Sharon Stiller surrounded her body in flames and shouted.

“Hahaha! Aren’t you guys curious? How we found you guys so easily?”

‘Fuck.’

Kamiyou used a few more skills to block Sharon Stiller’s mouth but it was all futile.

The thick wall that had been born from the flames melted all of Kamiyou’s mana.

And Sharon Stiller stared at Kamiyou’s actions and smiled as she spoke.

And as she expected.

A look of curiosity appeared in the faces of the adventurers.

‘No way. Kamiyou?’

‘Our leader betrayed us?’

There’s no other reason but this.

Since they were all suppressed by Kamiyou’s trait, <Contract>.

If a traitor existed then Kamiyou was the only suspect.

Then.

“Bastards! Trying all sorts of methods because it’s not going your way! Get lost!”

Einchel suppressed her uneasy mind and shouted.

Even if that bitch’s words were right, she couldn’t accept them now.

In a situation where every bit of strength of mattered, even a bit of doubt could be extremely fatal.

If they found out that their leader was a traitor, who would listen then?



‘It’s not too late to ask... After we finish.’

The most important thing right now was surviving through this situation.

Then.

Sharon chuckled and signaled Olsen.

Whooosh!

A tremendous amount of chill exploded out from Olsen’s body and rushed towards Kamiyou.

‘Ugh.’

The moment Kamiyou was about to dodge the wave of frost by jumping up.

Whooosh!

Large amounts of flames exploded out from Sharon Stiller’s body and stopped Kamiyou’s movements.

‘Fuck!’

In the small moment Kamiyou was stopped from both of their attacks.

Crackle!

Kamiyou's artificial leg was frozen from the ice spell.

And then the storm of flames rushed over his body.

And Kamiyou clenched his teeth as he smashed his artificial leg.

Boom!

The fake leg broke from Kamiyou's hand and he jumped into the air after he was set free from Olsen's ice.

Tatak!

Olsen and Sharon Stiller failed their attacks and Kamiyou escaped but their expressions reflected the opposite.

Sharon Stiller laughed towards Kamiyou who had a grim expression as she pulled out Kamiyou's artificial leg and started to melt it with her flames.

Drooop.

Soon.

The artificial leg couldn't handle the expansion and deflation from the heat and the chill and broke apart.

And something fell out from it.

A strange-looking artifact.

Sharon Stiller showcased the artifact in the air a few times and then spoke with a smile.

“Isn't having such an amazing tracker like this within one's body a fantastic proof of him being on our side?”

Mumble mumble.

In an instant.

The mumbles of the surrounding people got louder and Kamiyou clenched his teeth.

‘Fuck.’

The last shackle that those guys had put on him.

<If you take this off then... We'll treat it as a betrayal, chase you

all down and kill you. Though it looks small, it's something we gained from the royal group personally. It's quite precious so keep it well. Hahahaha.>

Kamiyou made an expression of despair as he thought of Himura's laugh in the past.

## Chapter 244 : Unsealing (6)

---

Rummblee.

As the conversation ended.

The leader of the spirits, Akun, nodded after hearing Hansoo's words.

<Good. I'll agree to your terms.>

His terms weren't quite satisfactory but he couldn't do anything else.

Since he didn't know how long he would be stuck in here if he didn't seize this chance.

Hansoo spoke to Akun.

"Let's hurry with the test."

Though he was trapped in here, an uneasy feeling kept bothering him.

Probably meaning that the outside situation wasn't going that well.

He needed to handle things here quickly and get out.

Akun nodded to Hansoo's words.

<The test itself isn't that complicated. We only need one thing.>

There was no need for the test to be complex.

It just needed to be hard.

And the test of the soul was extremely hard even in comparison to the test of the physical body.

Akun pointed towards the tens of thousands of souls behind him and spoke.

<Endure us all.>

The 3 godly treasures of the empires.

Rangkal's stake dispersed.

Arhal's Wall destroyed.

And God's Flail... Absorbed and saved.

All sorts of powers.

So the flail itself, which existed as the core of the seal, had a tremendous amount of energy and hatred stored inside it.

But in order to break the seal and use the flail properly, a procedure of absorbing all the strength was needed.

Absorbing the 66,666 souls within the flail.

Including the energy of the mana node contained within all these souls.

Controlling all the energy and hatred within the souls.

That was the basic requirements of controlling the God's Flail.

One needed to handle all those souls being inside them and to be able to control them.

If they failed one of two things would happen.

Either their entire body would blow apart.

Or they would go crazy.

The leader, Akun, continued to speak.

<If you're afraid then you can just give up now.>

Hansoo cracked his neck and stepped forward.

“Begin.”

The moment those words came out.

Akun nodded and signaled behind him.

Then.

Tens of thousands of red souls charged towards Hansoo.

<It'll be extremely hard. Pray that you won't get distracted until this ends.>

It was something one would need to focus their entire minds on.

If people disturbed them from outside, it would become even harder.

.....

Everyone stopped fighting.



And suspicion grew from their eyes.

Of course they all knew how much their leader, Kamiyou, had cared for them up until now.

It couldn't be all lies.

Well, if they were indeed lies in the first place, he wouldn't have fought with his life on the line like that.

But it was indeed suspicious.

How they were found.

And how such a thing was hiding inside their leader's leg.

It would be impossible to put such a thing inside Kamiyou's leg without knowing him.

A sentence appeared inside their minds.

'...Should we really follow that guy's commands? Is he going to just give us up at the end?'

All sorts of ideas appeared inside their minds.

He might be just pretending to be fighting with all he had and instead he might be trying to tie them down instead.

Or there might be something else.

They didn't know everything about this world either.

Kamiyou and Einchel grinded their teeth while looking at the scene.

‘...Fuck.’

They could almost hear it.

Sounds of things falling.

Being united itself was not enough but if they are suspicious of each other, the result was clear.

Their opponents were no joke.

Then.

Boooom!

“Kuuhuuk!”

“Fucking hell!”

The Scarlet and Gold demons saw an opening and started to shred everything apart.

Through the cracks that appeared between their relations.

“Fuck. No!”

Kamiyou balanced himself on his one leg and tried to hurriedly rush in to fight but was blocked by someone.

By Sharon Stiller who he was against.

“Hahahaha! Where are you trying to go?”

Boooooooooom!

Soon a loud noise exploded out from between Sharon Stiller and Kamiyou.

Kamiyou moved away from Sharon Stiller and shouted.

“12th group move this...”

But the moment he saw the expressions of the adventurers.

Kamiyou realized that he had lost to Sharon Stiller.

Kamiyou realized he had made a mistake as he saw the eyes of his comrades which were filled with suspicion and uneasiness.

‘I should’ve strongly denied that claim.’

Whether it made sense or not, he should’ve denied it first.

The evidence was too clear.

And the guilt that was inside his mind.

These two things made Kamiyou hesitate and as a result confirmed it.

The fact that their leader might’ve really betrayed them.

Then.

Boooooom!

A flame dragon exploded out from Sharon Stiller’s body and smashed into Kamiyou.

“Kuhuk!”

“Hahahaha! This is the end!”

Sharon Stiller laughed as she looked at Kamiyou who was surrounded by a tremendous amount of flames.

‘Ahhh. Stress relief.’

Sharon Stiller’s lips slowly crawled up a smile as she saw the expressions made by countless bug players right before their deaths.

She had hidden it from others because of her image at first but she had a very bad habit.

A very bad habit that made her into a bug killer.

‘Well. I wasn’t a bug killer from the start.’

Sharon Stiller thought of her first days in this game.

Because she had some ability, she had advanced quite fast.

But there was something she had overlooked.

That the game she had started because she liked, had become tremendously stressful to her.

The moment her hobby became her work, the hobby was no longer a hobby and both the reality and the game were the same.

But she couldn't give up her wants and needs so Sharon Stiller faked a smile on the outside and lived in stress.

Then.

Sharon Stiller coincidentally saw a bug killer killing a bug player.

And their expressions of being hunted.

The ones being logged out in rage.

Those who had received a large amount of strength but only had one life in exchange, the expressions of such people dying.

Then.

Sharon Stiller realized which path she had to take.

‘How nice.’

Sharon Stiller made a content expression while looking at

Kamiyou who was lost in despair.

Though they were in despair, she was not.

She could just revive.

Their expressions allowed her to confirm how safe and stable her position was.

Watching their expressions from a safe location was extremely enjoyable and Sharon Stiller finally realized how she could relieve her stress.

From that day onwards she searched for these bug players and even studied about them.

She then purposely annoyed them and then killed them.

And as this continued, she became the leader of the Scarlet Demons.

Sharon Stiller laughed.

‘Now...I need to finish things off. I’m done playing around.’

This incident was something that wasn’t quite common even in her life.

Enjoying her time leisurely would be good but that bright red glowing object kept making her feel uneasy.

Sharon Stiller pushed the power of the spirit stone to the limits after deciding to end this quickly.

Whooooosh!

The flame from the Scarlet Flower burnt at an intense rate that no flame up until now could even be compared to.

To the point of making Kamiyou in front of her feel pain.

‘Ugh...’

The injuries caused by Sharon Stiller’s blades cracked open from by the heat and caused intense amounts of pain.

Kamiyou clenched his teeth and made an expression of despair.

Not from the pain but from the people dying away in his surroundings.

They were trying their best to stay alive but they were nowhere close enough.



Only he, who could use the power of the trait and control them, could command them to their fullest potential.

“Please! At this rate...!”

Kamiyou shouted urgently but only was only met with suspicion.

Kamiyou sighed.

There were no leaders who could gloss over the gap created by loss of credit.

Since he couldn't control a human's emotions with the contract.

They were now even being wary of those who they were usually friendly with while fighting.

Their full battle potential would not come out like this.

Kamiyou clenched his teeth and touched his wrist as he saw the people from the Ant Tunnel and even Einchel fighting while being on guard.

Well, the symbol on his wrist.

‘Could I win... With this?’

But Kamiyou shook his head.

He couldn't use this just because he wanted to.

The person who had given this to him had told him so.

And the situation right now wasn't that good.

Kamiyou gave up and instead clenched his sword.

'Let's try to hold on. Just a bit more...I just need to hold on a bit more!'

Thump. Thump.

The beating sound from the object in the distance could be heard from everyone.

As if something was about to happen.

The problem was that Kamiyou wasn't the only person that was watching this.

Sharon Stiller frowned.

That thing.

That thing that was beating over there was the one thing that kept people from falling into their respective holes of despair.

As if it was the final strand of hope they had.

‘It’s getting on my nerves. That thing breaking...Will I finally be able to see the expression I need?’

It bothered her.

They were dispersed so victory was already within her grasp.

‘Well. This guy isn’t a nuisance anymore either.’

Kamiyou, who was dealing with her, was already half a mess and the vice-captain Olsen was quite relaxed.

Sharon contemplated up to this point and then sent a signal to Olsen.

One spirit stone was strong enough but using two properly would cause an even stronger destructive force.

Like how she had broken Kamiyou’s artificial leg just before.

By freezing and heating it up.

Heat it and freeze it.

Expand, contract, expand and so on.

According to her experience so far, there was nothing that could withstand this combo.

‘Full power. Me first.’

Then.

Boooooom!

The flame that was burning Kamiyou’s skin just from the heat alone flew out.

Towards the ball of veins in the distance.

The tremendous amount of heat pushed past Kamiyou and cleared a path towards the ball of veins in the distance.

Kamiyou clenched his fist while he looked at the powerful attack that made hundreds of people stop in their tracks and scurry away from it.

‘...No.’

He couldn't be disturbed.

The thing Hansoo was doing was the last bit of hope they had remaining.

If that hope got crushed, it was the end for all of them.

But there was no other way.

‘Fucking hell...They were playing around.’

Kamiyou fell into a daze from the firepower that was dimensions apart from what he had seen up until now.

The conversation he had with the prophet in the past was playing back in his head.

<Just a prophecy is a bit too cheap for the price of saving our children. I'll bless you guys. But remember. If you want to use this blessing properly then you have to go into the Spirit Lands. There's something you need to do in there.>

The prophet then added two other words of advice.

First.

There was somebody who had received this blessing in the past and they might've gone into the Spirit Lands already so if he met them, he was to ask them for assistance.

<Well... It'll be amazing. Hehehe. It's a tremendous amount of power. Make sure you visit when you get the time. We can't go out but you can.>

Kamiyou smiled bitterly as he thought of the Prophet's words.

Him being tied down in the maze, he was in the same situation as them.

If he had left for the Spirit Lands back then, he might've gained that strength but all the other people in the Ant Tunnel would've died.

By the hands of Himura who would have assumed his betrayal.

The prophet then gave the second piece of advice.

Well, it was more of a warning.

<If you can't go to the Spirit Lands then... Just forget about it. Even if you could use it to a certain extent...You will definitely die.>

Kamiyou smiled as he thought of the Prophet's words.

‘What a perfect timing.’

He didn’t believe that there was a good time for someone to die.

But the current timing was perfect.

The condition was created by the opponent, he only needed the resolve.

‘Since I caused this...I need to deal with it.’

Kamiyou laughed sadly and then raised his sleeves.

Then.

Whooooosh!

Kamiyou gazed at the flame that was rushing off while melting the maze down.

He then jumped in.

Towards the flame.

Then.

Booooooooooom!

Kamiyou and the flame collided with each other and screamed out.

Kiiiiiiing!

The symbol started to shine brightly while he was being covered in the intense heat of the spirit stone.



# Chapter 245 : Unsealing (7)

---

The curse of the Ains.

This was a curse that one would receive once they killed Ains below the 5th floor.

The moment the Ains were killed, a strange aura came out from their body and surrounded those who assisted in killing them.

Then a strangely shaped symbol would remain in their body. The players called this the Curse of the Ains due to it being the final trace they left behind.

Of course the players didn't give a single damn.

Maybe if this caused some form of penalty but there were none.

The protection elixir that dropped from killing them was more important than some lousy curse so they continued to climb down to the 5th floor and killed off Ains.

But BKamiyou heard something else.

<This curse is to distinguish between those who have killed members of our race and those who haven't. Only those who don't have this curse can be blessed.>

That was how he got the blessing.

And this blessing had one purpose.

‘Being able to partly control the ability of the Ains... Who were born with the right to control the spirits and elements.’

Well, this had no meaning.

They only had the right to use the strength, they had no spirits to control.

It was more like a license.

A license given to those who were allowed to control the tremendous amount of strength the spirits contained.

But the story was different now.

Since that strength was in front of his eyes.

Whoooosh!

The symbol in Kamiyou’s body started to devour the flames.

The fragment of the strength created from the <Spirit Stone> that was created from the congregation of a spirit during its

destruction.

“Uh? Huhh?”

He could see Sharon Stiller staggering with a shocked expression in the distance.

‘She probably never even saw such a thing happening.’

Kamiyou mumbled as he looked at Sharon Stiller.

Of course she hadn’t.

All the players here had lost their rights to receive the blessing the moment they killed the Ains.

It was obvious they haven’t heard about somebody being able to absorb the power of the Spirit Stones.

But Kamiyou couldn’t laugh in victory.

He realized.

Why the prophet had warned him against borrowing the strength of the Spirit Stones before going into the Spirit Land.

‘Kuhuk!’

Kamiyou coughed out blood as he felt something breaking apart in a corner of his body.

License, the blessing of the Ains protected one from their bodies getting destroyed and melting down from the powers of the spirits.

But handling this strength was a whole another matter.

A power birthed from the essence of nature.

It was not something the humans could handle.

He needed something to control this power.

And outside the spirit stone, there were no such kind beings that would help Kamiyou.

At least there was a bit of thought existing within the Spirit Stones so it helped people in controlling their power but Kamiyou didn't even have such a thing.

And he had forcibly stolen that strength and stored it within his body, there was no way his body would remain intact.

The powerful scarlet energy that raged inside his body like a crazed bull.

The effects of that energy.

His insides were getting destroyed at a rapid pace.

‘Well...I sealed one at least.’

Kamiyou mumbled as he coughed up blood.

He could see Sharon Stiller freaking out as she saw her Spirit Stone slowly turning dim.

Of course his body was breaking down.

The story might’ve been different if it was a tiny spirit stone but he had absorbed the power of a S-level Spirit Stone that had reached the peak of its power.

Even if it was him, this was far beyond the limits of his body.

And his body was already about to break down.

His body slowly turned red as if he had swallowed lava and was creating smoke.

Even if he could let out all this energy, his body would still slowly melt and break down.

To the point of him not being able to recover.

But there was a method to actually use the tremendous amount of energy in his body.

‘I’m going to die anyway.’

Kamiyou gazed at the Scarlet and Gold Demons who were staring at him in a daze and then signalled Einchel who was looking at him in shock.

He could still trust Einchel.

Since she had helped him for so long, there wouldn’t be much of an issue.

<Deal with the aftermath well.>

“Wait...!”

Even before Einchel could reply.

Boooom!

Kamiyou gathered the overflowing energy into his one remaining foot, blew it up and then jumped into the air.

Towards the center of the Scarlet Demons who were staring at him in a daze.

Kamiyou closed his eyes while watching the Scarlet Demons who were trying to cut him down even in the midst of all this.

It didn't matter anymore.

'Finally, I can rest in peace. It's been a while since I saw them.'

Things had been way too hard both mentally and physically up until now.

The guilt from betraying the other adventurers and the uneasiness of not knowing when Himura's Ant Eater clan would crash in.

The thing that filled his day was not the comfort of surviving another day but anxiety about what would happen tomorrow.

He was holding on day by day because of the adventurers who had gathered while believing in him and his friends who were captured by Himura but he wanted to rest now.

Since all the hostages would've been dead by now.

'I'm going Hansoo. And Einchel, please treat her well.'

As he finished his thoughts.

Kamiyou followed his urge and released the Ain's blessing that suppressed the intense amount of energy that was holed up inside his body.

Towards the Scarlet and Gold Demons in front of him.

Kamiyou smiled as he felt that energy exploding out from his body.

Then.

Boooooooooooooom!

A tremendous amount of heat exploded out from Kamiyou's body and into the Gold and Scarlet Demons.

.....

Chiiiiiiiiiiiiik.

A large amount of steam and smoke filled the entire area.

And Einchel stood within that smoke looking towards the location where the explosion took place.



The explosion was so powerful that she and the other adventurers couldn't escape it but that flame didn't hurt their bodies even a bit.

No, the flame instead covered their body and warmed them up.

As if it could distinguish between enemy and friends.

Christopher was shocked at this.

‘The attacks of the spirits...I heard they could target specific people.’

It was different from their skills that didn't discriminate and caused damage to everything.

The power was secondary, this was a strength that could distinguish between friends and foe in detail.

That was why it shone in a fight like this where the opposing sides were scrambled.

‘...But it seems there was a limit in discerning the foe huh. At least to him.’

Christopher thought of Kamiyou with a pitiful expression.

He didn't know about the effects of the symbol but it was clear that there was a limit to it.

Since if there wasn't such a limit, he wouldn't have decided to go to such an extreme length as self-destruction.

Christopher sensed the meager amount of heat and then sighed in relief.

‘Well... We can at least hold on now.’

Though they still had the Stone of Immortality, those guys over there would've probably used the stone once already from the explosion.

They could handle this much.

‘And... It seems their suspicions died out now.’

Everyone's expressions were frozen from Kamiyou's sacrifice.

But it was clear that the suspicions and the uneasiness had been wiped away.

As Christopher made an expression of relief.

Whooooosh.

A chill ran up Christopher's body.

And he stopped.

'...A chill?'

Even if the heat didn't have any effect on them, there was no reason for them to feel chilly.

As Christopher made an uneasy face.

Crackle crackle.

The sounds of something freezing could be heard over the smoke in the distance.

And as everyone put their guard up and clenched their weapons.

Whooooosh.

The smoke dispersed and everyone could see the new scene.

The entire area was frozen.

Thousands of icicles and ice walls.

This frozen land was the reason why they felt the chill.

‘Fuck. No way...’

Crackle.

“Fucking hell. Is anyone in their right minds? Who the hell is this?”

Somebody broke out from the ice in the distance while cursing out loud.

As if proving that this chill was the power of a spirit, he came out spotless.

Crack Crack.

‘Fuck.’

Christopher grinded his teeth as he watched the players coming out from the ice.

.....

Cracccckk!

Along with the sound of something breaking, the blue lights of the gauntlets in the man's hand disappeared.

As if something that provided it with strength had broken.

The man, Olsen, looked at his glove and got pissed.

“You bastards. Do you even know how expensive this is? It's an entire house. An entire fucking house.”

That Spirit Stone's price was as expensive as a house in the center of the capital.

No, the price wasn't the issue but rather the supply.

But just a bit ago the Spirit Stone had broken from him using <Berserk Mode>.

The final card the Spirit Stones had which allowed them to exert a power numerous times more powerful.

‘...It's not like I couldn't use it either.’

Olsen grinded his teeth.

The attack he had to withstand just now was most of the energy

from Sharon's spirit stone.

If they faced it head on then most of the people here would've been logged out.

And the ones in front of their eyes would've ran away using that small time frame.

And that wasn't something he could afford for just a single spirit stone.

'Well. The clan leader will probably buy it back for us.'

Olsen blew out the remaining bits of smoke and then shouted.

"Yo! Come out! Continue what you were doing up until now!"

The Gold and Scarlet Demons behind him gritted their teeth as they walked out from the ice.

They were a bit rattled from the previous explosion.

'Well, this is the end at least.'

As Olsen walked forward.

Tak.

Something got in the way of his right foot and Olsen frowned as he looked at what it was.

Kamiyou, whose body was bubbling all over and looked like he was about to die, was laying on the ground half dead.

‘He’s alive?’

Since he hadn’t actually turned himself into a bomb and instead had overheated, he could actually survive if he was lucky.

It was more than possible if the chill from his spirit stone chilled his heated body.

‘Well. It’s not like this guy should be happy or anything.’

Although he had survived thanks to the chill, everybody else here would die.

The same thing would happen to the guy by his foot.

Kuduk.

Olsen smiled as he kicked away Kamiyou laying on the ground like a piece of rag and then spoke to the bug players watching him with terrified expressions.

“You bastards. Let’s not meet each other again. And don’t be so sad over it. Just think of it this way, you guys will stay with us.”

“This fucking bastard...”

Olsen laughed coldly towards Christopher who had cursed out loud.

At least it wouldn’t be a worthless death.

They would disappear into artifacts and experience.

‘See how far we go. This is just the beginning.’

As Olsen mumbled.

Words came out from the clouds of smoke that filled the area which was created from the collision of heat and frost.

“Staying with you guys...Not bad.”

“What...”

Even before Olsen could finish his reply.



Kwadddddk!

A hand appeared from the smoke.

‘What the...! How did he get so close!’

Olsen freaked out and tried to swing his gauntlet.

Crunch!

A tremendous amount of force flicked away Olsen’s fist and grabbed his neck.

Kwaaaddddduk!

“Uggghhh....”

Chiiiiiii....

The thick arm which had grabbed Olsen’s neck lifted him high up and the scarlet hand started to burn the area around his neck and face.

Hansoo, who walked out with his scorching hot body, laughed in a cold manner.

“It’s just beginning, now.”

‘Become fertilizer.’

Crunch.

As Hansoo poured strength into his hands.

The scorching hot hand smashed Olsen’s head.

He wasn’t pleased with just this.

A voice could be heard inside his head.

<There are a total of 67,313 people inside the maze. They can’t run away either. Since the 1st floor is still blocked.>

Hansoo made a content expression at the loud voice in his head.

He had completed his 1st task.

He needed to raise his strength as much as possible before he started the 2nd task.

‘I’m going to kill you all.’

Hansoo, whose entire body was colored blood-red like the colors

of the souls, looked at the entire maze greedily.

.....

Great Maze, deep underground.

Though their bodies were translucent like a lingering smoke, the existences which would have a look of a human if their bodies became clear looked towards the trembling ceiling.

The damned ceiling that stopped them from heading up into the sky.

<This is the beginning.>

The woman who was standing at the deepest part mumbled.

# Chapter 246 : Ain (1)

---

Rumble.

‘What the hell is this.’

Sharon Stiller muttered with a dumbfounded expression.

Their trump card had been used and Kamiyou’s plots had been blocked.

Only massacre remained.

Sharon Stiller, who had thought that everything was done and she just had to go back, was in a daze at the unreal scene in front of her.

Sharon Stiller was a very greedy person.

The problem was that she was a bit too ordinary.

She wasn’t able to fulfill her desires because she didn’t have any talents or anything in the real world.

The bag she wanted, the clothes she wanted, the man she wanted.

And because she couldn't have any of this in real life, she decided to invest most of her life into this place, Exodus.

Since the only mediocre talent she had was at gaming.

And her guess was correct.

Since she climbed this far.

And today was the highlight, the climax.

Though she was a bit annoyed when Kamiyou retaliated, she was having calm thoughts since all his plots had been used up.

As long as she accomplished this it was clear that Himura would give her a befitting reward.

Both in game and in reality.

‘But what the hell is this?’

Sharon Stiller was in a daze with a dumbfounded expression.

Everything changed in a single moment.

The happy thoughts she had inside her head started to get demolished by the harsh reality in front of her eyes.

Because of one person, that one person who came out from the smoke.

Olsen's level was already at the limit.

Along with the high quality artifacts and protective skills that he had strung around his body.

Even if his spirit stone broke, he was somebody who shouldn't die in such a manner.

Well, he could indeed get killed.

But that should be by a top quality skill, not just some random hand.

An unreal amount of power and destructive force.

He didn't have that level of power when he had killed her before.

'These fucking bastards... What kind of hack is this...'

Hansoo's flaming body itself was not a simple matter.

It looked like something filled him up and was even overflowing.

Sharon Stiller could feel a chill run down her back from watching this.

She clenched her teeth.

‘What the fuck, this is just a game...’

Sharon Stiller could hear a whisper.

From Hansoo who had raised Kamiyou from the ground.

“Good job. I’ll...Take it from here.”

She didn’t know what he was going to do.

But the moment she heard those words.

Her entire body trembled.

And even before she could react.

Hansoo’s left hand moved.

A simple gesture.

A light movement that seemed like it was shaking off some water

from his hands but the effect of such a movement was not that light.

The moment the tip of his fingers moved within the smoke.

Boooooooooom!

A tremendous sound created by an explosion rang throughout the area.

A force that should be associated to just a simple movement of one's hand.

“Huh?”

“What?!”

The moment the Gold and Scarlet Demons shouted out in shock.

Whooooosh!

Something flew through the smoke.

Towards Sharon Stiller and the other players who were standing in a daze.

The speed and the force behind it.



All the hairs on Sharon Stiller's body rose up.

'I have to block...'

Sharon Stiller instinctively tried to raise the weapon which had the Spirit Stone embedded in it.

In order to block the object flying towards her.

The weapon which had a spirit stone embedded in it was many more times more durable than other weapons.

Logically it should be able to block an attack created by some slight hand movements.

But Sharon Stiller suppressed her instincts and instead performed another action.

'No! I must dodge it!'

Boooooom!

From the might of the object flying towards her, it was clear what she should do.

That was not something she could block.

Sharon Stiller's entire body quickly reacted and started to shrink.

And thanks to her body which had been tempered through all sorts of experiences, she had been able to react to it.

Sharon Stiller's body moved outside of the trajectory of the object flying towards the Scarlet Demons.

Towards a location where she would just barely be hit.

'Good. Then the main target wouldn't be....'

As Sharon Stiller sighed in relief.

Whooooosh!

The red object made a sharp turn and curved like a snake.

At an angle that was impossible with its speed and mass.

'What the fuck!!'

A meteor being able to turn at that angle would look more realistic than this.

“No...!”

Sharon Stiller tried to scream out at the object that turned at an unreal angle and towards her but that was all she could do.

Boooooom!

Her head and the piece of metal collided and created a large explosive sound.

Then.

The meteor-like metal object pierced her head and turned her into gold powder.

It then pierced numerous tens of people behind her.

Whooosh!

Crunch!

Ududududuk!

“What the hell!”

“Uaaaaak!”

“Fucking he...”

Some tried to dodge and some tried to block.

The Scarlet and Gold Demons were all prepared for it in their own ways but it was all useless.

The ones who tried to block had their bodies blown apart and the ones who tried to dodge had their heads pierced by the snake-like metal object.

In a short moment that was less than a second, numerous tens of people disappeared into golden light.

“What the hell! This is...”

“What! What is this!”

The comrades standing next to them had disappeared into golden light after a single blink.

They were holding on because it was just a game, if this was reality then they would’ve all pissed their pants.

As people made dumbfounded expressions at this unreal scene.

The flail, which had pierced through multiple dozens of people, returned back to Hansoo's hand.

“Hmm...”

As Hansoo made a discontent expression while looking at the flail in his hand.

Akun, the leader of the souls, mumbled in his hand.

<Throwing it isn't very efficient.>

“Is that so...”

There was a missing sentence before this to the players but they soon figured out what Hansoo meant.

Since Hansoo himself spoke it out loud.

“I guess I'll have to smash with it directly.”

Then.

Hansoo tightly held onto the handle of the flail with his left hand.

Then.

Whooooooooosh!

Hansoo's body flew into the air along with a loud noise.

Towards the Gold and Scarlet Demons in the distance who were cursing.

Then his body fell towards the center of all the players.

And the players were shocked at this scene.

“This guy, is he looking down on us this much...?”

“He must be crazy.”

The attack being powerful and the attack either working or not were two different things.

The thing they were most worried about was him running around while that weapon destroyed them.

They could catch up to him in term of speeds at least, but his weapon could not be tracked even with their eyes.

This was why they even had thoughts of ignoring him and going for the bug players in the back.

So they could at least get some experience while running around.

But for him to directly jump in.

They didn't have to fear that weapon if they killed him.

'Well. That's not the end.'

One of the Scarlet Demons made a greedy expression.

What if he got that weapon?

Top ranker.

What a wonderful title.

Even among the countless players, only 100 people in total had the rights to this title.

If he had that weapon, he might be able to become a top ranker.

A top ranker who was even more famous than a president and even had more fans than celebrities in the real world.

'Yeah. There's no owner to an item. There are no weapons I

cannot use, I'm already at the max level.'

And as if he wasn't the only one who thought of this, the countless Gold and Scarlet Demons who were thinking about going for the bug players were now heading towards the location where Hansoo would land.

'Dumbasses. At least some need to attack him to disperse his attention.'

As a few Scarlet Demons were about to scream towards the Gold Demons.

"Dropping your guard?"

Whooosh!

Hansoo mumbled as he dropped and created a red arc by swinging his arm.

An arc which swung through the head of the Scarlet Demon next to him.

"Kill him!"

"Fearless bastard!"



Countless Gold and Scarlet Demons were charging towards him.

With their best attacking skills.

They knew about the strength behind his attacks.

It would just be better to have trades because of that power.

Which means they didn't have to worry about defending, since they couldn't, or about their mana since all they had was a single shot.

They only had to attack.

With their most powerful attack.

Whooosh!

Boooom!

Kuuuguguguung!

Numerous differently colored lights and shadows exploded out from the hands of the Scarlet and Gold Demons.

A might that terrified the adventurers watching.

High level skills which could easily shred them apart.

And multiple dozens of these flew towards Hansoo.

Towards Hansoo's scorching red body which had a similar color as a metal that had been heated up in a forge.

Then.

Boooooom!

Kwaaagagagang!

“Yosh!”

“Direct hit!”

Though some had been dodged and some had been blocked, most of them hit him directly.

And the Scarlet Demon's expressions were even better.

As they had fought before, they knew that this guy wasn't an immortal like them.

Which meant that damage of this level would be effective.

But sadly, their expectations and hope had been shattered.

Whooooosh!

Through the loud noises and smoke, a streak red light leaked through.

A red light that was different from their attack skills.

And a humanoid form walked through that smoke.

Without any traces of damage on his body.

And the red light that was shining out from Hansoo's body seemed as if it wanted to explode.

If the light up until now was that of a heated metal, the light that was being emitted now resembled a rising sun.

And all of the Gold and Scarlet Demons were in a daze.

“What the...”

“...Come on, this is too much. Even if it's a hack.”

Even if it was a hack, there should be some manners between gamers.

As the people lost their words.

Hansoo looked at the red light that was slowly fading away.

“Just this much huh.”

A line delivered by a certain voice could be heard inside his head.

<Now there's 66552 left. Just pulling some out to use it only uses this much but...The flail's [Ability] uses much more so use them sparingly.>

Hansoo thought about the remaining number in his head.

‘No need to use it.’

Then.

Whooooosh!

As if it the warm up had ended, Hansoo's hands started to fly through the air crazily.

Forked Lightning in his right hand.

And God’s Flail in his left.

And with this.

Booom!

Boom!

Kuududuk!

“Waaaak! This bastard!”

“Run away!”

“Where are you going you bastards!”

“Uwaaaak! Fucking bug players! Let us go!”

Plenty of different collisions and sounds of explosions rang throughout the entire area.

Along with the rage-filled yells and the players’ screams.

.....

Korin Kingdom's fortress which faced the War Fortress in the Keil Kingdom.

A man stood on a tall mountain nearby.

“Haha. How nice.”

‘For that tiny spirit bomb to have this much of an effect. What an amazing benefit.’

The man, who had a hand over his eye and was watching the Great Maze, laughed heartily.

Well, he was actually looking at the frowning expression of Arthus Krancheska due to the seal starting to break apart.

There's nothing better than his work progressing well and annoying somebody he did not like.

Though everyone inside that maze would face the rage of Arthus Krancheska.

‘One of the three godly treasures of the empires huh. What a nice title.’

An artifact from before the time of extinction.

Once the ancient artifact, God's Flail, got ripped apart, the hidden race would wake up.

And the stopped world would soon start to flow again.

The kingdoms, empires, Ains and even the players.

'It's rolling. It's finally rolling.'

As he thought up to this point.

The smiling man's expression died out.

'I need to prepare properly.'

Then.

Oooooong.

From the surrounding shadows, dark energy started to flow out.

Towards the man's body.

And then the man's body, which had now been shrouded in a large amount of darkness, disappeared.

Leaving behind the scenery of the War Fortress in the distance.



## Chapter 247 : Ain (2)

---

Rummbble.

Einchel, who was looking at Kamiyou who had been turned into a mess and was unconscious, turned around and looked behind her.

Towards Hansoo who was cooling the heat off from his body.

Chiiiiiiiik.

The players had long turned into golden lights.

Only the adventurers were left in the area.

Einchel carefully asked Hansoo who was cooling his body, which had been heated up from the energy of the mana node.

“What are you going to do now? Didn’t you say the seal would break soon?”

They knew that Hansoo was powerful.

But didn’t Hansoo say before that the monster of the kingdom above, Arthus Francheska, might come down?

The curse of the Ains that these guys were afraid of also worked

from the energy of the seal.

The seal breaking meant that the curse which worked from that energy would also disappear.

Arthus Krancheska might charge down right away.

‘Well. He probably broke the seal because he had a plan...’

Hansoo shook his head at Einchel.

“The seal that had been sustained for hundreds of years cannot break in such a short amount of time.”

The energy from the mana node got converted by the Flail and the souls and flowed into the magic formation.

And because of that magic formation, the seal would be conversed.

Though the flail, which connected the mana node and the magic formation, had disappeared, there was still a large amount of energy which had been flowing into the magic formation up until now.

Which meant that the curse of the Ains, which used up that energy, was still in effect.

‘Which means that there’s a bit more time until Arthus Krancheska would come down.’

He’s probably going crazy outside.

Since the entire Great Seal had been broken.

He would’ve long wanted to charge into this place.

But he couldn’t.

Since he knew that the flail wouldn’t get pulled out by itself.

Going into the maze in a situation where the curse was still in effect and the person who pulled the flail was still inside was an act of suicide.

Any person with a brain would know.

“I’ll finish it before then.”

“...Finish? You aren’t going down?”

Hansoo laughed.

“Yeah. I’m going to do it thoroughly. It’ll be wasteful to leave them behind.”

‘...How.’

Einchel knew what he was talking about when it said it would be a waste.

But in a situation where they didn’t know when Krancheska will come down, how will they kill off the people inside the maze?

Einchel made a confused expression.

.....

Rummbles.

Trembles.

The players who were guarding the 4th floor were getting more and more uneasy as they felt the vibrations that were getting more and more powerful.

“Yo. How long are you going to stay here anyway? This doesn’t seem that simple.”

The players who were guarding the portal replied.

“Well. The exit on the 1st floor is blocked anyway. And that crazy

Oldbeer bastard went to create a ruckus on the 5th floor.”

“...Well.”

The player, <Alphagoo>, sighed and talked to his friends who had annoyed expressions.

“15 minutes. Let’s wait just 15 minutes more. If he doesn’t come out then let’s just go.”

“...10.”

“Fine.”

Alphagoo received his friend’s blunt reply and nodded.

It had already been 20 minutes since they started guarding the portal on the fourth floor.

And not just them, there were hundreds of people guarding the portal from the 3rd to the 4th floor.

In order to catch the blacklisted bug players whose rumors spread throughout the entire maze.

And there was more.

According to the stories from the players who had been assassinated throughout the maze, there was something else.

The bug player's nest that they had only heard rumors about.

Apparently hundreds of bug players came out from the nest and were roaming around somewhere in the 4th floor.

Though nobody who had seen them had lived, they could see traces which had remained behind so it being true was clear.

Alphagoo mumbled to himself.

'...The probability is half and half. Either 3rd or 5th floor.'

The chances were fifty percent.

Nobody could guess what the bug players were thinking.

But they had gambled on them going to the 3rd floor.

And he was feeling good for some reason today.

'If we catch them then...Jackpot. Heheheheh.'

Though hundreds of players were guarding the portal with him, he was confident in himself.

Confident enough to get one to two people by himself at least.

Since he was a high level player at level 240.

And from what he knew, the average level of the bug players was around 215 to 220.

Because of the Ant Eater clan chasing them down and killing them, he had heard that their levels weren't that high on average.

No matter how good the control of the bug players were, a difference of 10 levels was huge.

'Yeah. This is better than hunting for months in terms of rewards.'

As Alphagoo had his hopes raised thinking about the experience and artifacts the bug players would have.

"Heuk... Haa! Heuk!"

A mysterious person ran towards them while bleeding.

'Huh? Is it them?'

As Alphagoo was preparing to attack.

The person who had run out from the maze freaked out and yelled. “Don’t attack! Stop! I’m not a bug player! I’m a normal player!”

“...Player?”

Alphagoo made a depressed expression.

‘Well. the bug players aren’t crazy, why would they travel around by themselves.’

If they were going to go solo, they wouldn’t have moved around in a group of hundreds of people from the start.

‘What the. I know this person.’

But as Alphagoo made a dejected expression.

Kiiiiiiiingg.

The sound of mana being collected could be heard.

The sound of a skill being activated.

And as Alphagoo turned around, he could see his friend preparing a skill.



“Hey! What are the hell are you doing!”

His friend replied with an embarrassed expression.

“Well. Just in case...”

Alphagoo quickly held his friend’s hand and put it down.

“Don’t, I know that person.”

“Huh? You know her?”

As his friend asked him with a shocked expression, Alphagoo nodded.

“Yeah. We were in a party together in the past. The Id was... Einchel or something.”

He remembered because this player was quite memorable.

‘How did she get hurt like that.’

Maybe it was because he had set the settings to 19+ mode but the blood flowing out from her body was scarlet red and not golden.

As Alphagoo frowned while watching the woman, Einchel, who had injuries all over her body.

“Phew... Thank god. I almost died.”.

Alphagoo made a confused expression.

His friend, Betagoo, asked Einchel.

“What, did you get PKed or something? Why are you so hurt? Where’s your party...”

Einchel cursed out and yelled.

“Fuck. I got PKed. Really badly too.”

“Huh. Some crazy bastard...”

The people started to murmur at Einchel’s words.

Though there wasn’t a system which suppressed PKing, the players were still reluctant to PK.

Since PKing didn’t give many benefits and being targeted was very bad.

In a world where party play was the way to go, PKing would

destroy the relations one had with others necessary for party play.

Like the Blacklist which managed bug players, the Redlist which managed PKers existed.

In a world where looking up one's username told everyone if they were a PKer or not, not many people were daring enough to PK for fun.

Alphagoo clicked his tongue and asked Einchel.

“Miss Einchel. It must've been hard. We've met before right?”

“Ah... You're the person I met before. Hello.”

Alphagoo was delighted as he saw Einchel sighing in relief.

‘Yes. I knew my luck was good today.’

Einchel was quite attractive.

He wanted to use the party play last time as a means to get closer but he failed.

But for such a chance to come rolling by.

‘Did they say to create a rapport first? Or help her? I forgot... It

was all in english...’

He could barely remember but Alphagoo found a chance to continue the talk so he kept on going.

“Who is that bastard? Hurry and put him on the Redlist. It’ll become much more convenient that way.”

Einchel chuckled.

“No need. He’s already on another list.”

“...Another list?”

The players’ expressions changed at Einchel’s words.

There was only one more list they could think of other than the Redlist.

The friend next to Alphagoo asked with twinkling eyes.

“Did this happen from those bug players?”

Einchel nodded.

“...I got attacked by surprise. Our party got demolished as well. My friends probably all ran away. Since there’s about 50 of

them...There was no way to beat them. They were seriously strong like the rumors.”

The expression of the people brightened up at Einchel’s words.

‘Finally a clue!’

Fifty.

Though there were hundreds of people here, it was a good enough number to share.

Well, if there was more of them it might’ve been a bit hard.

But fifty.

It wasn’t too much to deal with and it was a good number to share.

Alphagoo asked with a bright expression.

The question which everyone wanted to ask.

“Is it far from here? Their nest?”

“Huh? You’re going to kill them?”

Alphagoo nodded at Einchel who was looking at him in doubt.

“Of course. They deserve to get killed.”

“...How thankful. Then I’ll guide you there.”

Einchel, who had frowned from Alphagoo’s sudden words, smiled as she replied.

.....

Boooom!

“Uaaaak! Ibanoph you bastard!”

“Fucking hell! You dare scam us?”

Ibanoph, who had convinced the players and dragged them along, scoffed as he cut their necks off.

Crunch!

“Heheh. Why are you so depressed. It’s not like you die for real..”

‘Heheh. Jesus my level rises quickly.’

The level which had stayed the same for a while was rising quite fast.

It wasn't hard either.

50 to 500.

The moment the players entered in groups of different sizes, he just needed to smash them apart.

To almost 800 bug players and Hansoo who stood in the front and swung his God's Flail and Forked Lightning, this amount of players weren't even snacks to them.

They got erased instantly and once they were gone the Watchmen would bring more.

They had already killed over 5000 players this way.

Since they didn't know when Arthus Krancheska would charge in, they couldn't set it up perfectly.

So if one looked at this system closely they might become suspicious but the players were still charging in like moths towards a flame.

They had nothing to worry about, they didn't die.

So they didn't weigh the risks that much and just followed the Watchmen here.

Even the ones who made suspicious expressions followed quickly because they didn't want anybody to get a headstart on them.

'At this pace... We should easily be able to get rid of everyone in the maze and hit the max level.'

Because of their levels rising steadily, the work was getting quicker and quicker.

Ibanoph made a joyful expression as he made a sound that only the Watchmen could hear throughout the maze.

Towards Einchel who would be guiding the players this way.

Then.

Tatatatatatak.

Ibanoph and the others started to hide their bodies behind the hundreds of crosses as they heard the footsteps in the distance.

With excited expressions.



Ibanoph finished his preparations and asked Hansoo in leisure.

“Are we going to contact the Ains after we hit max level like this?”

Logically, if they released the Ains then meeting them should be next.

‘And if those guys are really that strong...They should protect us from Arthus Krancheska or the other players.’

They had broken the seal for them, this was a natural conclusion to make.

And that meant that going down was the only way for them to survive.

But Hansoo destroyed Ibanoph’s hopes.

“No.”

“Then...?”

Hansoo pointed up at Ibanoph’s question.

“We’re going up.”

“Huh?”

Ibanoph made a confused expression at the unexpected answer.

“Why upwards...”

Before Ibanoph could even reply.

Boooooom!

“Hahaha! Is it here? Kill th...Uaaak!”

Einchel brought in another group of players and another collision occurred.

And Ibanoph made an annoyed expression while fighting the players.

Not because of these players but because of Hansoo’s words from before.

‘Go up? Why... He knows what’s up there...’

.....

“...Yo, let’s back up a bit. It’s hot.”

“Ugh.”

The players who were surrounding the Great Maze slowly backed off.

Because it was getting hard to withstand the heat.

The heat that was radiating from Arthus Krancheska's body.

The heat that radiated out from a level 330's rage was not something they could handle.

Rumble.

“... I'm not just going to kill them... No I won't...”

Arthus Krancheska, whose body was surrounded by an intense amount of heat and red energy, grinded his teeth as he glared downwards in rage.

# Chapter 248 : Ain (3)

---

Boooom!

Kuudududuk!

Loud noises continued to fill up the area one after the other.

Along with the screams of the players.

“Uaaak! This bastard! A scam?! You’re going on the Redlist!”

“That retard! They’re already on the Blacklist...Uaak!”

Booom!

In a fight where they would still lose if they were on equal grounds, they were outnumbered and were getting attacked by surprise.

And the levels of those adventurers were rising very fast as well.

Unlike Hansoo, they weren’t that low-leveled but the players they had killed so far was in tens of thousands.

Crunch!

Ibanoph sent a head flying at a speed and with a strength that wasn't comparable to the one he had in the past with a strange expression.

The him of now at level 240 was a completely different person from when he was at level 215 in the past.

But it was hard to actually sense how powerful he had become.

Due to another person going crazy right next to him.

Boooom!

Crunch!

“Aaaahh! What the hell is this!”

“Bug? This is a bug?!”

Ibanoph made a terrified expression as he looked at Hansoo who was sweeping off heads left and right.

‘...He's a real monster now huh.’

The skill which turned him into a dragonoid before didn't seemed to be something he could maintain for long as it had long worn out during the fight.

But he was even stronger now than when he had been in his dragonoid form before.

Most people couldn't block the flail anymore and they became skewered two to three at a time from his spear.

He alone killed dozens of times more than them combined.

Of course he also devoured a tremendous amount of experience as well.

Hansoo, who had almost leveled to 250 all the way from 200, was now truly a monster compared to what he had been before.

Everytime Hansoo swept by them, the players disappeared into golden light.

Dropping an artifact every time.

Clank.

Clang.

‘Look at the sheer amount that’s dropping...’

Ibanoph mumbled as he looked at the large amount of artifacts

that were scattered throughout the battlefield.

Usually, the chances of an artifact being dropped from getting PKed was not very high.

Of course the higher grade artifacts had a lower chance while the lower level grade ones had higher chances to drop.

It was similar to how the monsters in games rarely dropped items.

This is why the players didn't like to PK and instead swarmed towards bug players in a mad manner.

Unlike the players who only had a bit of chance to drop one of the low grade items they had, the bug players left behind everything.

But of course that was only true when considering small numbers.

He had killed tens of thousands.

Of course the artifacts that had dropped had accumulated to a frightening amount.

Then.

Boooom!

The final player left behind had his head blown apart and disappeared into golden light.

The place with crosses which had been filled with noise was swept clean.

And with that silence the adventurers started to move out.

To pick up the dropped artifacts.

‘Why is he asking us to gather these...’

Ibanoph picked up a gauntlet on the ground, looked at it a bit and then threw it into the storage on his back.

The artifacts he himself had were of much better quality.

They say artifacts were important but with the tremendous amount of artifacts on the ground, it was more than enough to fully equip all the adventurers here.

Since they couldn’t equip like five gauntlets or swing nine swords and axes, the remaining ones were all surplus.

In a place like Exodus where there wasn’t an inventory system,



artifacts like these weren't precious treasures but rather baggage.

Especially in a situation like this where they had to run away.

‘Run...Running away huh.’

Ibanoph felt down as he thought about the reality.

Hansoo and them had become enormously powerful.

But that was it.

The reality did not change.

Since the maze would disappear soon, they had no more places to hide or take shelter in.

The only thing that was left to do was a head-on collision.

And their opponents were millions of immortal players and the extremely powerful residents of the kingdoms and empires.

‘...They're really outside the standards huh.’

Ibanoph gulped as he thought of the 15 great clans of the players, Arthus Krancheska and the Great General Cykrus.

He then pondered for a bit and then spoke to Hansoo.

In order to confirm what he had heard before.

“...Weren’t we going to contact the Ains?”

He thought the reason why they had broke the seal was to contact the Ains.

With their strength, it seems more than possible to fight against the Kingdoms, Empires and even the players.

But Hansoo shook his head.

“We can’t yet.”.

An alliance with the Ains was indeed his final goal and releasing the seal as quick as possible for them to have freedom was correct as well.

Since the seal had been broken, everyone’s eyes will be on the Ains now.

But an alliance was something that would happen when both parties were at similar strengths.

‘Though they haven’t fully recovered from the seal breaking yet...They are still much more powerful than us.’

An alliance was not something done in kindness but something very pragmatic.

Something like an alliance would only be maintained when both parties needed each other and were a bit afraid of each other.

But what about now?

The Ains had the power to tie down the kingdoms and empires and even make them tremble in fear.

An enormous amount of might.

And another thing.

They had a prophet.

They could see into the future to a degree.

Hansoo’s superior position came from his knowledge of the future and him being able to utilize this to a degree.

But here it was likely that these things won’t work of these guys.

Since they might know part of the things he knew.

And there was a chance that they knew something that he didn't.

He had no clue as to how the Ains, who had both a large amount of strength and future knowledge, would act in the future, so he couldn't just go charging down rashly.

It would be like putting one's head into a tiger's den.

He needed the Ain's alliance for his plan in the future but there was no need to charge in while they were weak and give the other side a chance to devour them.

Ibanoph groaned and backed away from Hansoo's words.

Since his words were all correct.

He didn't know much about the Ains but if they were humans like them, they had a similar goal.

Not living in harmony but rather the survival of their race.

Though it was indeed a negative train of thought, even they would destroy the other side if that side was relatively weaker and they needed to do it.

Their opponents weren't nice enough for them to play around amiably.

No, their opponents were powerful.

As Ibanoph backed away, Hansoo checked his level and then nodded.

His current level was 248.

Just short of reaching the max level.

'I guess I could go up now. The rest... I can fill it up on the way up.'

Hansoo thought about the situation as he looked around.

Everyone else had hit max level already and had sufficiently armed themselves.

Since they took all the artifacts on the ground as well, there was no reason to waste any more time in this place.

"Let's go up then."

The people chattered but still nodded and prepared to set off.

Einchel stared at Kamiyou on the ground who had received first aid but had still yet to wake up.

‘Leader. Let’s live for a bit longer. You said there’s a lot more to do.’

Einchel moved her bag to her hand, lifted Kamiyou on her back, tightly grasped her weapon and followed after Hansoo.

.....

HooongOooongOooong.

Boooooom!

A red meteor flew across the maze and blew apart the head of a player.

“Waaaak!”

<KanuKanu>, one of the hunting group of the Hydros clan, barely dodged the attack and shouted out in rage.

Both lower and upper floors were in a rage.

“Fucking hell! What the hell’s going on!”

It was a normal day like the usual.

He was hunting Ains in the territory designated as his clan's and was extracting Protection Elixirs from them.

Though the average level of the Ains was at 245, there was a huge difference in numbers to begin with.

These guys roamed around alone or in small numbers of two or three, these guys couldn't handle groups of 50 people at level 230-240.

And even more so when the hunting group belonged to the Hydros clan, one of the 15 great clans.

'I heard that they were extremely strong before they got sealed but that's just the legend.'

[They were extremely powerful back in those days], these kinds of sayings had no meaning.

The important thing was that they were now killable and were worth killing.

That was it.

This was why they had continued to hunt the Ains despite the upper floors having gone into havoc.

They wouldn't be disturbed from some things from the 4th floor going crazy and he would be punished by his senior if he didn't fill up today's quota.

Well, that would be the best case scenario.

Ignoring the chaos above was a huge mistake.

'The fuck... Just the release of a seal made them this strong?'

Their levels, which were around 245 to 250, exploded upwards.

The members of the hunting group got retaliated against and got massacred in an instant.

By estimating from the rate which the hunting group was getting massacred at, their levels were at least at 290.

At least this much, it was clear that numbers wouldn't work against them anymore.

'Fuck. I need to live at least, the Immortality Stone is too expensive for me to waste it here.'

Maybe if he was at the level of the Scarlet Demons of the Anteater clans, another one of the 15 Great Clans, the story would've been different. But he, who wasn't even in the elite group



of his own clan, was not at a level where he could just waste the Immortality Stone randomly like this.

So he ran away.

Even the Ains would feel pressured from the the tens of thousands of people in the entire maze.

And he had succeeded at running away.

He thought that he would be fine back then.

That when he got to the 4th floor, there wouldn't be any more dangers.

But what was this.

The upper levels had long become hell.

‘Fuck...This is what the bug players have done?’

Weren't the bug players just some prey?

For the entire player population which filled up this place to have been destroyed by the bug players.

KanuKanu, clenched his teeth and tried to resist the flail but

there wasn't really a need to.

Since he would get logged out before that.

Kwaaaaaaaaa!

From the darkness.

An arm extended out from the darkness in front of him and smashed his heart.

Though he had been attacked in surprise, he wasn't that shocked.

He didn't know why he was here but he knew who it was.

“What the. When did he get here....”

As KanuKanu disappeared.

Hoooooong!

The flail that had been chasing him couldn't stop its momentum, flew through the gold powder and into the mysterious person.

All this happened in an instant.

But the mysterious figure wasn't surprised as he quietly raised his hand and deflected away the flail.

As if he was swatting away a fly.

Toooooong!

A loud sound rang out through the maze.

The flail that had been deflected stopped for a moment and then flew back the way it came from.

Towards the owner, Hansoo.

Though he hadn't thrown it at full force, it was still the God's Flail.

Hansoo frowned as he looked at the person who simply deflected it away.

There was a dark aura floating around that person's body.

A translucent body that looked like shadows.

There were no other existence that had a look like this.

The Ains.

The sealed existences of the maze below.

‘They already came up here?’

Because the seal had broken, them coming up to the 4th floor from the 5th floor was obvious but this was too fast.

And from the expression of the mysterious person which told him that they were waiting, it wasn’t a coincidence that they met.

How did they know that he would come this way?

Hansoo thought of something after considering it.

‘Prophecy.’

The power to see the future.

‘If something happens then I’ll use the power.’

Hansoo clenched the flail in his hand as he looked at the Ain who was looking at him.

## Chapter 249 : Ain (4)

---

Rummblee.

The Ains.

A fascinating race which had a lot of secrets.

But they had a peculiarity.

Their physical bodies couldn't maintain their corporeal shape and consisted of a translucent shadow-like form.

Like enveloping a shadow with smoke.

This was why the humans couldn't distinguish between these people.

They could just barely distinguish between females and males.

‘Looking at the body... It seems like it's a female.’

Hansoo mumbled at the blurry Ain and then clenched his hands.

Because his opponent was not weak.

The seal suppressed the Ain's strength.

At the same time it trapped them.

So the battle power of the Ains rising after the seal disappeared was an obvious thing.

But according to what he knew, the Ains could only use their entire strength after entering the Spirit Land.

Which meant that the Ain in front of him could barely use half her strength.

‘But still.’

Estimated level 300.

Though she was a bit weaker in comparison to Arthus Krancheska above, she was still very powerful.

No, she was a monster.

Everybody who was following behind Hansoo was on edge.

“Woah. What the...”.

“...Do we really have to fight that?”

The Ain blocking their path didn't hide her presence and aura so everybody could feel how powerful she was.

<Ains. It's really been a while. I could... Probably win but I'll have to use my power.>

The shout of Akun, the leader of the souls, rang out through his head.

He could win.

But he would clearly have to use a lot of the mana node's energy.

'There's a lot of places where I need to use it.'

As Hansoo frowned.

The Ain in front of Hansoo spoke.

"I have no thoughts of fighting. I just came up to fulfill the Prophecy."

"... Fulfilling the prophecy?".

The Ain nodded as she replied.

“Apparently with your destiny you cannot die in this place. So I am here. To help you.”.

“Hmm.”.

Hansoo frowned.

As he found out that he didn't have to fight the Ain, he started to calm down and sighed.

“Well. If you're going to help you should all come... Why just one?”

If they were that strong, couldn't they just act together?

Einchel mumbled to herself but that small whisper couldn't escape the supernatural hearing of the Ains.

The Ain replied at Einchel's words with her ringing tone of voice.

“It wouldn't be that good for you then.”

“Huh?”

The Ain smirked as she spoke.

“I'm saying that you shouldn't overestimate yourselves.”



.....

Rumble.

The entire maze was trembling from the seal breaking.

Along with the giant mountain where the entrance lay.

“Uh? Back up more!”

“Shit. I can’t even watch in peace.”.

As the players, who were watching the mountain breaking, backed off.

Kwaaaaaaa!

Something flew in through the sky like a meteor.

Then.

Boooooom!

“Ehukk!”.

“What is this!”

A line of light smashed down into the ground.

In between the shocked players.

And next to Arthus Krancheska grinding his teeth.

Arthus, whose rage had skyrocketed to the point of the fire becoming black, quickly calmed down the flames and reorganized himself.

The person who had landed was not somebody who he could dare be angry in front of.

Great General, Cykrus.

The guardian god who protected and supported the entire Kingdom.

And one of the few people who Arthus Krancheska, who had a tremendous amount of pride, truly admired and followed.

The rage got amplified inside Arthus Krancheska's body even more.

‘This was a mission the Great General gave me personally...

Fuck!’

Arthus Krancheska’s expression crunched up as he kneeled on the ground.

To those who knew about Arthus Krancheska’s pride, this was a shocking scene but it was nowhere close enough for Arthus himself.

Thinking about what this event would cause, he wanted to smash his head down into the ground.

Arthus Krancheska mumbled with a dejected expression towards the Great General who was staring back at him expressionlessly.

“Please kill me. Because I was inadequate...The seal got released.”

Cykrus’s eyes trembled a bit but then he shook his head and replied.

“...No. It couldn’t be helped.”

In a situation where the minor seal broke and the curse was in effect, even he himself couldn’t go in.

Arthus Krancheska wouldn’t have been able to do anything.

The final responsibility lay on himself who hadn't been able to manage everything properly.

Himself who had been wary of the Korin Kingdom's Great General, Dal Taran, and had paid little attention to this place.

Of course Cykrus was curious as well.

For the flail's seal to have been broken.

Even he couldn't have expected something like this.

'There was an immortal who could do this? Or...'

Cykrus shook his head after a few different thoughts.

Whatever the cause was, the water had been spilt already.

The seal had been broken and the suppressed Ains were released.

He wanted to sigh out thinking of the events that would happen because of this but he suppressed it and sighed inside his mind instead.

Everybody was looking up to him at the moment.

He had to take control and show a resolute look.

“Stand up. Stop wasting time down there.”

Arthus Krancheska quickly stood up from the Great General’s words.

Since his words were correct.

The events had occurred already and now they had to deal with it.

The Ains were released.

But this wasn’t the worst case scenario yet.

Since they were only half as strong.

Cyrkus asked Arthus.

“What do you think those guys would do?”

Arthus replied instantly.

“...They’ll try to go to the Spirit Land.”

Their true, lost strength was inside that place.

Once they go in there then things would really turn for the worse.

The kingdoms wouldn't be able to handle it which meant the Empire, which was asleep in the distance, would awaken.

They needed to stop that from happening no matter what.

With all their might.

Cykrus nodded at Arthus Kranchesk's words.

"Call for reinforcements, it's an emergency. Tell them to bring all the knights and mages in the capital. As much as the warp gate can handle. I'll bring the defense brigade by the walls."

Arthus Francheska froze in place from the words of the Great General about how even the defense brigade would come into play.

The defense brigade was the shield of the kingdom.

If they came here then the wall facing the Korin Kingdom will become defenseless.

Cykrus spoke towards Arthus Krancheska after reading his worried expression.

“It’s okay. I’ve dealt with that side already.”

“...Ohm then?”

Krancheska’s expression brightened up from Cykrus’s words as Cykrus nodded.

“Yeah. Dal-Taran is coming as well. This... Isn’t a time where we should be fighting.”

It was not a time where they should be fighting for an extra penny.

If they couldn’t block the Ains then things would really turn for the worse.

All the Kingdoms will freeze and melt down.

Including both the Korin and Keil kingdoms.

It was truly a full frontal battle now.

Cykrus mumbled towards the rumbling maze.

‘You should’ve just hid inside calmly. Why are you trying to come out. At this rate... We can’t sit still either.’

The time for him to see the clash between races which he hadn't been able to see in the past had now come.

Then.

Arthus Krancheska mumbled for a moment and spoke.

“Then what about the God's Flail?”

Cykrus rubbed his chin.

“Hmm...”

The flail was something that they needed to find.

Even more so now that they had to battle against the Ains.

Maintaining the seal wasn't its sole job.

Krancheska spoke to Cykrus.

“I'll bring it.”

“You?”



Krancheska nodded as he spoke.

“The person who broke the flail’s seal would probably be very strong. And...If they passed the flail’s test then not anybody would be able to beat him. I’ll go bring it personally.”

Cykrus nodded towards Krancheska.

Though this guy was young, he had risen to the rank of captain of the magic brigade with pure talent.

His ability was more than good enough.

It was more than enough to deal with somebody who passed the test of the flail.

“Alright then.”

Krancheska nodded with a confident expression.

.....

“Our race will go to the Spirit Land now...”

‘It wouldn’t be easy...’

The Ain mumbled to herself after speaking to Hansoo.

The humans wouldn't have played around while they had been trapped here.

The feeble defense formation they would've set up wouldn't be easy to break through and it would only get tougher as time went on.

This was the best time.

They needed to break through during this time when the humans were wary of each other and when the defense formation was still very weak.

And they had to get to the Spirit Land where they could recover their true strength.

Before the humans could swarm in.

The Ain continued to speak.

“Seeing that you released us, you probably want something from us but... I believe we should be looking after our own race for now.”

The Ain muttered while watching the countless humans behind Hansoo.

Hansoo replied to those words.

“So. What’s the prophecy that you brought?”

A strange look appeared in the Ain’s eyes from Hansoo’s direct question.

The prophecy told them.

That this guy needed to live.

Most of the attention will fall onto their race and from this a gap for the humans to live would be made but it was nowhere enough.

Since the people above ruled the world.

So she had come.

If they were going to help the humans with strength then somebody stronger or a few more people would’ve come.

Though she was strong, she wasn’t strong enough to deal with the entire situation.

But she had come for another reason.

Not for strength but intel.

To give these guys important information that would be of help.

In order to deal with the currently unfair situation.

The Ain spoke.

“The first prophecy says that you guys will have to dodge a small sun that would soon arrive.”

“...A sun?”

As Einchel and the others made a strange expression.

Kwaaaaa!

A tremendous amount of mana started to rain down from the ceiling.

Mana that was incomparable to that from a spirit stone.

So powerful that it even affected them multiple floors below.

‘Oh god...The curse was released.’

Everyone freaked out.

Hansoo mumbled as he felt the presence of the person charging towards them.

“A prophecy about 10 seconds into the future. How helpful.”

“...Instead of sneering, let's go. There's no time.”

Hansoo spoke towards the Ain.

“Which way is your race heading?”

The Ain pointed towards a direction from Hansoo's question.

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then pointed with his own finger.

Towards the opposite direction of the Ains.

“Let's go this way then.”

Einchel frowned at those words.

‘...Does he have a plan? The opposite direction?’

If he had a plan then he wouldn't choose to go onto the exact

opposite direction of the Ains, he would've chosen to go towards the Ains for protection.

But Einchel soon realized this wasn't the time for her to think about such things.

The deadly aura emitted by the mana was getting closer and closer even now.

She didn't know what it was but they had to move immediately.

Then.

Hansoo's group and the Ain started to run towards a direction in the maze.

# Chapter 250 : Power (1)

---

Tatatatak.

Einchel panted and cursed inside her mind while running.

‘Fuck! Melting down the entire maze to go down! Isn’t this cheating?’

Surprisingly, Arthus Krancheska was doing something that was unbelievable.

He had felt that it was a waste of time to look for the three portals that would lead him from the 1st to the 4th floor and had started to just melt down the ground under him.

From what she knew, there were hundreds of meters of land between the floors which meant that Arthus was melting through kilometers worth of hard granite to reach them.

Einchel shouted.

“Fuck! Is that supposed to melt down so easily? Why did we use the portal instead of creating a passage like that?!”

The Ain replied kindly.

“It’s not that we haven’t but that we couldn’t.”

The Great Seal.

It wasn't a trap to hold down moles, would they have set it up in a way that could be dug through?

The Great Seal which used the mana node amplified the strength of the granite to the extreme and supplied it with a tremendous amount of regenerative powers.

It would regenerate very quickly even if it was destroyed.

It would be possible to go through it if one poured more energy than the mana node into it but no living creature could do such a thing.

Whether they were a Great General, a monster of the Empire or even the Ains.

Going through the granite with brute strength was an impossible feat up until now.

The seal even locked the space so teleporting through it was impossible so they could only use the portals.

But the situation was now different.

The seal had been destroyed and there was no more energy



flowing in from the mana node into the maze.

It was possible to break it with strength now.

One of the adventurers shouted from behind.

“Fuck! Can’t we dig a hole through as well then?”

The Ain made an amused expression at the man’s words.

“And if we go up from here? It’s the center of their territory. You want to go into the center of the War Fortress?”

“Ugh...”

The people running realized.

That they couldn’t go up.

The land above was a death zone where countless residents of the kingdoms and players were waiting for them to come out.

They needed to dig up after going out from under their territory at least.

‘The Ains are probably doing the same thing.’

Hansoo mumbled to himself.

Though the underground area of the maze was vast and wide, there was a limit to a structure.

It would be easy for the Ains if the maze reached all the way up to beneath the Spirit Land but sadly there was quite a distance between the edges of the maze and the Spirit Land.

And since the Kingdoms, who had created the maze, already knew this, they would move their forces that way as well.

The Ains would have to battle them while climbing up.

Toooooong!

“Uwaaaak! These bastards, why are they here...”

“Run away! It’s the bug players!”

Boooom!

Though the maze was wide, there were a lot of players as well.

There were a lot of players in their path and Hansoo turned them into golden light whenever he saw them.

‘Continue like this.’

Hansoo couldn't suppress his worries and stole a glance at the lingering Ain.

Then somebody else behind them shouted.

“Fuck! How is that crazy bastard chasing us so well!”

Ibanoph shouted with an uneasy expression.

It was because it wasn't only the mana that they could feel.

They could now even feel the intense heat pushing at them from behind them.

And despite having run so much, the heat only continued to rise.

The maze was extremely large, how was he chasing them so well?

The moment Einchel heard Ibanoph's shouting.

She started to frown.

‘Wait...’

Einchel carefully asked Hansoo.

“Is he... Following that?”

Einchel pointed towards Hansoo’s hand.

Well, towards the God’s Flail in his hand.

Hansoo nodded at her words.

“Yep.”

“...You knew?”

Einchel was dumbfounded at Hansoo who replied confidently.

A calamity of a person was chasing them.

Straight at them.

But for Hansoo to still hold onto the object that that calamity was chasing.

‘Shouldn’t we throw it away?’

Einchel made a confused expression.

She understood that it was an amazing object.

But if Hansoo could win with it, he wouldn't be running away like this.

Which meant that their opponent was someone who he would have a hard time dealing with even with the flail.

No matter how precious it was, it shouldn't be more precious than his own life.

Then shouldn't he throw it away?

With it, Hansoo was in a tremendous amount of danger.

Though they could hide, Hansoo would be chased until the end.

'Fuck...Should I move out alone?'

She shouldn't have such thoughts as Hansoo had helped them a lot but the tremendous amount of mana behind them was that vicious.

Heat that told them that they would burn no matter what if they got caught.

‘Fuck it. I still have loyalty.’

Einchel gave up running away and decided on the second choice.

To persuade Hansoo.

Einchel carefully asked Hansoo.

“Can’t you just leave it behind?”

Einchel got a reply instantly.

Not from one but two person.

“No.”

“No.”

The Ain and Hansoo replied at the same time.

If they left this behind and it got into the enemy’s hands, retrieving it was almost impossible.

Since they would have to go through their entire army, knights, defense brigade and their magic brigade.

So they couldn't.

This was something that was very important for the future.

Einchel had nothing to say to both of their answers and cursed after a bit.

“Goddamit!”

One heard the prophecy and moved according to it.

The other had shown through action instead of words and hadn't been wrong until now.

Both of them answering at the same time meant that it was a very important thing.

“...To run with this... Where are we going anyway?”

‘Fuck, they don't seem like they're going to give it up.’

Einchel muttered quietly.

If that object was such an important thing to them, it would be important to the other side as well.

Hansoo stopped suddenly at her words.

“Uhh? What? Why are you stopping?”

“We have to keep... What’s going on! Why did you stop?”

Everybody started to ask with uneasy expressions.

They needed to create as much distance as possible but Hansoo had actually stopped in place.

Hansoo looked around for a bit and then spoke.

“It doesn’t seem like he is going to give up. So we should fight.”

Arthus wouldn’t give up.

Which meant he needed to get rid of him before he becomes more of a nuisance.

‘This should be enough.’

If it was too close then it would be an issue.

Others would replace him and chase them again.



This is why he had run in the opposite direction of the Ains.

To get rid of the person chasing them at a distance where the others wouldn't be able to sense it.

Hansoo touched the flail in his hand and made an amused expression.

He had obtained a shocking strength.

But before he could even see how powerful this strength was, a monstrosity had started to head their way.

'Sheesh. They won't even give me time to show off with this strength.'

Thinking about it, it has always been like this.

He ran, got stronger and faced an even stronger enemy.

'Well. It's the way it is.'

If he wanted to show off his strength then there was plenty of time to do so.

But he kept on losing that chance because of all the things he needed to do in a set amount of time.

While Hansoo laughed inwardly, everyone around him freaked out.

“Uh... Against that thing?”

Shocked phrases blurted out from the adventurers’ mouths.

.....

Rummmble.

The walls melted and the ceilings collapsed.

From the blazing tail that came out from the man’s body.

Arthus Krancheska, who had been breaking through the maze walls and was chasing the flail, stated to frown.

‘...Their movements stopped. Did they give up running away?’

Krancheska scoffed and shook his head.

Not possible.

There was a reason why he was releasing such a large amount of

mana while chasing.

He was telling them to hurry and give up the flail.

Since they were quite smart, they would've understood by now.

‘It’s a pity that I can’t melt them all down but... I’ll just retrieve the flail and go.’

He wanted to burn everybody who broke the seal and ran away with the flail but the situation wasn’t quite great for him to let his emotions run amok.

The Ains and the army of Cykrus would’ve collided by now.

He needed to deal with the issue here and go back as quick as possible.

He needed to retrieve the most important thing, the flail, and go back.

‘But... I’ll definitely find you later and smash you one by one.’

Krancheska increased his speed after finishing his thoughts.

But after a bit of running, an unexpected scene happened.

“Huh?”

Two people were caught in his perception.

A human holding a flail.

And an Ain.

They were both very strong.

So strong that they couldn't even be compared to the others.

This made him even madder.

These two remaining behind meant only one thing.

That they wanted to have a go.

‘Insolent, they dare to try and fight me?’

Krancheska's eyebrows twitched.

Though they were busy, the flail was very important.

But they still sent him alone.

What did that mean?

It meant that he was more than enough.

But these guys had chosen to stay behind.

This was the same as looking down on him.

‘They dare?’

As he thought of that.

Arthus Krancheska’s pride was hurt as he let out an enraged shout.

“You fucking dog shit bastards!”

Though about eight hundreds bugs were out of sight, this didn’t matter.

Since they would burn up the moment they got close anyway.

‘Erase them in an instant.’

As he shouted out in rage.

Boooooom!

The orb that was transplanted near Arthus Krancheska's heart, <Prison>, reacted to his rage.

The prison which would only get transplanted on the chosen.

The spirit of fire inside the orb, <Extinction>, squeezed out its power to the extreme.

Towards the two charging towards him.

## Chapter 251 : Power (2)

---

“...This might’ve been a stupid choice.”

The Ain mumbled as she looked at Arthus Krancheska charging towards them while surrounded by black flames.

Hansoo spoke towards the Ain.

“You should’ve just ran away.”

“Heh, I’m just here to fulfill the prophecy of the future.”

Hansoo scoffed.

Future.

The reason why he had run so hard was because of this.

Hansoo stopped his thoughts and started to analyze the situation.

His side had 2 people.

He who had reached level 250.

And an Ain who had reached level 300.

The opponent... A monster at level 330.

‘Nowhere close enough.’

Hansoo laughed bitterly.

There was a huge difference between level 200 and 250.

The difference between level 300 and 330 was even larger.

Though he was extremely strong for a level 250, a difference of 80 levels was not a joke.

It would be a hard fight even if they had an army.

‘But... It’s still possible.’

The odds weren’t on his side but the possibility still existed.

Since he wouldn’t be standing here in the first place if there was no possibility.

He would’ve just kept on running away.

Being powerful was relative and there were always flaws and



weaknesses.

Just like the strength his opponent had.

‘Flame of Destruction.’

Hansoo stopped thinking and tensed up his muscles.

It was time to focus now.

Then.

Boooooom!

“Bastards!!!”

Arthus Krancheska, who was still in the distance, poured out a tremendous amount of black flames.

While melting down all the walls around him.

Though it was extremely inefficient and wasteful to do so, he could allow himself to do so with his strength.

The heat from the flame melted Hansoo’s reinforcement and started to burn his Dragon Essence Blade and the Thousand Soldiers Armor.

Such might even thought it wasn't directed at him.

'If I hit it directly...I'll just get erased!'

But there was nowhere to dodge.

A wall of flames that didn't give him an inch of room to dodge.

Then.

Kiiiiiiing!

A strange noise started to pour out from the body of the Ain next to Hansoo.

The black shadow shrouding it expanded and contracted and wriggled around.

'Insane bastards!'

As Arthus Krancheska was gleeful from the thought of burning up these two with the flames.

Whooooosh!

Light started to explode out from the shadow lingering around the Ain's body.

As if the light, which had been contained by the shadow, blew out.

Like something being born from a egg, the light blew out from the Ain's body and lit up the surrounding space.

At the same time.

Whooooosh!

It started to surround the flames that had filled up the surroundings.

And it didn't stop there.

The light retracted back inside the Ain's body.

Along with the flame.

Shrrrrrrrk!

The flames got sucked into the Ain's body.

Into the body of the Ain who coveted the existence of the Flame

of Destruction.

‘What the...’

Flame of Destruction.

Fire from times of extinction.

Or in another word, flames from before the time of extinction.

Relics earned from the lands up north as the Protection Elixir came into existence and the Spirit Lands opened.

It was a flame created from those relics.

Of course the power behind it was tremendous.

This fire could even burn up the world.

Though Arthus hadn't put all his strength behind his attack, it wasn't something that could or should get sucked in that easily.

‘...Is this what the commander had told me about?’

<The Flame of Destruction is indeed strong but it won't work very well against the Ains. So... Always beware of the seal being destroyed.>

Krancheska made a dumbfounded expression while thinking of the words from the commander of the magic brigade.

Whooosh.

The Ain made a refreshed expression as it devoured up the flame.

This power.

This was power that truly belonged to them, related to their origins.

It was the power of the Spirits which they controlled in the past when they ruled the world.

And the power which they needed to gain after going into the Spirit Lands.

“Though it’s fake... It’s really been a while.’

A content smile appeared on the Ain’s face.

The look of the Ain was completely different after it had devoured the flames.

The shadow-like body started to shine.

From the flame surrounding it.

The shadowy and smoke-like body had all been turned into flames and surrounded her body.

A human created from flames.

The Ain who looked like it had been birthed from the sun emitted a completely different aura from when it had the shadowy look from before.

‘Flame. Not bad.’

Though there were countless kinds of Spirits, the Ain who had forgotten her name liked the flame the most.

It was the most useful and the most destructive.

But there was no time to waste.

Arthus Krancheska examined the Ain closely.

‘She can’t be invincible.’

He understood that she had a high compatibility with the flames.

But even if that was the case, she wouldn't be able to handle an infinite amount of energy.

It was a rule of the world.

Arthus Krancheska scanned his opponents and smiled.

'That's her limit huh.'

Her body was leaking out flames.

Which meant she had absorbed as much as she could.

Well, there might be a bit more room.

But Arthus Krancheska didn't have any plans of letting her eat up anymore.

'Try eating it up again.'

The prison which held the Flame of Destruction started to squeeze itself according to Arthus Krancheska's will.

Kooooooooong!

The artificial spirit, which was struggling in pain, couldn't handle the pressure and let out flames again.

The flames pouring out from near his heart, mixed with his mana, flowed through the mana circuits in his body and reached the extremities of his fingers with the shape of an arrow.

And then.

Roaaaarrr!

The flame let out a huge noise and poured out from the tips of his hands and rushed towards Hansoo and the Ain at a terrifying speed.

But it couldn't compare to the might of the wall of fire from before.

It was tiny.

But as the Ain saw it.

‘...That’s a bit too much.’

The Ain smacked her lips.

Though it existed, it wasn't a true spirit's power and instead was contaminated with mana and filled with the opponent's hatred.



It would be hard to absorb it in the first place and it would puncture a hole in her heart if she did it anyway.

Since it was dozens of times more condensed than before.

Although the size was small, the heat was much higher than the wall of flames from before.

The Ain quickly decided.

To attack instead of defending.

Whoooooosh!

The Ain's body exploded.

Well, the flames that its body was made of to be exact.

Then.

Shrrrrrrrk!

The dispersed body of the Ain flew across the air and started to surround Arthus Krancheska's body.

Then the cloud of flames which had surrounded Arthus Krancheska's body started to attack him.

Like a swarm of bees.

“These annoying bastards...!”

Krancheska used his mana to protect his vital spots and at the same time sent out a wisp of consciousness into the arrow of fire which he had shot out.

He couldn't waste it.

Whoosh!

The arrow made a sharp turn as he controlled it.

And the arrows started to head towards Hansoo's heart.

Hansoo shouldn't be able to stop it or dodge it.

Since there was that much energy within it.

‘I'll at least get one person.’

As Krancheska laughed.

Boooooom!

A blood colored light started to pour out from Hansoo's body.

Well, from the flail in Hansoo's hand to be exact.

The flail started to heat up like a furnace and a smoky existence started to appear above it.

<Finally...Freedom!>.

<Uaahahahaha!>

<Yes! That guy's a descendant of the Kingdoms as well! Use our strength!>

The souls hiding inside the flail with the mana node's energy left behind those words as they disappeared.

Well, they weren't disappearing to be exact.

They were finally being freed from the cursed flail and going back to where they should be.

They, who had been suppressed by hatred turned into a pure energy form and flowed through Hansoo's entire body.

Then.

Boooooooooom!

The body which had been already strengthened from the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement, the Dragon Essence Blade and the Body Enhancement Surgery got enhanced even further from the strength of the mana node.

A streak of red light started to pour in the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement which was filled with dark golden light.

The red energy flowed into the silvery liquid as well.

Kuudududuk!

Uududuk!

A body which was countless times stronger than before.

Hansoo squeezed out as much energy as he could and smashed down his flail.

Towards the arrow.

The moment the chunk of metal and the flame arrow collided.

Boooooooooom!

An unbelievably loud noise rang throughout the entire maze.

A noise so loud that it even caused both Arthus and Hansoo to frown.

Then.

Boooooom!

“Ugh...”

The cloud of flames attacking Arthus was deflected back from the mana shockwave created by the clash.

Krancheska stole a glance at the Ain which had turned back into her human form and chuckled at Hansoo.

“Not bad. But how are you going to continue if you barely blocked that simple attack?”

And Hansoo nodded inwardly to the words of Arthus who was staring back at him expressionlessly.

His words were right.

His body had been subjected to an unbelievable amount of force

just from smashing away a simple arrow.

He was the one who had swung but it felt like he had been hit instead.

It was more like a meteor than an arrow.

Though it was just a single moment, the amount of force had stopped him briefly.

The hand holding the flail trembled immensely as his entire body tried to absorb and handle the force.

If the Ain hadn't distracted Arthus then he would've gotten a fatal injury from more attacks.

'...80 levels in difference. It's really huge huh. Even though I applied the Power Destruction as well...'

This couldn't even be called a fire anymore.

It was a bomb which was filled with energy.

The energy sent out by an existence 80 levels higher than himself was hard even for his enhanced body.

The Ain could just disperse their body but he wouldn't be able to

approach Arthus at this rate.

The Nine Dragons Spear should be able to smash through his attacks and damage him, but he would get killed before he could try to use it.

Which meant that this wasn't a battle where he should try saving things.

'I need to use it I guess.'

Then.

Rummmblee.

The souls appeared from the flail in his hand and started to disappear again.

A number far greater than from before.

The amount of energy that had come out was immense in itself.

Like a waterfall exploding out from a broken dam, the energy from the mana node suddenly surged and started to pour out in all directions.

If all this energy headed towards Hansoo then even his own body

would blow apart.

The energy flowed towards a completely different destination from before.

Not towards Hansoo's body but to the depths of the flail.

As a result.

Rummmblee.

The flail started to let out a huge noise and Krancheska frowned as he watched and shouted.

“The power! How can such a weakling like you use it!”

Krancheska was dumbfounded at this scene.



## Chapter 252 : Power (3)

---

It was one of the three godly treasures.

And each one had a power.

The power of the flail had been activated.

Shrrrrrk.

The flail started to greedily devour energy.

The energy flowed through the strange mechanisms of the flail and reached a location deep inside it.

At the same time the space in front of the flail started to twist.

The surrounding area folded and collapsed on itself and condensed into a single point.

And as the numerous colors combined, the original color changed as well.

Black.

An extremely dark and deep color.

Soon.

Ooooooong.

A small hole which even devoured light appeared about 10 cm in front of the edge of the flail.

<Now 55412.>

‘...Ten thousand to use it just once?’

The amount of energy expanded to create this tiny sphere seemed over the top.

Hansoo made a shocked expression at that tremendous amount of energy as he shook the flail around.

He wanted to know if the sphere was held in place.

If it was then it would be a problem.

But thankfully the black sphere on the top of the flail moved as Hansoo moved the flail around.

As if it was connected by an invisible pillar.

Krancheska frowned, seeing Hansoo playing around.

“No way... How can you control it?”

But Krancheska soon calmed down and gathered himself.

There was no point talking about it.

Since the power had been activated already.

It was now time to check something else.

It was time to see how powerful the God's Flail which he had only heard about in rumors was.

And if Hansoo was controlling it properly.

As if Hansoo read Krancheska's mind.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Hansoo started to charge towards him.

In order to smash his head apart.

At the same time.

Whooooosh!

The Ain dispersed her body again, turned into flames and started to attack Krancheska from all around as well.

‘Annoying.’

Krancheska frowned.

The Ain was high level and it even absorbed energy, truly an annoying thing to deal with.

Whoosh!

The Flame of Destruction mixed around with the mana again and its shape started to change.

The flame condensed itself and soon resembled a smooth sheet of cloth and surrounded Krancheska’s body.

Krancheska’s signature move which needed a flame so powerful that it could solidify, a large mana reserve to sustain it and a tremendous amount of mana control.

<Red Dragon Robe>

‘I’ll gladly kill you off.’

Krancheska, covered by the Red Dragon Robe, started to dance vigorously.

Then.

Boom!

Boom! Boom!

He started to counter the flames flying towards him from all around.

‘Shit! Battle skills!’

The Ain was dumbfounded.

That robe wasn't easy to absorb because it was extremely condensed.

And despite that, Arthus showed such skills controlling it.

Being the captain of the Magic Brigade, his skills were no joke.

And it didn't end there.

Whooooosh!

Despite already fighting so intensely, a long spear of flames appeared in the air next to Krancheska.

<Red Dragon Spear>.

Unlike the robe, this was a weapon created for Krancheska to hold and swing.

Krancheska grabbed the spear and swung it.

Whoosh!

‘Huup!’

The Ain hurriedly moved away from the trajectory of the spear which was flying towards her.

She was in a flame-like form, but she would still receive a fatal injury if she got hit by that spear.

Krancheska smirked at the Ain running away from a single swing of his spear and then raised his spear again.

Then the muscles on his entire body started to squirm.

Then.

Boooooom!

The Red Dragon Spear flew across the air while emitting a huge noise.

At Hansoo who was running towards him with the God's Flail.

Kuoooooooo!

Hansoo tensed up as he saw the spear flying towards him.

Its might was dimensions apart from a casual arrow.

This is not something he could block by swinging the flail at it.

Hansoo didn't swing the flail and instead raised it like a shield in front of him.

With the black orb in front.

'I'm going to trust it.'

As Hansoo breathed in and out.

Kuooooo!

The Red Dragon Spear, which had flown in while breaking the ground underneath, collided with the black sphere.

And Hansoo surrounded his ears with mana in case another huge noise was created.

But there was no need.

Swoosh!

The moment the black sphere touched the Red Dragon Spear.

The sphere started to devour the spear.

The existence of the spear itself.

And in a blink of an eye, the entire spear had been sucked into the sphere.

And Krancheska frowned as he smacked the Ain around with his robe.

‘What the. He’s using it properly. It’s just like what I heard...’

The moment he saw that Hansoo was using the power properly.



Whoosh!

Krancheska swung his robe with a wide move and flung the Ain away.

He then started to ruthlessly squeeze out mana from the prison holding the Flame of Destruction.

The flames which shot out from his hands criss-crossed and folded onto each other as they shaped into an object.

A shiny red shield.

Krancheska raised the shield, <Red Dragon Shield>, in front of him and then surrounded his entire body with the robe.

According to what he knew, that power wasn't just about devouring.

And as he expected.

The thing Krancheska was worrying about had become a reality.

Boooooooooom!

Something started to come out from the black sphere which had

eaten up the Red Dragon Spear.

A red spear wreathed in flames.

Krancheska's expression turned nasty as he saw the Red Dragon Spear flying straight back at him.

It didn't feel good to be attacked by his own attack.

‘What a stupid power. Fuck!’

Even before he could finish his thoughts.

Boooooom!

The Red Dragon Spear and the Red Dragon Shield collided and caused a huge noise.

A noise which was incomparable to the one created when Hansoo had smashed the arrow.

“Ugh!”

The Red Dragon Shield took around the same amount of mana as the Red Dragon Spear.

So the shield being able to block the spear was an obvious thing

but the shock wave from the collision still existed.

And Krancheska groaned as he received the brunt of the shock wave.

If he hadn't dispersed most of the force using the robe then he might have broken some bones.

Krancheska frowned as he stood up.

If he was just trying to test if that power was real or not then there wasn't really a need to use the Red Dragon Spear.

Just an arrow would've been enough.

He would've been able to block the arrow with his robe and there wouldn't have been a need to send out the spear.

But there was a reason.

'I need to hurry and exhaust that power.'

That ability would cause Hansoo to be invincible.

Nobody would be able to handle a power so overwhelmingly strong which could absorb and send back whatever was flown at it.

If he left that alone then he would just get beaten down to death.

No matter how much weaker his opponents were, he wouldn't be able to handle being struck at non-stop.

There was nothing infinite or invincible in the world.

According to what he knew, that ability ate up a tremendous amount of energy to activate once and it wasn't something that could be sustained by pouring in more energy.

And it overheated after a huge load so it would take a bit of time until he would be able to use it again.

Which meant that he needed to pour more energy than the amount that had been used to create it and exhaust it.

Even if he had to be hit back by all those spears.

'Let's see...Who wins. You bug-like bastard.'

"Kuaaaaap!"

Krancheska screamed out, created three more Red Dragon Spears and then started to swing them at Hansoo in a crazed manner.

Then.

Boooooom!

Booboooooom!

An existence which controlled flames, an existence which became flames and an existence which sent back flames started to turn the entire maze into a sea of flames.

.....

Booooooom!

Boom!

Krancheska’s current situation was a mess as he fought Hansoo and the Ain.

His attacks weren’t working properly in the first place and he could only use his battle skills and the robe.

One of his arms had been broken and the silk-like Red Dragon Robe had been turned into tatters.

Plus there were countless cuts and bruises all over his body.

But despite this, the expressions of Hansoo and the Ain weren’t

that great.

‘A fucking monster.’

The Ain mumbled in annoyance.

All his main attacks had been blocked.

The only thing he had was the Red Dragon Robe surrounding him and the battle skill which made use of his robe.

But he was still standing.

And with herself, who had eaten the flames, and a human who surpassed all humans as his opponents.

Without the power of the flail, they would’ve long been shredded apart.

And as if Krancheska read the Ain’s mind.

“Kuaap!”

Kiiiiiiiiing!

Three more Red Dragon Spears started to fly towards Hansoo.

Something which Hansoo wouldn't be able to block at his level.

Hansoo dodged away from Krancheska's fist, jumped backwards and lifted the flail in his hands.

Swooosh!

Three spears at the same time wouldn't change anything.

The black sphere ate up the three spears and sent them flying back.

Towards Krancheska who was attacking the Ain in the distance.

“Kuaaaaap!”

Krancheska shouted out, lifted up the shield with his still functioning right arm and blocked the spears.

Boom!

One.

Boooooom!

Two.

Krancheska's entire body shook as he blocked the spears one by one.

But something changed.

Craaacck!

A crack appeared on the black sphere.

Then.

Clang!

Booooooooooooooooooom!

The black sphere broke and the Red Dragon Spear which was being prepared to shoot back blew up and swept the surrounding area.

“Kuuuuuuuk!”

“Aaaaaak!”

“Kuuuhup!”



The energy from the Red Dragon Spear didn't discern between ally and foe as it spread out in every direction.

And thanks to this, the three of them were blown away by the explosion and got separated from each other.

Tat!

Tatat!

Tat!

The three caught their balance and then glared at each other again.

But their expressions were different.

“Keke...Kuaahahahaha!”

‘Finally the power broke!’

Though he had been turned into a mess, there was still a huge difference in power.

Krancheska stole a glance at the Ain and then laughed towards Hansoo.

“Try using all your tricks now. I know you have hidden a lot of things. Go on, use them.”

He knew that Hansoo had been waiting until he had become weak.

But that didn't matter.

He was going to stomp all over Hansoo.

Kiiiiing.

Krancheska smiled as his right eye let out a strange blue light and scanned Hansoo's body.

# Chapter 253 : Power (4)

---

Rumble!

The vast plains located between the War Fortress and the Spirit Lands.

Tens of thousands of people were fighting a huge battle here.

Kudududuk!

The race of shadows, the Ains, who crawled out from the earth and tried to head towards the blazing Spirit Lands.

And the armies of the kingdoms who were keeping their formations in order to prevent the Ains from entering the Spirit Lands.

Booom!

Kuudududuk!

Pillars of flames and volts of lightning were created.

The tacticians of the kingdom's armies clenched their teeth and shouted while looking at the Ains, the race which had crawled out from the ground with immense power, who were pushing them back.

“Defense squad! 2nd Bridage! Wake up! Hold your positions!”

“Magic Brigade! Alter the grid location to R-8!”

“Bastards! Don’t run! We cannot let these guys enter the Spirit Land!”

Boooom!

Boom!

Knights and soldiers over level 270 were getting smashed apart and were sent flying away.

With just a few thousand in numbers, the Ains were charging through the tens of thousands of well-coordinated soldiers.

Enoa, the 3rd in command of the Magic Brigade, grinded his teeth as he saw this scene.

‘Jesus...Was the time of peace that long?’

It has been decades since the Kingdoms have entered a time of peace after the giant wars.

All the soldiers who had tasted wars had retired and the

remaining soldiers, who didn't want to lose out, handed most of their jobs to the players who were immortal.

In the form of quests.

But the strength of the Ains was no joke.

‘...This is not going to be easy at all.’

Enoa looked towards another location.

And watched the hundreds of thousands of players charging towards the battle from the distance.

“Giddiup! A history quest after so long!”

“Run! Hahahaha!”

“Jackpot!”

Those who were free from the ultimate fear of humans, death.

So these guys only thought of the frightening scene in the distance as a mountain of treasure.

The remaining soldiers were shouting at these players as well.

Telling them that it'll be a quest with substantial rewards and that it would please the Kingdoms.

But Enoa didn't expect that much from the beginning.

Usually the immortality aspect of the players was a huge advantage so the people of the kingdom usually used them by offering them rewards and treasures but the current situation was a bit different.

So he had remained behind at the War Fortress.

Enoa shouted towards the Magic Brigade who had been sent out in a hurry from the capital.

“Activate the Golden Dragon Formation!”

The members of the Magic Brigade gulped down their saliva and nodded as they started to spread out strange runes into the air.

The biggest difference between them and the players.

Technology, learning from experience and preparing for the future.

This was the reason why they called the players barbarians.

While those guys were busy living like carnivorous animals day by day.

They, like how a human should be, had prepared for the future.

And the Golden Dragon Formation was the result of this.

A powerful magic formation which allowed them to use the strength of the mana node that held the seal inside the Great Maze.

But they couldn't do anything with just this formation alone.

Since they had no medium that could handle the energy from the mana node.

There were only 3 items in this world that could withstand such a vast amount of energy.

So Enoa could only clench his hands into fists and mumble inwardly.

‘Hurry...Please hurry with the item, Captain!’

Boooooom!

As Enoa mumbled towards the hole into the Great Maze that had

been created by melting the surface.

One of the mages from the Magic Brigade asked quietly.

“He won’t fail right?”

Enoa replied with a dumbfounded expression.

“Don’t spout nonsense.”

“No, it’s just...The opponent has the flail so...”.

The Magic Brigade studied all sorts of history regarding the ancient spells and items.

Of course they knew about the true power and might of the flail.

So the mage was worried.

Enoa shook his head.

“Not even close.”

Even if the weapon itself was amazing, if the amount of strength of the person used by it was low then its overall strength would be limited as well.



The flail had tremendous power but a tremendous amount of energy was required to supply it.

They would only be able to use the true power of the flail when they constructed a giant formation like this and pulled out the energy from the mana node.

And such a feat, even the Great General Cykrus wouldn't be able to do it alone.

The flail in the hands of a human with a level limit of 250 would be negligible.

‘It would just be a somewhat useful weapon.’

Enoa spoke towards the mage.

“Did you forget who our captain was?”

“Oh yeah...”

The mage thought of their captain, Arthus Krancheska, and exclaimed out.

He remembered.

Arthus Krancheska.

Captain of the Magic Brigade.

Owner of the prison with the Destruction Flame.

Red Dragon Wielder.

There were countless names and titles given to these people but there was one that stood out the most even out of these.

<Ten Thousand Deaths>.

A title given to him because of the number of people who had charged at Arthus Krancheska during the 3rd Kingdom War and had been burned up like moths to a flame.

It was not a title that one could acquire from just having the Destruction Flame.

‘I pray for your soul.’

Enoa thought of the mysterious thief and mumbled.

.....

Kiiiiiiiiing.

“Amazing. It’s really amazing. The power.”

Arthus Krancheska laughed happily.

‘You dare push me this far?’

Arthus Krancheska laughed and at the same time mumbled in a dumbfounded manner.

Level 330.

It was not a joke.

A level which far surpassed the immortals.

Normal attacks wouldn’t work and a simple step of his would cause players to roll away.

And the skills and the battle experience he had.

Those player guys didn’t even think of going against him in the first place and Krancheska himself was confident.

That if he was given a bit of time, he could personally wipe away every player within the War Fortress.

Once there was enough difference in strength, quantity had no meaning.

Since they wouldn't be able to catch him if he ran away and they themselves wouldn't be able to run away if he chased them.

There were only 2 reasons why he didn't fight the bug-like players.

First, only he would get tired fighting against those guys who had nothing to give him.

Second, there was no reason to make another enemy.

He was basically a one man army.

The guy in front of his eyes should've been massacred in under ten seconds.

But for him to push him this far.

'For him to be able to push me this far just by having some resentment from the weapon...'

If he wasn't here then Hansoo would've been able to roam through the mass of players and massacre them.

No, if he actually learnt how to use that flail properly then he might've been able to cause him to tremble in fear.

But sadly for him, this was the end.

Rumble!

The Red Dragon Robe around Arthus Krancheska became more solid and started to wrap around the injuries on his body.

His broken bones were held in place by the robe and the locations which were bleeding had been stopped by the flame of the mana which covered his entire body.

There wasn't much mana left in him now.

There was barely enough to maintain his Dragon Emperor Robe, Spear and Shield.

Though the Destruction Flame could still let out a lot of flames, there was a limit to his flames.

But this was more than enough.

Krancheska lifted the spear with his right hand, the shield with his left and then spoke in a cold manner.

“Try to struggle a bit more.”

Then.

Booooooooooooooooooom!

Krancheska jumped up into the air.

Toooooong!

“Ugh!”

The red spear cut across the air and smashed into the cloud of flames, the Ain.

Though he had been injured greatly, he was still very powerful.

Hansoo looked at the Ain who had been sent flying back and swung his flail around to smash it into Krancheska’s back.

But this was not enough.

Normal attacks weren’t enough to penetrate through the Red Dragon Robe surrounding his body tightly.

Rumble.

Then, a skill was activated from inside Hansoo's body.

Arthus Krancheska's eyes shone brightly and scanned over Hansoo's body.

Then.

Rummblee.

The mana inside Hansoo's body, which had been twisting and coiling onto itself, started to disperse into thin strands.

“Kehehe.”

Krancheska smiled and then focused onto the Ain instead.

Hansoo's attacks were useless as long as he could handle his skills.

And as he expected.

Boooooom!

The Forked Lightning smashed onto the Red Dragon Shield and made a huge noise.

But that was it.

“Uhahahahaha! Try a bit harder!”

Krancheska defended the attack which was surrounded in the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement and then swung his spear around widely.

Paaa!

Hansoo sensed the tremendous power behind that attack and quickly backed up as he mumbled.

‘What an annoying skill.’

The skill which annoyed him even more than the Red Dragon Robe.

Krancheska has been using it constantly.

If he didn't have that skill then he would've been destroyed by either the Pandemic Blade or the Nine Dragons Spear earlier.

There was only one reason why that guy had been able to withstand Hansoo and his own reflected attacks up until now.

<Dragon's Eye.>



Dragons, the sacred creatures which flew across the heavens, were not something the creatures of the earth could ever fathom to reach.

And he had pulled down the man who was like a dragon's avatar from an unreachable position of power to a place where he could just barely handle him by using the Power of the flail.

But the descended dragon didn't seem like it would give up that easily.

Boooom!

“Iiiiikk!”

Hansoo frowned as he heard the screams of the Ain who was getting beaten up with a shocked expression.

Dragon's Eye.

Well, Red Dragon's Eye.

A skill created by a level of mana control which has reached the apex, a tremendous amount of experience and insane calculative abilities.

Reading the flow of mana inside the opponent's body.

And for any skill that has been used at least once, the traces would remain behind.

Like an answer sheet which had been answered.

Arthus Krancheska read these traces, read the flow and figured out what the opponent's skills were.

He started with this and came up with a plan.

In order to smash apart his opponent's skills in the best manner.

In the most efficient and evil way possible.

And then he would cut them off from the beginning before they could even begin the skill.

As long as his opponents were weaker and were inside his range, it was a skill which had a tremendous might.

Though the amount of actual influence it had on the opponent was low, this was more than enough.

The moment the complex high level skills got interrupted by this, it would all get tangled up.

Boooooom!

Krancheska smashed away the Ain and smiled as he started to push Hansoo back.

As long as he had this skill, any skills would be meaningless.

Since it would all be read by him.

‘Well. It’d probably be quite dangerous.’

Krancheska mumbled as he saw the flow of mana inside Hansoo’s body.

He saw quite a few things but there were 2 major skills that could bring him danger.

One seemed like a close range skill but the other was a very powerful offensive skill.

If Hansoo had used that skill then he might not have been able to hold on with just his Red Dragon Robe and Shield.

But he was cancelling all the skills.

Hansoo would not be able to handle the Red Dragon Robe surrounding his body.

At least not within the short period of time in which he would get killed.

“Haha. You’ve never even heard of this might?”

A secret weapon that he trusted in and only he knew about.

This Dragon’s Eye was the proof of his talent.

As Krancheska smiled and swung his spear.

Boooooom!

The body which was holding onto the flail and the Forked Lightning got sent flying back.

At the same time.

Uuudududuk.

The flail flew back after blocking the Red Dragon’s Spear.

Though the flail had withstood the attack, Hansoo’s left arm had not and had been broken.

Hansoo mumbled.

“Oh, I’ve heard of it.”

“...What?”

The moment Krancheska replied.

Whooooosh!

The Forked Lightning in Hansoo’s right hand flew across the air.

Towards Krancheska.

‘Heh. What’s he going to do with just this.’

What could he do with just this single attack.

Krancheska scoffed at the single attack which was flying towards him.

# Chapter 254 : War Fortress (1)

---

‘He heard of it?’

Arthus Krancheska froze for a moment.

But only for a moment.

Whooooosh!

Arthus Krancheska smiled as he saw the spear flying towards him.

Saying was one thing but Hansoo didn’t have a way to deal with him.

Of course he himself wouldn’t likely be able to dodge that spear.

Though he was quite strong himself, that guy had a monstrous physical body as well.

In terms of physical body alone, that guy could compare to himself.

So that spear would succeed in hitting him since he was tired already.

‘But so what?’

Krancheska laughed coldly.

His strong point wasn’t his physical body from the beginning

He wouldn’t have gone into the Magic Brigade otherwise.

Overflowing mana and blazing flames.

The Red Dragon techniques which he had created from these two things.

That spear would not be able to go through his robe.

As Krancheska laughed.

Kiiiiing!

A strange magic started to appear on the spear that was flying through the air.

But Krancheska just calmly looked at the speartip with his right eye.

Krancheska saw the mana flow inside the spear and scoffed.

‘Is this your final strike?’

From the moment he saw this guy, every skill inside his body had been read.

The body had three skills.

Reinforcement type skills couldn't be disrupted so it was a pass.

The other two, the area skill and offensive skill had long been dealt with.

‘An easy one to deal with. There's usually hundreds.’

Even Krancheska's head would start to hurt when there were hundreds of skills but this guy only had about 3.

Which means that the only thing he needed to be careful of now was his artifacts.

And there was only one which could activate skills.

The ring on his finger.

There were 4 skills which could be activated from the ring.



Each of them were amazing too.

Destroying skills, mixing up the five senses and absorbing health by draining out blood.

And the skill applied on the spear was one of the skills within the ring.

A skill which destroyed mana and nullified it.

It was a threatening skill but it was useless.

Since he had long figured out a way to deal with it.

‘If this was your final attack then you should not have used it.’

Rummmbleee!

His thoughts were long but the flow of time in reality was short.

And his reaction was instantaneous.

The moment Krancheska’s eyes blinked while looking at the spear which had almost reached him.

Chaaarrrrng!

The mana which had filled up the surroundings of his body started to twist and coil under Krancheska's will.

The mana shaped itself into needles and started to push itself into the mana circuits inside Hansoo's body.

Into the most important locations.

The mana paths quickly broke apart as it destroyed the power behind the ring.

Krancheska laughed happily as he saw this scene.

The skill had been released and there was only the reinforcement remaining on the spear.

'Should... Focus until the end.'

Krancheska moved around his mana.

Whooosh!

As he poured in mana and flames into a location of the robe, the thin silk like robe puffed up like a winter's coat.

Then.

Kuudududuk!

“Kuuhup!”

The spear smashed into the Red Dragon Robe.

A reinforcement created from a tremendous amount of mana and raw strength which was far above what a normal level 250 should have.

And surprisingly, the spear was piercing through the robe.

He had expected the Red Dragon Robe to get penetrated through from that attack.

Kranchesksa grunted as he poured in strength into his right hand.

‘This is far as you go right?’

The Red Dragon Robe might get pierced through.

But that wasn’t all he had.

Hansoo wouldn’t be able to go through his body.

A huge amount of physical and magic resistance created from the difference of levels.

It could easily block a spear of that level.

And as he expected.

Boooooom!

His body started to resist the spear.

The physical resistance handled the strength behind the spear and the magic resistance blocked the reinforcement.

Krancheska's body and Hansoo's spear created sparks as they collided.

Kwadddddk!

Of course even he would get damaged if he stood still like this.

Since he wouldn't have turned into a mess like this if his defense was invincible in the first place.

But this short moment was more than enough.

Krancheska realized that the power behind the spear pushing

towards his heart was what he expected and smashed onto Hansoo with his Red Dragon Spear.

‘Die.’

Whooooosh!

Since he had defended, it was time to attack.

Give a bit of flesh, break their bones.

Though Hansoo’s attacks might hurt him a bit, his own attacks would definitely kill him.

As Krancheska was about to laugh.

Kiiiiing!

Right before the Red Dragon Spear was about to reach Hansoo’s body, in that instant.

The golden spear which was trying to pierce into his body.

The Power Destruction that was applied on Krancheska’s body started to reconstruct itself at a rapid pace.

In a completely different form from before.

‘What the?’

Krancheska freaked out.

A skill which he hadn’t seen before started to activate.

From his ring.

‘Uaaaak!’

Krancheska clenched his teeth and then blinked his right eye.

He tried to wipe it away with the Dragon’s Eye but it was useless.

Even if he could read the skill, there was no time to create a method of dealing with it.

The tip of the spear had reached his heart already, when would he create a method to deal with it.

‘Fucking hell!’

As Krancheska freaked out inside his mind.

The spear with the strange mana surrounding it pierced through

Krancheska's body.

Well, towards the <Prison> located next to his heart.

“Kuaaaaak!”

Krancheska screamed out.

It wasn't because the prison next to his heart broke and caused a tremendous amount of pain.

It was because he couldn't believe Hansoo's ring was shining and causing all of this.

“Cough...Kuhuuuk!”

‘Fuck...No way.’

Krancheska coughed up blood and looked at the spear which had pierced through the prison next to his heart with a shocked expression.

The physical resistance of his had been broken through.

A skill which allowed him to even make attacks that could destroy mountains like tofu had been broken apart just like that.

Though the reinforcement had been blocked by his magic resistance, that was it.

Even if his level was high, he couldn't handle the spear with his bare body.

And the spear which had attacked him wasn't any spear.

A spear that a person with a monstrously powerful body had thrown with all his strength.

“Kuhaa... Haha. Fucking bastard... You were hiding such a thing?”

The prison broke and the Destruction Flame was released.

Krancheska saw the Red Dragon Spear disappear into thin air and looked at Hansoo dejectedly.

He realized what Hansoo had meant when he had said that he saw the Dragon's Eye before.

Hansoo looked back at Krancheska expressionlessly.

‘It would have been better to use it with a better timing but...This is good enough.’



Exodus was a wide world.

Countless players existed and there were plenty of master-level players.

But Arthus Krancheska, the Red Dragon Wielder, stood out even amongst these people.

Since he was that special and that powerful.

<Though you need to avoid a collision as much as possible... There is a high chance that the monsters of the Kingdoms will chase you down because of the thing you're going to do to the Great Maze and the importance of the flail. You need to prepare for the worst.>

Arthus Krancheska's specialties were two things.

His Destruction Flame.

It supplied an almost infinite amount of flames to the user.

And the Dragon's Eye.

Any skill that had been used once could be read.

Since the traces of the mana would remain behind in their body.

He was extremely strong and if he was given just a short amount of time, he would cancel all your skills.

This was why he had hidden the fifth ability of the Nurmaha's Ring.

The ability which he had obtained as he came up to the Green Zone.

Physical Resistance Nullification.

A power which shredded apart and nullified the resistance which God had given to all creatures.

‘...I don't think I can use it often huh.’

Hansoo frowned as he sensed the Mana Jade next to his heart, which had been screaming from overdraining from the previous fight, heating up.

A power which nullified one of the laws set down by God.

The amount of mana this used was not low.

To the point of this being inefficient to use against anything weaker than him.

It would be better to smash them with the mana instead of using this.

But it was more than good enough to be a fatal attack to the powerhouses or those with monstrous defense.

Like the kneeling Arthus Krancheska.

“Keke...Kekekeke.”

Boooom!

The prison broke apart and the Destruction Flame rampaged.

As if it was trying to get revenge against Krancheska who had trapped it up until now.

Despite his body being cooked from the inside, Krancheska still couldn't believe that he had lost as he laughed in despair.

Well, it was out of control anyway.

At this rate, the Destruction Flame would blow apart and burn up everything around here.

‘Yes. Let’s die together.’

Krancheska clenched his teeth.

He had failed his mission and would die here.

Since the prison had broke already, controlling the Destruction Flame with his mana was an impossible feat.

It would be better to just burn everything up.

Then.

Whooosh.

“That won’t do.”

The Ain gave up the cloud form, reformed her body and mumbled.

She then placed her hand onto the broken prison next to Krancheska’s body.

Then.

Swoooooosh!

The Destruction Flame, which had been rampaging inside Krancheska's body, started to get sucked into the Ain's body.

It was easier to absorb the pure flames which had no traces of mana.

And Krancheska gritted his teeth as he saw this.

“Fuck...”

‘...This girl's not simple either huh.’

A normal Ain wouldn't be able to absorb the Destruction Flame that easily.

Krancheska made a dejected expression and spat towards the Ain.

“You crazy bitch. Why do you go so far to help this guy? Do you think anything will change because this guy stays alive? With your ability, if you helped your race in the battle then you might've saved a life or two.”

Krancheska used a bit of his remaining strength to scoff at the Ain.

Nothing would change because of this guy being alive.

Though Hansoo was strong, the power the Kingdoms were much stronger and they had the immortal players to do their bidding.

If they made those immortal players chase Hansoo to the ends of the earths, even Hansoo would have to just get chased around.

The Ain chuckled.

“The Prophecy has spoken. That it wouldn’t just end here if he was rescued.”

The Ain thought back to the past.

<If you save him then...The Ains won’t have to fight alone anymore.>

“What kind of nonsense...”

Krancheska looked at the Ain spurting out nonsense in confusion and then looked in front of him.

At the man who was quietly focusing with his eyes closed while holding the spear which had pierced his body.

.....

<Come up.>

The moment those words rang out.

Clan Lord Khan, the owner of the Soul Fragment who had control over the Yellow Zone, shouted.

“Go in!”

At the same time.

Boom. Boom. Boom. Boom Boom.

A huge column of soldiers who extended into the horizon started to walk forward.

Into the calm and wide silver sea.

# Chapter 255 : War Fortress (2)

---

Papapapa.

A single humanoid form was charging through the maze.

Well, through the tunnel that had been created straight towards the War Fortress.

‘...Arthus Krancheska. What a monster. There shouldn’t be any issues right?’

The woman who was running, Einchel, mumbled inwardly.

She was extremely worried only leaving behind Hansoo and the Ain to deal with a heavenly disaster of a being.

But she soon shook her head.

She wouldn’t be much help in dealing with such a monster of a being.

She would only get in their way.

And she had to focus on her own objective.

There was no time to play around.



This tunnel had been created while Krancheska climbed down.

Of course it was connected to the center of the War fortress.

‘If I drop my guard then...I’ll die.’

Einchel slowed down as she got closer to the gaping hole through which sunlight shone.

And carefully climbed up while using all of her stealth skills to their utmost.

The further she went up and the closer she got to the hole, more and more noises poured into her ears.

The shouts of the players and the residents of the War Fortress.

“Let’s go out! Come on! They’re giving out quests!”

“Jackpot! They give this much even if we just participate?”

“Yo! Tell all the clansmen to come as well! This actually seems like a jackpot!”

Einchel frowned as she heard these words.

‘...They’re using them well huh.’

Though they were weak, they were still immortal and had many in numbers.

Though the high-level powerhouses of the kingdoms ignored them because they were merely bugs, even bugs would become terrifying if there was a huge number of them.

And these guys had no fear of death which was an important factor in a battle.

It meant that these guys were very good meat shields.

The Kingdoms knew this so they were attracting the players from all around with a tremendous amount of treasures and rewards.

It meant that they didn’t want the Ains to reach the Spirit Land that much.

Though the Ains were handling the forces of the kingdoms pretty well, the situation didn’t look very good for them to celebrate just yet.

Because if the players rushed towards them like waves then the Ains wouldn’t be able to block them either.

Einchel thought of what Hansoo had said to her before she left.

<This is a chance of some sort.>

Like what Hansoo had said, Einchel carefully climbed up to the War Fortress.

And after coming up to the fortress, she could finally see the situation.

‘...Jesus. I’ve never seen it being so empty.’

The War Fortress, which had always been packed tightly, was empty.

From the guards who watched over the walls to the players who looked for quests.

‘This is why it was so easy to climb up.’

Einchel mumbled.

Of course it wasn’t entirely empty but compared to the usual War Fortress, this was the same as a deserted town.

‘It should be a bit easier to move around now...’

There was no time to waste.

Since the adventurers of the Ant Tunnels would've spread out far and wide already.

A risky choice the 800 of them had made due to the amount of work they had to do within this vast area in a short amount of time.

Einchel quickly looked over the area and started to run towards the center.

Then.

One of the players who had seen Einchel looked to her in confusion.

‘What the hell?’

Everyone was running out from the War Fortress.

Everybody including the ones who had been here originally and the ones who came in through the warp gates.

But for somebody to run to the center of the plaza.

‘And I feel like I saw her before.’

As the player, Karax, was lost in confusion.

One of the party members next to Karax tapped his shoulder and spoke.

“Yo, What are you doing? There’s no time. We have to go out.”

Though the history and battle-related quests were famous for having a large amount of rewards for participating, they were even more famous for their penalties.

Penalty.

A system which was applied when they did not participate.

Of course they didn’t pick on them or kill them one by one, but the players would face an annoying situation after the quests end.

Like the prices of the stores increasing or warping to certain areas being banned.

Though this could buy the hatred of the players, it wasn’t like they really died from the battle and since the rewards were good, most players participated anyway.

Karax nodded at the party member’s words.

His words were right.

‘Well. She probably has her own issues to deal with.’

Participating in the quest outside was of more importance.

But then Karax suddenly stopped.

“Yo. I figured out where I saw that girl before.”

“What. Is she like your ex or something?”

While his party membered laughed at Karax, he replied with a serious face.

“Blacklist. The most recent one.”

“Huh?”

All the party members stopped.

By saying recent, he was talking about the blacklist that was updated an hour ago.

<Great Maze Massacre Incident.>

A huge incident where tens of thousands of players who had been trapped in the Great Maze got massacred.

It wasn't like the war had started so due to such a large amount of people dying in such a short amount of time, the clans and groups all went into emergencies and looked into the situation.

And everyone made shocked expressions when they figured out who had caused all this.

Bug players.

The close to one thousand bug players, who had been hiding in the corners of the maze, had done all this.

Some people were even suspicious that this incident was the Ant Eater clan trying to broaden their powers.

The bug players were merely cockroaches inside the normal player's minds, not something which would bite them back.

And for them to cause such a massacre with just a thousand in number.

No matter how strong they were, they couldn't be that strong.

But soon their questions were answered.

The evidence from various groups had surfaced.

<Gah. We were going to fight for it but some crazy bastard...He was really strong.>

<What the hell can we do when a guy like him charges onto us. What the hell is Exodus doing!>

<One of them... Ugh. Is he even a bug player? I thought he was some supernatural being from the Kingdoms>.

And a clear reward had been set.

<To anybody who kills those from the new blacklist, you could get achievement points plus a 9% reduction in price on the use of warp gates and other various facilities.>

The Kingdom's pride had been hurt so this was a decision they made to catch and massacre them all.

And there were a few other benefits.

Killing them was not a matter of experience and artifacts anymore.

The party members standing next to Karax looked at him in delight.



“Nice, how did you see that? Not bad.”

“Heheh. I knew this bastard would achieve something one day.”

Karax’s confidence spiked up as he spoke with a smile.

“So? You’re going to go out? To that battlefield?”

The 50 or so party members chuckled to each other.

“Well. That can wait a bit.”

.....

Boooooom!

Boom!

“Catch her! Hey! Catch that girl! She’s a bug player!”

Karax shouted out loud while chasing Einchel throughout the plaza and pouring out skills.

The surrounding players heard this one by one, looked at Einchel and then started to send out skills as well.

“Woah! It’s the first time I saw...”

Crunch!

Einchel sent the head of a player charging towards her into a ball of golden light and grinded her teeth.

‘Fucking bastards! They react too fast!’

Because the reaction of the Kingdoms and the Ant Eater clans were so quick, these players were chasing her much more actively.

Her own level was at 240.

And because her level had risen quite a lot compared to the past, her combat abilities rose a lot as well.

She could handle the 50 or so chasing her from behind.

But then?

It was empty compared to the usual, it didn’t mean it was completely empty.

All the players remaining inside the War Fotress would charge towards her.

And her objective wasn't to bicker around with these players.

‘Thank god...That there's less of them.’

Einchel, who had been looking around with all of her scanning type skills, looked towards the plaza of the War Fortress and grinded her teeth.

If the War Fortress was busy like the usual then she wouldn't even have been able to get this far.

‘But...I'm here!’

The moment Einchel stepped onto the center of the War Fortress, the plaza.

Boooooom!

‘Fuck!’

A huge explosion occurred in front of Einchel and smashed her away.

And Einchel's body rose up into the air from this.

The players who were chasing Einchel look towards the person who attacked her in shock.

‘The Ant Eater clans...They reset themselves and came here already?’

It costed more gold the longer the revival timer was.

And the Gold and Scarlet Demons standing there was known to have been the first ones to get killed down below from the massacre.

But even so, not a long time had been past which meant that those guys spent a tremendous amount of gold to get back here.

‘Tsk. Nothing will be in it for us.’

As Karax clicked his tongue like looking at the Gold and Scarlet Demons who were surrounding Einchel.

Sharon Stiller looked at Einchel, the person whom she had seen the moment she revived and the one of those who caused all this, and laughed in a cold manner.

“How lucky. We see each other again. Anyways, I don’t understand why you guys are spread out like this.”

Sharon Stiller had access to a large amount of information.

And according to what she had heard, everybody was heading

towards the plaza here.

There was no reason why they would've been split up like this if they didn't have any plans.

Well, it didn't matter.

If she waited here then she would be able to kill them off one by one.

And as if Einchel read Sharon Stiller's minds, she chuckled and spoke.

"Shouldn't you at least figure out why we're gathering to this place?"

"Hmm?"

Sharon Stiller frowned at Einchel's words.

'This bitch. Doesn't understand the situation huh. Well since you're first, you can tell us.'

Though her Spirit Stone hadn't recovered yet, she could easily handle this girl without it.

Kiring!

As Sharon Stiller pulled her sword out from the sheath and walked towards Einchel.

Papapapat!

Papapat!

The entire plaza started to shine in golden light.

Around Einchel.

And around Sharon Stiller, the Gold and Scarlet Demons as well.

Even around Karax and his party members.

And everyone freaked out as they saw this.

“What the hell?”

“The fuck! Is some clan coming over?”

“No. This...Looks like a login?”

“No way! How can they log in to the point of filling up the entire plaza!? How many are logging in...”

As the people freaked out.

Sharon Stiller clenched her teeth as she felt something ominous.

The confident attitude of the girl in front of her.

The girl probably knew about the current situation and was still that confident.

And Sharon Stiller did not like her expression.

‘I’ll kill you before that. Try smiling after you get beheaded.’

Roaaarrr!

Sharon Stiller’s blade flew across the air along with a huge noise.

Towards Einchel’s neck.

‘Fuck!’

Einchel clenched her teeth and tried to back up.

She wanted to buy some time while these guys were in a daze but for Sharon to just charge at her like this.

She had long depleted her stamina running here.

And her opponent was not some random player but a pro player whose job was killing people like her.

‘Shit.’

As Einchel fell into despair while staring into the blade which smashed apart her skills and was heading towards her neck.

Crunch!

There was a hand which grabbed her arm.

“Huh?”

Sharon was startled as somebody who had grabbed her arm but soon frowned as she pushed forward.

‘I don’t know who you are but...I’m level 250!’

Uudududuk.

Then.



She forcefully pushed through despite the arm grabbing her and then continued to slash.

‘Try laughing you bitch.’

As Sharon was about to laugh for herself.

Kwaduk.

Kwaduduk.

Over the hand which had grabbed her arm, dozens of other arms popped out and grabbed onto her.

Arms from dozens of people who came out from the golden light.

“Yo! Catch this bitch! Jesus, she’s strong!”

“It doesn’t seem like this is the girl... Hey you, the girl over there. Are you the guide?”

Sharon could handle one but multiple dozens was a different story.

“Fuck...”

As Sharon cursed out in a dumbfounded manner after being

immobilized.

The man who had grabbed onto her arm in the beginning shouted.

“Hey! If they don’t have the mark then kill them all! We’re organizing this place first!”

“Okay!”

Kwadududuk!

‘Fucking seriously?...’

Hundreds of thousands of golden lights.

Sharon Stiller fell into despair as she saw hundreds of spears flying at her.

# Chapter 256 : War Fortress (3)

---

Kwadududuk!

Udududuk!

“Ughh!”

Olsen groaned out loud as he was pelted by the golden spears which rained down from above.

The leader who had been caught first, Sharon Stiller, had long been logged out.

‘Where the hell did these guys...’

Udududuk!

Kuduk!

Olsen grinded his teeth as he saw his opponents who were pushing him back viciously.

‘Fuck! I can easily handle these guys one by one!’

The first choice Olsen made after seeing Sharon Stiller melt under the rain of assaults was to run away.

Since staying here would just mean that he would get massacred.

And he didn't think it would be that hard.

Though there was a tremendous amount of people who had come in, each individual was much weaker than him.

He could tell from the mastery levels of their skills.

These guy's levels were around 200.

Against a level 250 like him, there was a huge difference between them.

So he tried to quickly swing his gauntlet, smash apart their heads and run away.

Since these guys would fall down like leaves from a single sweep of his arm.

But it wasn't long until he realized that he had a huge misconception.

Boooooom!

“Screeeeeeech!”

Olsen grinded his teeth at the screech which occurred in front of him.

A sound created as his fist smashed the shield.

But what did that matter.

He had failed at both creating a path and killing the one holding the shield.

“Heheh. It was a bit heavy to bring here but not bad.”

Clang!

Crash!

The three people who had blocked the attack by stacking multiple shields on top of each other tossed the now broken shields to the side.

Since they didn't only have a single shield.

‘These crazy bastards...How many shields do they have.’

Olsen glared at the ones taking out more shields with a shocked expression.

These guys had at least ten shields which were the size of their entire body on their backs each.

Not just them but everyone around him.

Though the shields itself were thin, having ten of them each on their backs made them look like turtles.

And the full plate armor they had on.

It would easily be over a hundred kilograms if one counted all the shields and armor they had on.

It was a stupid amount of weight more than enough to crush them in real life and cause them to be immobile if they didn't get crushed but these guys were using their massive amounts of strength to handle the weight.

Since a hundred kilograms was like the weight of a feather for to the adventurers.

And that wasn't the end of it.

“Hey! Tie down his legs first!”

“Gosh this guy is slippery. Is he an eel or something.”

As he heard the complaints of the ones covered in golden armor.

Kwaaarrrk!

Chwark!

Countless sounds of chains crashing onto each other were heard.

Olsen freaked out the moment he saw this.

Metal chains that reached over tens of meters.

Numerous dozens of these chains were flying towards him.

‘That! It’s that again!’

Olsen tried to dodge as he saw the metal snakes flying towards him across the sky but it was all futile.

“Where do you think you’re going.”

Whooooosh!

The three who had blocked his attacks with the shields swung their axes and blades towards him.

And Olsen grinded his teeth as he saw this.

‘Fucking bastards...They don’t have even a single gap!’

Usually he would’ve long ignored the attacks of some level 200s and escaped.

Since the Gold and Scarlet Demons had more than enough defense to deal with these.

But Olsen could not as he saw others getting killed by ignoring their attacks.

‘Crazy bastards...Why is their body and their mana so superior!’

A powerful body which should not belong to a mere level 200.

And a huge amount of mana which could easily spam skills to make up for the weak firepower behind them.

The combination of these two things caused their attacks to become something he could not ignore.

Olsen grinded his teeth and deflected their attacks away with his gauntlets.



Boom!

Booobooooom!

He could easily deflect their attacks if only due to the gap in levels but what did that matter.

Olsen failed to move away from the metal chains because he had to defend against these attacks.

Chwarrrrrk!

Kwaduduk!

“Ugh!”

Olsen fell into despair as he saw the countless chains with the thickness of a finger tying him down.

Well, at the countless dozens of spears flying towards him who was now immobile.

‘Where the hell did these guys come from...’

It was basically a hunt.

Like hunting a boar, Olsen fell into despair as he saw his

opponents pushing him and tying him down step by step.

If these guys took over the War Fortress then even logging back in would have no meaning.

They would get surrounded the moment they logged and would get logged out on the spot.

Kwaddddduk!

Kwagagagagak!

Olsen glared at these guys for the final time as he felt the spears piercing into his body.

Full plate armors and steel shields.

Thick and heavy chains around their waist.

And tens of spears which they held across their shoulder next to the shields.

Countless machetes, short blades and axes hanging from their thighs.

And though they hadn't used them yet, the single bow and countless arrows by their waist.

Seeing tens of thousands of these guys all having the same gears, it was a terrifying image.

This was not the looks of players who cared about their appearance and enjoyed the game.

It was like a legendary army gathered to fight an evil dragon from a story or something.

Olsen then fell into more misery as he thought of the things he had done up until now.

‘...Is this what it feels to get hunted?’

With those thoughts.

Kwaduduk.

The golden spear turned Olsen into golden light and Olsen’s consciousness stopped there.

.....

“Woah...”

Einchel exclaimed out loud as she saw the scene in front of her.

Because the Gold and Scarlet Demons who had been chasing her down had been melted away.

‘...Amazing.’

She had been worried about the support coming up from below.

This was not a place where weaklings played around.

It was the War Fortress.

A place where those with abilities gathered to look for opportunities.

Even if the ones who came up from below were strong, they were merely around level 200.

If there were countless high leveled people then even having a huge quantity of people would cause them to have a lot of injuries.

Since their enemies didn't fear death.

But the ones who came up from below were entirely out of her expectations.

First of all, they weren't weak even as individuals.

To the point of her being suspicious of them being humans as she compared herself from when she was level 200 to them.

And another thing.

They knew that they were weak and had prepared for it.

Chains, full-body plate armors, shields and spears.

Adventurers didn't like these equipments.

They liked a single good weapon, a single set of good armor or light clothes that didn't catch one's eyes.

These were not the armors of those who liked to play around by themselves.

United weapons, armors and a well coordinated teamwork.

These guys had come up to hunt something in the first place.

And this was the result.

A massacre.

The players who were powerful individually got chased around in confusion and got hunted until they became golden lights.

‘Mmm...When did they prepare all of this.’

They wouldn’t be able to get such a large amount of the identical weapons by hunting for them.

Not hundreds of thousands of them.

As Einchel looked at these people in a daze.

Clank.

The man who had come out first and blocked Sharon Stiller’s blade walked towards her and spoke.

“Nice right? There are some very convenient friends below you see. They helped us a bit. Damn. It would’ve been better if we could bring the Satellite Fortresses.”

As Einchel was in a daze while listening to the man mumbling things she could not understand.

Karhal, the man who had been with Hansoo ever since the slave village in the yellow zone, spoke towards Einchel.

“Well anyway. I’m called Karhal, seeing your mark it seems you are the guide.”

“Ah...”

Einchel nodded at the word ‘guide’ Karhal said.

She remembered her objective.

Einchel shouted towards the members of the Ant Tunnel who all had shocked expressions and had joined late.

“Everyone gather up!”

At those words the 800 or so people of the Ant Tunnel gathered into one place.

The adventurers who started from the outskirts of the fortress and scanned everything while running to the plaza in the center.

“Hmm...Is there something to write on.”

The adventurers who had scanned their respective areas looked around their surroundings and then looked below them.

A hard and smooth granite floor.

Though the beautiful granite floors placed to welcome those who first visit the War Fortress had been covered in dirt and had cracks from the wars, it was still quite smooth.

The people looked down at the floor and then spoke to each other.

“Let’s write them here. It’s wide too.”

The people nodded at those words.

This was more than enough to be a good blackboard.

As the adventurers from below gave out some space under Karhal’s orders for the people from the Ant Tunnels, an area with a diameter of about 40-50 meters had been created.

And the adventurers from the Ant Tunnel dusted the surface off and started to draw with their fingers.

Kadududuk!

Kuduk!

Though it was granite, its purpose was beauty.

As the people with supernatural strength started to dig into it,



the hard granite floor started to move away like tofu.

‘...There’s no time.’

Einchel, who was drawing the map together with them, made an uneasy expression.

She could only.

Though they had a lot in numbers and were strong, those from the Kingdoms were stronger and there were even more players.

While they dropped their guards and emptied their base, they needed to accomplish the next stage.

And as if the other 800 people had the same thoughts as Einchel and even used skills to draw, the giant floor of the plaza started to fill up with drawings.

Well, the map of the entire War Fortress.

The map of this entire place from the people who separated away from Hansoo and scanned on the way here.

Where each facilities were, where the forces of the kingdoms were, density of the players and important information for a battle like tactics were all written down.

“Mmm...”

Einchel looked around the completed map and then pointed towards a specific location.

Though it looked feeble, it was a location where they had to go through the Kingdom’s main defense points in order to get in.

Though they couldn’t think of it usually, they finally could see it once they made the giant map.

‘This is why he told us to make the map huh.’

Einchel exclaimed out in shock and then spoke towards the man named Karhal in front of her.

“It’s here. We need to go here and...Take over the thing called the Golden Dragon Formation.”

.....

The mountains in the other side of the War Fortress which was part of the Korin Kingdom’s territory.

A man mumbled while looking into the center of the War Fortress.

‘Not bad. Really a lot of people came up. Amazing.’

A human army which drove away the players.

It was a scene which he had never even dreamt of.

But he could not let them do this.

Since that was his way of keeping loyal.

‘...I don’t know what’s going to happen but wait for me, Metiron.’

The man mumbled the name of his fallen comrade in the Yellow zone below and then disappeared.

## Chapter 257 : War Fortress (4)

---

Tatatatak.

Hansoo quickly ran towards the surface from the 4th floor of the maze where the fight had occurred.

If everything went according to his plan, getting ahold of the plaza and dealing with the remaining players wouldn't be hard.

Since most people would be busy at the battlefield where they fought against the Ains.

He needed to regroup with the others and then head out to take over the formation.

“Hmm...”

The Ain, who had fallen into silence after hearing Hansoo's plan, spoke with a heavy expression.

“Don't you have any thoughts of helping us? With that amount of force?”

Considering her own comrades who would fade away before they could even set a foot in the Spirit Land, the amount of power Hansoo's group had was not low.

During a time where there's a stalemate, such a large force helping could drastically reduce their losses and win bring them the victory.

But Hansoo shook his head.

They wouldn't be able to lay a fatal blow in favor of the Ains even if he helped them in this current situation.

Since they would receive terrible damage if they got caught by the eyes of the Great General who was fighting against the Ains.

The humans were far weaker than the Kingdoms, Empires and the Ains who had stayed here for hundreds of years and had built up their strength.

The thing they had to do was not a frontal collision with those from the Kingdoms.

'Us finishing our job quickly is the way to lessen as much damage as possible but...'

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then spoke to the Ain.

"If you need more help... We can separate a part of the force and send them, quick hit and run types."

The elites of elites.

If he could separate a part of the forces and hit the players who were joining up to the battle and get some attention it would actually help.

Since the other side weren't fully aware of how big his forces were.

Hundreds of thousands had come up at once.

Which meant more could come up without an issue.

It would cause them to slowly start focusing in the backlines and cause problems in the battle.

Though taking over the formation would be a bit harder because of the loss of those forces, the Ains would be able to fight with more ease.

'I can't just watch the Ains get killed off when they'll become our allies in the future.'

The blazing Ain pondered for a moment but then shook her head.

It didn't seem like there would be much impact overall.

Though Hansoo's forces would really be a major help, their opponents weren't a joke.

It was not a situation where they could afford to divide up their forces.

‘I can only trust in Karakum...At least he cares about us.’

The Ain thought about Karakum who was leading her race in the battle, glanced at Hansoo and then started to run through the dark maze while lighting the surroundings with her body.

Boom! Boom!

The Ain hurriedly moved through the maze while speaking to Hansoo.

“Your goal is to take over the Golden Dragon Formation?”

Hansoo nodded.

Golden Dragon Formation.

It was a giant magic formation the Kingdom had set up just in case.

It had two objectives.

In case the seal was broken, it suppressed the mana node so it

wouldn't explode.

Using all the energy from the mana node for their own purpose.

‘Though they wouldn't be able to use it properly since I have the flail with me...’

Since they didn't have the medium, it would be impossible for them to utilize all the energy from the mana node.

But even if they cannot use all of the energy, it would still have a tremendous might.

They will use all the energy they could that belonged to the mana node which flowed underneath the seal.

And he himself had to take over this War Fortress before it actually happened.

‘And use this place as a base of operations.’

Tatatatak!

Hansoo finished his thoughts and gazed at the ceiling of the first floor of the maze.

Hansoo felt the presences above the ceiling for a moment then



poured strength into the flail in his right hand and smashed the ceiling.

Then.

The flail smashed apart the ceiling and created a tunnel dozens of meters long.

Of course the recoil of it exploded out and from the impact the person on Hansoo's back woke up with a groan.

“Ugh...”

Krancheska woke up with a moan and then was dumbfounded at his current situation.

‘I’m still alive?’

And he was being carried on the back of the being who had killed him.

Krancheska hurriedly checked the status of his body.

And frowned.

‘Fuck. That’s what I thought.’

The prison had been broken and the Destruction Flame had been released.

All the bones and muscles in his body had been destroyed by the battle and he could barely move them.

The mana, which should've healed him at a supernatural pace, was suppressed by some mysterious force and could not even budge.

He would barely be able to handle even a single immortal as of now.

Even if he choked the man climbing up through the maze, nothing will come of it.

The only thing he could do is blabber about.

‘How did I become like this...’

Krancheska clenched his teeth.

He had been born a genius and had been victorious throughout his entire life.

Though there were a lot of people much stronger than him, there was nobody who could even contend against him in his age group.

This is why the prison and the Destruction Flame, which took the combined efforts of the entire kingdom to barely be able to complete, had been given to him.

He had even said that the great monster of the Kingdom, Tiamat, would kneel before him but for him to fall this far.

There was no reason to keep him alive.

The current status of himself is what he had despised the most.

A being who only brought harm to his allies because he had no courage to commit suicide.

<If anyone from our Magic Brigade get captured by the enemy... Don't bring harm to others and commit suicide on your own. Else you will get killed by my own hands. The taxes from the civilians of the kingdom is not something which should be used for things like this.>

Krancheska thought back to the words he had shouted to the Magic Brigade in the past, clenched his fists and tried to bite down his tongue.

He couldn't fight but he could easily bite his tongue.

But he didn't have the courage.

It wasn't fear but rather hope which grabbed onto him.

The reason why this guy had kept him alive was because he was still useful to a degree.

A hope of a successful negotiation and him being able to live.

He thought of the path which he should've been walking on.

The expectation of his bright and alluring future caused him to fall into despair.

'Shit...Fucking hell! Fuck!'

Hansoo felt Krancheska flinch behind him and muttered to himself.

'He should be useful. I'll keep him alive for a bit longer.'

There was a reason why Hansoo hadn't suppressed Krancheska's body.

If Krancheska had decided to bite his tongue the moment he woke up, Hansoo was ready to just kill him off here and leave.

Since somebody that dedicated would try anything to bring harm to him even if he held him down.

But somebody who still clung onto the sliver of hope even in a situation like this would still be useful.

Though he was powerless, he still had a tremendous amount of information within his head.

He just had to regroup with the main army who came up from below.

As Hansoo finished his train of thought.

Whooosh!

As if it was welcoming Hansoo, light shone down the tunnel onto Hansoo.

Then.

Kuoooooooo.

He could see the blazing War Fortress which had been destroyed in numerous places as well as the countless players and guards who were running around.

“Immortals! This is not the time to go to the War Fortress! There’s a second quest! The rewards are good so gather at the Great Northeastern Barrier!”

“Everyone who doesn’t attend will be recorded and receive penalties! Hurry!”

But even without the guard’s shouts, the players were running in glee.

The rumors have long spread.

“Hahahaha! Jackpot! Did you hear? Apparently everyone who came this time are all bug players.”

“What? That many? Don’t joke around!”

“You slow bastard! The Ant Eater clan has long spread the news! With videos!”

“Shit!”

Due to the player’s shouts, the eyes of players who were pondering on which location to go to shone.

The Kingdom’s rewards were the same.

Which meant that they had to consider between who gave the better rewards when killed between the bug players and Ains.

And this was obvious.

Of course the bug players would be of much more profit.

And for the bug players, who were hard to find and hard to catch, to appear in hundreds of thousands.

Even if they get logged out after killing a few, it would still be a tremendous profit.

And Hansoo muttered to himself.

‘...I guess the Golden Dragon Formation is around the Great Northeastern Barrier. Time to regroup.’

Seeing everyone preparing for a frontal clash, it seems Einchel and the others from the Ant Tunnel clan have found the location of the formation perfectly.

The moment Hansoo was about to move.

Krancheska snickered from his back.

“Hahaha. How amazing. Hundreds of thousands came up in an instant but nobody suspects anything. What an amazing power.”

He didn't talk about a specific target but it was clear.

God.

The existence which got rid of the people's suspicions and caused them to act in a crazed manner.

Krancheska looked towards Hansoo while snickering.

‘...He wouldn't kill me if he needs me.’

Though he was originally going to stay still, he couldn't handle the person who was carrying him.

Krancheska decided to make fun of Hansoo as he spoke out.

“Did you drag them out just for them to become like this? You brought out the Ains just so they could get tired from battle and get killed?”

They will all get killed by the countless players from the chaos.

Only the size of the battles have grown, nothing else would change.

Only the number of casualties will increase astronomically from the release of the seal.



But the ones who would suffer was his people.

They, who weren't immortals, would get killed by the war against the Ains.

“Huh! You bastard! Speak! This is why you released them? Do you know how many will die because of what you've done.”

And as if people heard Krancheska's enraged shouts.

The surrounding players turned their heads.

Towards the suspicious looking group of 3 people.

Then.

“Woah... Woahwoahwoah! What the fuck!”

“Wow!”

The players who did not know about Hansoo's battle power but knew him from the blacklist started to gather around.

And Hansoo scoffed at these players as he held Krancheska by the collar and lifted him up.

Crunch.

“Kuaghh...”

“Though I’ve kept you alive, it’s best for you to stay silent. There’s still a lot of places I can break.”

Hansoo threw Krancheska onto the ground and asked himself.

Why had he released the seal and turned the entire Green Zone into a mess?

Of course there was an answer.

For him to gain the power to win and find a safe haven.

But there was another personal reason.

‘I cannot watch us get hunted anymore.’

He thought of his wretched memories of the past.

The memories of when he had been in the Green Zone.

And the extremely selfish himself from back then.

Booooooooooom!

As he remembered, the rage grew and and that rage flowed into the weapon in his hand.

From the flail which swung through the air with a huge noise, six players were smashed apart and got turned into golden light.

“Uwaaaaak!”

“What the fuck! What is this!”

‘It’s time for things to change.’

Hansoo muttered as he glared at the players who were backing away while screaming.

# Chapter 258 : Golden Dragon Formation (1)

---

The central structure of the War Fortress.

The magic formation which pulled in the mana from the managed node and supplied energy.

The third in command, Eloa, who had been looking over the War Fortress from the control tower of the formation made a shocked expression.

“...Where did these guys come from?”

Their entire main base had been emptied because of the battle against the Ains.

And somehow they had figured out her location with extreme accuracy and were all running towards her location.

‘Shit...This place cannot be taken over.’

If this place was taken over then the formation which was built to support the Great General fighting in the distance would get destroyed.

Eloa thought for a moment and then made a decision.

Since they have been found already, it was time to fight.

Though the guards had told some of the players to gather here but it was not enough.

Eloa watched the immortals and the mysterious army in the distance as she started to alter the flow of the mana from the Golden Dragon Formation a bit.

Not coursing it through the original pathway but towards a different direction.

‘Though it’s unstable without the flail... We can’t just sit around idle.’

This much energy should be more than enough to smash them apart.

Kiiiiiiiiing!

The entire Golden Dragon Formation started to shine and began to activate.

And one of the members of the Magic Brigade freaked out at her actions.

“Miss Eloa! This is too dangerous! Without the medium...”

The goal of this Golden Dragon Formation was to suppress the

tremendous energy of the mana node.

It was already a very unstable situation but forcibly redirecting the energy like this, a problem would occur.

‘No, not just a problem. In the worst case scenario...’

Eloa grinded her teeth and then shouted while glaring at the Magic Brigade member.

“...Danger. Do you know what the most dangerous thing is right now? It is those crazy bastards killing us all, killing all the players and charging in here. Which between the two is more dangerous?”

“ ... ”

The mage naturally glanced outside at the location Eloa was pointing to.

And he saw the golden army charging towards their location.

An army coming to grind them apart.

Eloa spoke as she looked at the mage who was lost in shock.

“If we lose here then the Ains will get into the Spirit Land. Know that. You should know what would happen then.”

“...Yes.”

“I’ll leave for a bit so calm this place down.”

The mage clenched his teeth and started to focus on his own job as Eloa felt the formation stabilize and started to move.

Towards where the players were gathering.

.....

“Woah...It’s huge.”

The man, who was 2nd in command of one of the 15 great clans <Hydros>, was shocked as he gazed at the golden army marching in the distance.

‘What the. I thought it was a jackpot but for something like this to happen.’

Krakupika was dumbfounded as he looked at the current events that were occurring around the War Fortress.

Though the War Fortress looked very active, the whole place was stagnant.

Though there were fights between clans, it was an important location to the kingdoms so their influence was very strong and thanks to this there weren't large scale wars between the clans.

So it felt more like a hunting ground more than a battlefield.

A hunting ground where people gathered Protection Elixirs and leveled up inside the Spirit Land.

And his job, being the 2nd in command, was controlling his clan and preventing friction between his clan members and 3 other clans who belonged to the 15 great clans that had also gathered here.

But for such a great event to occur.

The massacre of the Great Maze.

The war between the Great General and the Ains.

‘This is already enough to give me a headache...’

Krakupica frowned as he looked at the approaching golden army and the thousands of clansmen behind him.

<Krupica> didn't really like tedious jobs to begin with.



This is why he hadn't stepped out to handle the matters in this place when the leader of the Hydros clan said that a chance to set up base in the War Fortress had been created.

But for a golden army to appear and swarm the War Fortress while it had been emptied.

And from what he could see, they weren't simple.

'Let's see.'

Kiiiiiiiiiiing.

<Eye of the Golden Hawk> activated and zoomed in upon the golden army charging towards his location.

Smashing through those who hadn't been able to group up with the main force.

Though he couldn't hear them, he could somewhat guess what they were saying from the movements of their mouths.

<Uwaaaaak! Damnit!>

'Woah. That guy....He's at level 250?'

A master-level player tried to show off a bit but then got dragged

in by hundreds of chains and had turned into a beehive by being pierced by hundreds of spears.

Krakpika shook his head at this sight and then turned around while sighing.

The 4 great clans of the War Fortress including his own.

And the players of those 4 clans who had hurriedly rushed over here.

Maybe it was due to the War Fortress's average number of players at any given day being hundreds of thousands, a quick and hurried recruitment had already gathered twenty thousand people.

Twenty thousand people.

Normally, this was a number he could proudly say was unstoppable.

Well, excluding the abnormal difficulty quests like the Spirit Land main quest or a continental war.

But even with this, he didn't have the confidence to beat the golden army approaching him.

And he wasn't the only one who thought this as the captain of the 2nd division of the Ant Eater clan, <Apocalypto>, cursed out

loud.

“Shit man. I came here because the kingdoms asked us to but what the fuck do they want us to do?”

They wouldn't be able to fight in this battle anymore if they died because the spawning point, the plaza, had been taken over.

Which meant that they had to stop the golden army with just the people here.

An impossible feat.

Then.

A voice came out from among the players.

“Don't worry. I didn't ask you guys to come here for no reason.”

“Woah, what an honor.”

Apocalypto smirked at the voice.

‘Magic Brigade huh. The third in command.’

Third in command meant that she was directly below Arthus Krancheska.

Level 300.

A super high-class NPC who was hard to find.

A seed of greed sprouted inside him.

Bug players and NPCs, the stronger they were the better their rewards.

‘But not yet.’

Apocalypto shrugged his shoulder at Eloa who was walking towards him with vicious eyes and spoke.

“Can’t you at least tell us? As to what you’ve been doing back there.”

Apocalypto glanced towards the inner parts of the Great Barrier where Eloa had come from.

‘...I never heard of a such an important construct being located here.’

Eloa scoffed as she replied.

“Why do you guys care? You guys just care about what to kill and

what you can receive.”

“...How pleasant.”

Krarpika mumbled from behind but he didn't deny it.

Since she wasn't wrong.

‘Why the hell did you stare at an NPC with such greed.’

Krarpika glanced at Apocalypto.

It was obvious that such a reply would come when one looked at the NPCs like that.

Since he often felt that they were actually alive.

Krarpika judged that Apocalypto's ramblings weren't helping anymore walked in front of Apocalypto and spoke.

“But we can't handle the opponent with just our strength. I don't know what the hell you guys are trying to protect but you should know that this is a bit far-fetched.”

Eloa laughed coldly.

“Of course I know. That it'll be hard with just you guys. This is

why we're going to use a useful ability you guys have."

"...?"

Eloa laughed as she looked at the players who were staring at her in confusion.

They didn't have the flail.

But they had a medium.

Weak, but it was a medium that didn't worry about being destroyed.

"Feel honored to taste the power of the mana node."

Eloa laughed coldly towards the players.

.....

Kwadddududk!

Kuduk!

"Ugh...This is annoying."

Karhal mumbled as he looked at the players disappearing into golden light after being pierced by spears throughout their entire body.

“These bastards really are fearless.”

Running away was the logical action against an unbeatable force.

And all the players whom he had met up until now were like this.

Small groups who hadn't been able to join up with the main army had no hope of defeating them.

But their actions were all shocking.

Fighting back.

Even moths who jumped into flames would think more than these guys.

Einchel mumbled miserably next to Karhal.

“Why should they be afraid when they can't die?”

Running away against bug players who used hacks to play would ruin their pride.

Even if there was a penalty from dying, it would be profitable to at least get a few kills before they die.

And some of the actually powerful players actually died only after leaving behind important damage.

“Ugh, tough bastards. I’m going to destroy them the moment they pop out once we take this place over.”

Karhal mumbled while looking at the Great Barrier.

He didn’t know what the Golden Dragon Formation was exactly but he was clear of one thing.

That it being in the opponent's hands would turn it into a threatening blade and that it would be a trustworthy weapon in his own hands.

In a poor situation like theirs, they should be taking anything that came their way.

“And just this much... It’s not bad right?”

Karhal shrugged as he looked at the players’ forces gathered in the front of the Great Barrier.

And apparently Hansoo became strong as hell again.



If they just wedged into their forces to surround them, cut them apart and then digested them bit by bit, a force of this size would easily be dealt with.

Then.

Kooooouuuuuuu!

A tremendous amount of energy poured out from beyond the Great Barrier.

An amount of energy that even gave the chills to the members of Hansoo’s forces who had assimilated with the mana pools.

Shiver.

“This... This is the energy of the mana node.”

Then.

“Fuck. There’s no easy way through anything huh.”

Karhal cursed out as he looked at the players in the distance who had started to shine brightly.

.....

“Uwaaaaaa! Jackpot!”

“Yo! There was a buff like this?”

Overflowing strength.

A burning body.

Krarpika looked at his body that had been glowing brightly with a shocked expression.

‘...Amazing.’

The buffs they usually had were a joke compared to this.

Of course there were issues.

“Fuck! This drains our health too quickly!”

“God! Even just standing still would kill us!”

A giant spell using the player’s bodies as mediums and the energy from the mana node.

The overflowing strength of the mana node gave the players tremendous strength but it gnawed through their life as the cost.

And Eloa smiled as she looked at the players.

“What’s the issue? It wouldn’t matter for you guys to die.”

This spell would definitely kill them once it was cast.

And a spell which was guaranteed to fail if the mediums resisted.

This was why she couldn’t use something like this against the soldiers of the Kingdoms.

Since they wouldn’t accept their lives falling into danger.

But for these guys, the story was different.

Eloa spoke with a cold expression.

“It’s time for you to prove your worth. Since we’ll handle the penalties... Kill as many as you can before you die.”

“Kuahahaha! Oh my! Let’s go!”

“Uaaaaaaaaaaaaa!”

Apocalypto and the other players roared towards the golden

army approaching as they felt overflowing strength inside them.

# Chapter 259 : Golden Dragon Formation (2)

---

Booooooom!

“Kuaaaak!”

Hansoo handed Krancheska over to the Ain and was charging through the War Fortress while radiating a terrifying aura.

While smashing through the heads of the players who were both charging at him and were running away.

At the same time.

Kiiiiiiiing.

‘Leveled up.’

Hansoo checked his status after sensing himself level up.

[Kang Hansoo]

---

Strength (Green): 98%

Stamina (Green): 98%

Agility (Green): 98%

Perception (Green): 98%

Mana (Green): 98%  
Magic (Green): 98%  
Physical Resistance (Green): 98%  
Magic Resistance (Green): 98%  
+Level : 249

<Skills>

---

- Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement: 70.3%
- Pandemic Blade: 49.7%
- Nine Dragons Spear: 10.2%

<Artifacts>

---

- Forked Lightning (Green): 98%
- Nurmaha’s Ring (Green): 98%
- Thousand Soldiers Armors (Green): 98%
- Dark Cloud (Green): 98%
- Dragon Essence Blade (Green): 98%
- Mana Jade (Green): 98%
- God’s Flail (Green): 55410/66666

<Traits>

---

- Fragments of Seven Souls (3/7)
- Seven Stars (3/7)

‘Good. Almost done.’

The good thing about this world was that everything would get enhanced as he gained experience.

There was no need to raise each characteristic separately.

As Hansoo nodded at the well distributed numbers.

Boooom!

A tremendous wave of mana rushed over the entire War Fortress.

Of course the Ain and Hansoo, who were running towards the War Fortress to rejoin with the main group, felt it as well.

“...It begun. But still, for them to use such a massive amount of energy in such an inefficient way.”

The Ain, who had Krancheska on her back, started to frown.

The energy of the mana node was not something they should use with such a crappy method.

To use the creation of their ancestors in a way like this.

Hansoo mumbled in the front.

“Whether it’s inefficient or not, it may be effective.”

“ ... ”

The Ain wanted to refute but she didn’t.

Since she couldn’t.

Even if their method of using it was crude and inefficient, the power behind it was not something trivial.

‘I need to figure out the current situation.’

“I’ll go up above for a bit.”

Hansoo spoke to the Ain and then smashed his foot down.

Booooooooooom!

The land couldn’t handle the force as it started to crack apart and created a huge dust cloud.

Hansoo used the reaction force to skyrocket hundreds of meters into the air and looked at his surroundings.



At where the mana shockwave came from.

‘...So that’s it huh.’

The golden army marching towards the Great Barrier.

And the players who were charging towards that army like mad dogs.

They weren’t organized and were lacking in number but the viciousness of the players charging towards the hundreds of thousands of golden soldiers made them seem like bright fireflies flying into flames.

And if they fought, such a pitiful number of should’ve easily been destroyed.

If only the bright light surrounding them didn’t exist.

Kwadududu!

The players who had gained new strength couldn’t hold their emotions back and were charging like crazed dogs.

Smashing through every building and obstacles in their way.

Energy that could supply them with a vast amount of power.

The players weren't able to handle it but it didn't matter.

Since that much strength should be more than enough to cause a ruckus before they perished.

‘Well played. Was she called Eloa?’

Hansoo thought of the name he had squeezed out from Krancheska before.

But he only smiled coldly.

‘I'm not sure if she's confused about priorities.’

If the goal was to destroy him and the other adventurers then Eloa's plan was an amazing plan indeed.

But if her goal was defending the formation then she should've done something else.

Whooosh

Hansoo’s body started to fall from the air towards the ground due to gravity.

At the same time.

Hansoo’s lungs expanded as he breathed in all the surrounding air.

Then.

Rooooaaaarrrr!

“Everyone split up!”

A tremendously huge roar that pushed back all of the surrounding atmosphere rang throughout the surrounding land.

Covering the area of the War Fortress below.

.....

Eloa, who was very wary of the battlefield’s situation, had the entire War Fortress in her sight.

Of course she saw the golden humanoid figure flying into the air.

It would be weirder to not notice such a thing flying into the air.

Though somebody strange flying into the air was nothing special, Eloa was shocked.

After she saw the weapon in his hands.

God's flail.

Eloa was shocked.

'No way! Sir Krancheska went to chase after it!'

That guy should've long turned into ashes.

'Perhaps Sir Krancheska...'

Eloa shook her head after having an ominous thought.

Since such a thing was impossible.

Eloa thought of it as stupid, pushed it to the back of her mind and then quickly made a stern expression.

‘What kind of retarded move am I about to do?’

Standing in the battlefield, one needed to always bear in mind of the worst case scenario.

She didn’t think that Sir Krancheska had lost to that person but even Sir Krancheska wasn’t invincible.

A battle’s outcome could vary significantly from just a slight variable.

This entire situation was a huge variable in itself and nobody knew what would happen to the War Fortress now.

If this current situation was not the rebellion of the players?

And if there was actually an unknown power who had engineered the current events?

Sir Krancheska losing was not an impossibility.

Which meant that the current situation was the worst situation possible.

Though she didn’t know what had happened to Sir Krancheska, she needed to keep in mind that he might not be able to help her.

But after a brief moment of thought, Eloa concluded that there wouldn't be many issues.

‘Even if it's him... He wouldn't be able to defeat twenty thousand zealots over there.’

Eloa looked towards the immortals who were charging like crazed beasts.

They didn't have any fears or anything holding them back.

They solely acted with greed, the greed for blood.

The perfect soldiers.

They would not let the prey in front of their eyes escape.

Since that prey would become money and exp for them.

And before they all died, the second spell they were working on would finish.

‘What will you do?’

As Eloa giggled.

“Everyone split up!!!”

RUMMMBLEEEE!!!

A thunderous voice rang out from the air.

A tremendous shout that was almost impossible to emerge from the body of a single person.

The moment she heard that voice.

Eloa frowned.

‘...They will just get destroyed one by one though?’

The true strength of an army was their organized and dense defense as well as the offense which came from this.

They might live if they split up but eventually they would just get killed off one by one.

‘Well. At least they are well disciplined. Look how well they follow orders.’

But if the intellect of the commander was low then following the orders well would actually hurt them instead.

Eloa smiled as she saw the army split up the moment the voice

was heard.

But then the person flying in the air landed on the ground with a boom.

Then.

Boooooom!

Another explosive noise was heard from where he landed and Eloa turned to look towards that direction in confusion.

She then freaked out.

At the person who was running numerous times faster than the zealots she had created.

Boom!

Boooooom!

The man with the flail stomped through the ground and was charging.

Towards the inside of the Great Barrier where the Golden Dragon Formation lay.



At a crazy pace.

Booom!

Eloa then freaked out again as she looked behind the man.

‘Ain! Sir Krancheska! Fucking hell...Sir Krancheska really did lose!’

Eloa then suddenly realized what his goal was and shouted out loudly.

“Fuck! Defend the main base! Stop chasing and defend the main base!”

Boooooom!

The voice, which had been amplified through magic, rang out towards the zealots who were charging crazily.

.....

“Fuck! Defend the main base! Stop chasing and defend the main base!”

Boooooom!

Apocalypto made a confused expression as he heard the giant shout from behind.

‘Did something happen? Why does she sound so panicked?’

The only thing left was to chase the people running away and shred them apart.

The ones running away in the distance.

Though chasing them was harder now, it would be easier to actually kill them.

Since there was a huge difference between dealing with a clumped up group and separated people.

But why was she saying such things in a situation like this?

Apocalypto shrugged and shouted towards his comrade who was running next to him, <T.R.O.P>.

Someone who had the same rank as him and his best friend.

“Yo, do we have to listen to those orders?”

T.R.O.P smiled while smashing through the building in front of him.

“Why should we?”

And Apocalypso giggled at T.R.O.P’s words.

“Right?”

This tremendous strength that they were given.

It wasn’t free.

There was a time limit.

It wasn’t short but every second mattered.

They needed to take as much as they could within this time.

But to ask them to use such precious time defending the main base?

Leaving the tasty prey in the distance, that was splitting up?

He didn’t know what that Eloa lady had hiding in the main base but that didn’t matter to them at all.

‘If you’re that desperate Defend it yourself. Miss, you are strong

too you know?’

Apocalypto shrugged his shoulders as he thought about Eloa.

“Yo! Just charge!”

“Hahahahaha!”

“Of course!”

Despite the frantic shout of Eloa.

The players ignored the orders and started to run even faster.

Towards the golden army splitting up in the distance.

“These fucking bastards!!!”

Eloa roared out loud as she saw that not even a single person had even turned around.

Though she knew that they were like mad dogs but for them to be this bad.

Even the few of the twenty thousand who were about to turn their heads followed the flow in the end and just continued to charge.

‘Dumb bastards! Do you guys even know where your energy comes from!? I should’ve told them before...Fuck!’

For them to act like this when the guy who had beaten Sir Krancheska was charging into the formation like this.

If the Golden Dragon Formation broke then that buff would disappear as well.

It was her mistake that she hadn’t told them about it in case they got swept up by greed.

As Eloa was about to shout again.

Whooosh!

A piece of metal flew towards her from the distance.

Boooooooooom!

Eloa hurriedly created a mana shield to block the flail flying into her face and then glared below the barrier.

Towards the guy who had already arrived and was smiling at her.

“How about you play with me instead?”

“...Bastard.”

Eloa grinded her teeth.

# Chapter 260 : Golden Dragon Formation (3)

---

Boooooom!

Eloa frowned as she looked at the man who had smashed her shield.

It wasn't any simple shield.

There was only a single objective for her who was the 3rd in command in the Magic Brigade.

Defending the others.

When the mages were preparing large spells, she would get the support of a few other mages to create the defenses and Arthus Krancheska would go outside that defense to fight their opponents.

Her other magics may not be top notch but she was extremely confident in her defensive spell, <Bronze Barrier>.

But her opponent was actually shaking the bronze barrier surrounding her quite well.

‘...Not bad.’

But that was it.

He wasn't bad.

For somebody who had the level limit of 250.

But this was nowhere enough to defeat their captain, Arthus Krancheska.

Even with the Ain behind him.

Though Krancheska's personality was quite bad, his skills were the real deal.

Even if he used the power of the flail, it shouldn't be enough.

'Fuck. How did he lose! Say something Krancheska!'

Then.

Tatak.

The ain that was covered in flames knocked out Krancheska that she was holding and threw him off.

Then.



Whooooosh!

The Ain, in her flame form, closed in the gap to appear right in front of Eloa and started to send out a barrage of attacks.

Boobooboom!

Boooooom!

The blazing cloud kept changing forms as it attacked her shield.

And from the side the human attacked her with the flail and a mysterious golden spear.

The flail was one thing, but she didn't know what the hell the spear and the ring was but every time the ring shone and the spear cut across the void she felt her shield tremble vigorously.

‘Ughh! He’s 50 levels lower...What the hell!’

Eloa clenched her teeth.

If there was only one person like him, she would be able to handle him.

Since her goal wasn't winning but buying time until the formation activated properly.

But two was a different story.

Her level was 300.

But the Ain in front of her was at least at that level as well.

Meaning that it wasn't an easy opponent.

Eloa figured out that the situation wasn't good as she clenched her teeth.

‘No! I cannot get pushed back!’

A brilliant future waited for her.

In a situation like this where even the captain, Arthus Krancheska, had been captured, if she dealt with this situation properly then everything would come back to her as rewards.

But if she got pushed back?

She would have to shoulder all responsibility.

Since the one who should've beared the most, Arthus, was captured by the other side already.

‘Dumbass. You were so confident but you dare get captured as a hostage?’

Eloa looked at the unconscious Krancheska in the distance with a dumbfounded expression.

Their king, the Little Dragon King Constantine, was not an easy-going person who lets slip-ups like this unpunished.

He believed that everyone useless should be disposed of.

“Damnit!”

Boooooom!

From the bronze sphere, a spear looking like a spike shot out.

And then 17 spears dozens of meters long all shot out and aimed for the vital spots of her enemies but it was all useless.

Boom!

Claaaanggg!

The Ain and the human both used their weapons to smash apart incoming attacked and dodged the rest.

‘Damn...This is only useful to stop them for a short while.’

Eloa grinded her teeth.

The Bronze Armor was for defense anyway.

The situation wasn't that bad since her opponent's levels were lower and they were being wary of her.

But sooner or later her Bronze Armor will get smashed apart by their attacks.

‘At this rate...’

Eloa thought of the final card she had.

The power those crazed dogs in the distance were using.

Mana node.

Eloa gulped and looked behind her.

Her mana sensitive eyes could see it.

The immense amount of mana that flowed below the barrier.

Her body was much stronger than the immortals who were barely at level 250 and was also much more resilient.

It was much more suitable to use the power.

Though she wouldn't die...Such a tremendous amount of energy would still mess her up.

She would become a mess if she was lucky.

If she wasn't lucky then she might get disabled.

Then.

Booooooooooom!

Craaaaack!

Cracks started to appear on the Bronze Armor from the countless attacks that pummeled it.

‘Damn...’

Swhoooosh!

Eloa pushed them back with the spikes and then breathed in deeply.

It had only been a minute since they clashed.

But cracks had already appeared on the Bronze Armor.

It should at least last 3 minutes.

Eloa stopped thinking and clenched her teeth.

There was no time to think.

They were only staying here and not charging into the formation because they were wary of her, if she lost to them they would charge straight in.

And if she was gone, the thin shield that covered the formation would get smashed apart while the other people from the Magic Brigade, who were focused preventing the mana node from going berserk, would just get massacred.

Eloa sighed.

‘Little Dragon King, Constantine. Please acknowledge my actions.’

If she was lucky, she might take over Arthus Krancheska’s spot and even receive a new <Prison>.

Which meant she would become even more powerful than she was now.

Eloa lit up the small flare of hope in her mind, resolved her mind and then twisted the control spell of the formation.

Boooooooooom!

The Golden Dragon Formation let out a huge amount of bright light into the air again.

Swoooooooooosh!

That tremendous amount of mana got sucked into Eloa's body.

And a change occurred to Eloa and the surrounding areas of the formation.

Kududududududu!

The giant stones and the granite floor that constituted the Great Barrier started to grind against each other and rise into the air.

No, they weren't just rising.

The greyish granite started to turn bright blue.

And it wasn't just the color that changed, its composition started to change as well.

The stone ground rose up as it started to turn metallic.

And as the metal which had the color of blue bronze rose up, it started to cover up Eloa and the surrounding areas of the formation.

Like a giant turtle.

“Tsk.”

Booooooooooom!

Hansoo raised his spear and smashed the formation but the bronze blue shield deflected away Hansoo's attack with ease.

Then.

Kuududududoong.

The giant formation as well as the Great Barrier that surrounded it started to get covered in bronze blue scales.

As if a giant azure dragon had twisted onto itself and had fallen



into slumber.

‘Success!’

Eloa felt like her mana circuits were burning up but glee filled up a corner of her mind.

The best defense spell she knew which she didn’t even have close to enough mana to perform before.

A skill which she would’ve only been able to cast at the level of Arthus Krancheska, a skill which she had never tried before for this reason.

<Azure Dragon’s Seat>.

A location where an azure dragon had settled down.

Nobody would be able to penetrate it since an azure dragon was defending it.

As long as the energy was supplied from the mana node, this would not get penetrated no matter what.

‘Now...I just need to wait.’

Wait until the formation stabilized and the spell they were

working on was completed.

Or until the players outside dealt with all of the people from the golden army.

Whichever happened, it'll be their victory anyhow.

‘I like the latter thought more though. Kekekeke.’

Of course the first one wasn't bad either.

Since then...They would be able to finish everything off, no matter if it were the Ain or the golden army.

Eloa laughed coldly from the dark insides behind the wall of the Azure Dragon's Seat which even blocked light.

.....

Kuooooooooo!

Crrunnch! Crunch!

From the distance.

Because of the great changes that occurred at the Great Barrier.

The golden army and the players who were fighting across various locations of the War Fortress could all see it.

The scene of a giant azure dragon twisting around itself and setting down.

From the tremendous force of mana that radiated from this, it caused the people to fall into despair and jump in glee.

“Fuck!”

Karhal cursed out while running away in madness.

If that was something which Hansoo had done it would’ve been nice but that aura felt too familiar.

It was similar to the bright blue energies that surrounded the crazed players who were charging at them.

“Hahahaha! Bingo~. Apocalypso! I’ll have a taste first!”

“Block him!”

The moment a player with an axe came up to their face.

Karhal and the players realized that buying anymore time would

be useless and started to form defenses with their shields in an instant.

Then.

Boooom!

A collision occurred between the axe the player swung and the defense created by dozens of layers shields of the adventurers.

And the side which had been pushed back were the dozens of players who all had full plate armor and were holding onto shields.

“Kuuuuuuk!”

“Kuhuk!”

T.R.O.P screamed in ecstasy as he saw the bug players get flung apart as if they had been bit by a bowling ball.

“Hahahahaha! Finish them off! Jackpot!”

He felt power overflowing through this body.

Chwaaaarrrrrrk!

The dozens of chains which had killed countless master players

latched onto him but he wasn't afraid at all.

Titititing!

Kwaadududuk!

The spears broke after he ran into them.

He snapped the chains and pulled them back.

“Uhhh?!”

“Release the chains! We’re getting pulled in!”

“Aaaaahh!”

Karhal roared in rage as he saw the players charging into them with monstrous amounts of strength.

‘Fuck! They would be nothing without that boost! We are waiting for you, Hansoo!’

Karhal grinded his teeth while thinking of Hansoo who had flown towards the Great Barrier and started to slash at the players.

.....

Kuuudududoodooong!

Dooooong!

The Ain asked with a worried expression as she heard the noises of battle which came from the area around the War Fortress.

“...What are you going to do? It doesn’t seem easy to break through.”

Booom! Booom!

The Ain looked at Hansoo with a grim expression as she striked at the barrier in front of her.

It would eventually break if they continued to attack it, or the body of the user holding this up would break down, but they didn’t have that much time.

Hansoo inhaled deeply and spoke towards the Ain.

“Protect me.”

“Huh?”

As the Ain was confused.

Udududududuk.

Starting from Hansoo's heart.

The veins and arteries, muscles and bones all started to twist around.

Kadddddduk!

Aduduk.

‘What the fuck...’

The Ain freaked out at the sounds coming out from Hansoo's body and asked.

“You...What the hell is that?”

She didn't know what it was but she could feel it.

The great changes that were occurring inside his body.

Hansoo laughed as he spoke.

“I should at least have a trump card right?”

Kuuuoooooooo!

‘Continue hiding inside this shell. Heh.’

The goal was nine of them.

Dragons started to climb onto Hansoo’s spear as he smiled coldly.



# Chapter 261 : Golden Dragon Formation (4)

---

Kuuuuuooooong.

A location thousands of kilometers away from the Kingdom.

The capital of the empire, <Kirkis>.

Befitting of the empire, there were countless buildings and structures covered and decorated in strange symbols and objects.

And in the corner of this place, a strange village existed.

A wall created from planks which seemed like they would break down at any moment.

Roofs with holes.

The village, which consisted of thousands of run down houses, was a place where no sane person would want to live.

And it looked even worse because the imperial palace of the Kirkis, <Kikrin>, was located not far from it.

Then.

Whoooooosh!

A man cut across the darkness and appeared in front of the shabby village.

In front of the entrance at the front of the village.

“...If only we could renovate this place...”

The man who had been watching the War Fortress from the mountains near the Korin Kingdom frowned as he looked at the buildings where even ghosts wouldn't settle.

Then.

“Oh? You're here?”

“Was there... Anything this time around?”

From the deserted looking village, countless people swarmed out and started to greet the man.

Tens of thousands of people.

The man flicked off the darkness covering his body and spoke out.

“There... Was indeed something. I just came to visit momentarily

before I left.”

‘In case you did anything stupid.’

He was always antsy of what could happen so he always visited this place when he went through the warp gate.

Even in an urgent situation like this.

‘...It seems there isn’t much going on.’

The man looked around the village and remembered what he had come for as he spoke.

“Pleasantries will come after I come back, I’m very busy right now.”

“Uh? Huh?”

Even before they could speak.

Whooooosh.

The man disappeared into darkness again and the people who had come out to greet him smacked their lips and started to walk back into the village.

To finish what they were doing.

.....

Whooooooooosh!

‘...That bastard is coming.’

The vice captain of the imperial guards who protected the imperial palace, Kalkom Amaderan, frowned as he felt the aura of the shadow.

This person was somebody who he had hated as much as Arthus Krancheska.

And perhaps even more since they needed him.

Though he wanted to kill him off, he couldn’t do so.

‘A mere outsider...’

Amaderan shook his head with an ugly expression.

It wasn’t like that guy was coming to him anyway.

As Amaderan flicked his finger.

Chijijijijiik.

A small hole appeared around the great defense formation surrounding the entire imperial palace.

He didn't want to but he had to.

Since that guy would create a hole in it otherwise.

‘...Bastard.’

Soon.

Whooooosh!

The shadow-like existence went through the golden hole and started to head deeper into the palace and Amaderan resealed the formation and switched back his focus on his job of guarding the palace.

.....

Two buildings were eye-catching among the buildings in the imperial palace.

The emperor's residence which 1800 builders took 10 years to

complete : The 300m tall structure which was decorated in gold and silver lights, <Great Emperor's Residence>.

And another.

Whooooosh.

A circular plaza hundreds of meters wide.

The white plaza had no special characteristics other than being huge.

It was almost shabby compared to the luxurious structure standing next to it, the Great Emperor's Residence.

But nobody ignored this place, the <White Dragon Arena>.

Since who resided and how they used it were more important than the structure itself.

And because of the name of the owner of this place, the White Dragon Arena was treated at the same level as the Great Emperor's Residence.

Darkness appeared above the white plaza, like ink spreading over the White Dragon Area, and a man appeared.

The man who had started off at the Korin Kingdom and had gone through thousands of kilometers through the warp gates started to walk towards the center of the White Dragon Arena in a hurry.

Towards the man who was sitting in a lotus position at the center of the White Dragon Arena.

A 2m tall man who had a very simple white monk's attire.

A very ordinary looking silver stake was embedded in front of the man who was sitting in the lotus position without leaking any aura whatsoever.

‘Mmm...’

As the man who came out from the darkness started to walk towards the stake in silence.

The man who seemed to have been asleep suddenly spoke out.

“You always visit that place. It seems the village isn't really a great place to live compared to the Arrancar area?”

The man was silent from the white robed man's words.

He couldn't escape the eyes of the white robed man despite being multiple kilometers away from the white robed man.

The man smiled bitterly and spoke.

“...It’s not really a great place to live. Anyways, hold up your part of the deal. I need your help.”

The white robed man looked between the man and the stake then spoke.

“You know right? I cannot move away from this thing. And...Using the warp gate is an impossibility. The mana connection will get severed in the middle and I will get separated from it.”

A tremendous amount of mana was required to move somebody or something which was extremely powerful.

Maybe the empire’s warp gates could handle him but the kingdom’s warp gates would not be able to.

The man spoke expressionlessly.

“Don’t worry about those things...Just give me an answer.”

The white robed man looked at the man as he stood up while grabbing the silver stake.

Ududududuk.



As the white-robed man pulled at the stake with all his strength.

Rummmmmblee.

The entire White Dragon Arena started to rumble.

.....

Kudududududuk!

Hansoo’s entire body twisted around and made noises.

Noises of muscles ripping apart and crunching.

The Ain looked at Hansoo in terror as she heard the sounds that would give chills to anybody who heard these noises.

‘What kind of skill...’

Every time a dragon popped out from the body, she felt more and more terror.

Not from the sound but from the viciousness of the skill.

A destructive force that was created by eating up the user’s own body.

She had never even heard of such an extremely efficient skill that was almost at the level of self-torture.

A skill which was set up so one could pull out every drop of power within their body.

Kududududuk!

Wadududuk!

The moment Hansoo went past eight and reached nine.

Cruuunnnch!

The nine dragons all got sucked into a single point.

Then.

Wmmmmm~

A dark sphere which sucked even the light around it appeared.

A sphere much bigger and darker than the one he had created in the yellow zone in the past.

If the one in the past was the size of a fingernail then this was a size of a fist.

The moment the sphere was completed.

Whooooooooosh!

Despite knowing that thing wouldn't cause it harm, the Ain instinctively retreated behind Hansoo.

The sphere that was created for the sole purpose of destruction was way too terrifying.

‘...How could such a weakling have this much strength!’

The first part of the prophecy that she had heard had been spot on.

That this person will capture a small sun.

Though she didn't believe this either, she could accept this much.

Since despite the Red Dragon Wielder, Arthus Krancheska, being an enormously powerful figure compared to Hansoo, he wasn't an figure at the top echelons who could shake this world.

But the second prophecy that they heard, and hadn't told anyone

about yet, was something that she thought made no sense at all.

Though the prophecies where always correct, the way the prophecy was fulfilled was not always the way they expected.

As the Ain thought to herself.

Whooooooooosh!

The dark sphere which had appeared at the tip of the spear flew forward.

Annihilating the land in its path.

And breaking the space around it.

The moment the black sphere smashed onto the giant metal fortress which resembled a dragon that had coiled onto itself.

<!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!>

A tremendous amount of light and noise occurred as it covered the entire area.

Kwaaaaaaadddddddduududuu!

A heaven shaking amount of strength rang throughout the Great

Barrier.

The air compressed away from the point of impact and the lands flipped.

Not from the destruction of the Nine Dragons Spear but rather from the collision only.

The Azure Dragon's Seat, which forcibly pulled the mana from the node below, tried to resist with all its strength but it could only last a few moments.

Kududuk!

Crunch!

A 1km wide azure dragon fortress got pushed back by a small black sphere and started to get destroyed.

“Kuwaaaaaak!”

“Aaarrkkkk!”

The mages inside screamed but these screams drowned at the huge explosion which occurred afterwards.

As the giant destruction wave swept past the Great Barrier.

Rummmbleee.

The bronze blue dragon skill, which had been shredded apart, turned into dust and created a large dust cloud.

Then.

Whooooooooosh!

The atmosphere which had been pushed back rushed back in with powerful winds which swept away the dust clouds and showed the contents.

Ooooooong!

Surprisingly, as if the formation itself had the direct protection of the mana node, it was fine from the explosion.

Well, Hansoo did indeed aim a bit away from it too.

‘Not all of them can die.’

“Phew...”. Maybe it was because his mastery over the Nine Dragons Spear had risen but Hansoo had managed not to fall asleep and mumbled while looking at the formation.

That formation's main job was to suppress the power from the mana node.

If that thing got destroyed then this place would turn into a hellhole.

Chiiijijik.

Hansoo looked at the bright sphere being created above the formation.

That was probably the second spell the mages were preparing.

But it did fail.

Though the formation was intact, the head sized bright ball of light started to lose its size rapidly.

“Ugh...”

“Kuhuk...”

The mages and Eloa who were laid out on the floor groaned as they got up.

‘I’m alive?’

Eloa checked her body and made a shocked expression.

All of her mana circuits had been burnt and her body had been turned into a mess but she was alive.

But Eloa soon deduced why.

‘...Fucking hell. I’m a hostage huh. Damn, we almost succeeded too.’

Eloa made a depressed expression.

The meal was basically completed.

The moment their spell was completed the entire situation here would’ve been sorted out.

But the spell had failed.

Eloa looked at the tiny ball of light above the formation and sighed out deeply.

‘If only he had come...’

That moment.

Kwaddddddd!



From the center of the Golden Dragon Formation.

From the tiny ball of light which had yet to disappear, a huge noise came out.

The sound of something forcibly being ground.

Then.

Kuduuududuk!

Something pierced through the small blue ball of light.

A sharp silvery object.

Then.

Whooooosh!

The entire War Fortress turned silent.

.....

‘Hnnnnngg....’

The Ain groaned inwardly.

She thought it was all over.

Until that thing popped out.

A single crappy looking stake.

But nobody made fun of it.

The extremely tiny space the stake came out from.

The vicious aura that came out from this tiny hole suppressed the entire area all the way up to the battlefield where the men from the Kingdom and the Ains were fighting.

By just looking at it shivers ran down their back and their legs trembled.

Not from the stake but from the man who pierced through to this location with the stake.

‘This guy can defeat that thing?’

The other prophecy had said this.

That a thousand-years-old great tree would fall from a being with

horns and scales.

The thousand-years-old great tree only meant one thing within this entire world.

Thousand-years-old warrior.

The man who created the difference between the empire and the kingdoms all by himself.

Tiamet Kratus.

Kwaddddddd!

‘...seriously?’

A human but at the same time, a non-human.

The Ain made a terrified expression while looking towards the existence who was creating a hole through space.

## Chapter 262 : Golden Dragon Formation (5)

---

Kuuuuooooong.

As an explosion which shook the heavens and earth rang out.

“What the fuck! What happened!”

“Uuuuuuk!”

The blue light that surrounded the players disappeared into thin air.

Sway.

“What the...Did that level 300 girl guy die?”

Apocalypto almost tripped from the strength which had disappeared into thin air and cursed out.

He was curious but he didn't go back.

Since a level 300 falling was something impossible.

And they were people who controlled had the power which had been gifted to themselves to hunt the bug players.

He thought they'd be able to defend themselves but for them to get destroyed!

‘Fucking hell! After all those cocky words!’

Apocalypto looked at his current status and cursed out again.

The overwhelming amount of mana turned his innards into a mess and the buff was gone.

Apocalypto looked at the Bug Players who he had been playing with up until now and were now glaring at him with vicious eyes.

“...Ah fuck.”

With those words.

Crunch!

Boom!

A massacre occurred.

“These fuckers!”

“Uwaaaak!”

Kwadududk!

Clang!

Countless chains and spears flew across the air and turned the players into golden lights.

‘Good! Good! It’s all over!’

Karhal applied the Quintuple beam onto his arrow and shot it out with a relieved expression.

It ended.

The huge explosion would’ve been created by Hansoo.

Seeing the buff had been released, he had either caused a large amount of damage to the formation or took over the area.

Which meant that their job here was basically completed.

“Phew...”

As Karhal sighed out in relief.

Whooooooooosh!

A tremendously vicious aura spread out from the Great Barrier.

An aura which caused him to be unable to breath and barely stand.

“Huuuuuukk!”

“Ugh...What the fuck!”

The aura was so powerful even the fighting adventurers lost their balance and were tripping.

Shiver.

‘What the fuck happened now.’

Karhal stroked the chills that appeared all over his body and looked towards the Great Barrier.

.....

“...Was I a bit too late?”

Because the mastery level of his Nine Dragons Spear had risen, he didn’t fall unconscious or get down to a heavily injured state.

He still had a bit of strength and was recovering very quickly.

But even so, the situation wasn't very bright.

Kudududuk.

Ududuk.

Hansoo calmly recovered, reclaimed his balance and stared at the monster who was slowly enlarging the dimensional crack in the distance.

Tiamet Kratus.

There wasn't really a big difference between the Kingdoms and the Empire.

But there was a reason why they were called differently so.

There wasn't a Tiamet Kratus in the Kingdoms.

And there was one in the Empire.

This was why they were different.



A man who had lived over a thousand years and protected the Empire, a living fossil and a historical relic.

But that man did not move rashly.

No, he couldn't move.

‘To control Rangkom's Stake...He wouldn't be able to stay away from the White Dragon Arena for that long. Is he really willing to come here despite that?’

Tiamet held one of the three godly weapons of the Empire, Rangkom's Stake, and stabbed away at the dimensional crack so it would stay open.

And that wasn't all.

Oooooooooong!

The Golden Dragon Formation, that hundreds of mages could barely control, forcibly acted up and was handing over the energy to Tiamet just so he could create a passage.

Hansoo frowned as he looked at Tiamet who used Rangkom's Stake as a medium to swallow the formation whole.

‘...He's still a monstrosity after this long huh.’

He had admired his strength in his past life as well.

A thousand years in a single world.

The strength that he had gained through the countless years of countries rising and falling and the lands changing was not something a passing adventurer could handle.

And since he was an enemy, his might was even more oppressive.

All of the hairs in his body stood up and his heart started to beat crazily.

A natural reaction of the body's survival instincts as one met a tremendously powerful opponent.

Kuuuuooooooooo!

The dimensional portal was continuing to become larger and larger.

‘Ugh.’

Hansoo frowned.

He had thought that everything was concluded but for that man to pop out.

But Hansoo soon realized why such a man had appeared after a brief moment of thought.

‘So they interfered huh.’

Hansoo, after figuring out the reason, rapidly tried to organize the current situation in his head.

Being late is late and not being able to stop that man is his fault.

The hole had been created already and Tiamet was smashing it open.

So he could open it completely and come onto this side.

And the oppressive might radiating from him was increasing at a continuous rate.

Kuooooooooo!

“Ugh....”

“Cough...”

The might that spread out from such a tiny crack was so powerful that it even caused the mages laid out on the floor to

cough out blood.

“Ahh....”

Hansoo looked over at the mages for a bit and then clenched onto the flail.

Ududuk.

‘Block him before he comes out.’

That man was not something he could handle right now.

So he had to prevent him from coming here no matter what.

‘...It won’t be easy but I’ll have to try anyways.’

Push back the stake as much as he could and retake the control over the formation.

Hansoo started to walk towards the center of the formation with the flail while pushing back the aura that was flooding out from the small crack.

Right in the center.

Towards the dimensional crack that was now the size of an eye.

Kuduk.

Crunch.

Though it was only the aura of the man, the ground broke under his feet with every step he took.

“Heeuup!”

Hansoo raised his arms to block the area in front of his body as he advanced and then smashed the God’s Flail onto the center of the formation.

Then.

Roaaaaarrr!

The tremendous flow of energy that was being sucked into the Rangkom’s Stake started to disperse.

Towards the flail which was closer and was placed in a better location.

And the flail started to heat up bright red again.

Like how it had been when it was sealed in the past.

<Kuuhaaa!>

<Uaaaaa!>

The souls within the flail started to scream from the intense amount of energy that started to flow through them.

But of course this energy didn't only go to the flail.

“Ugh...”

Hansoo grunted as he felt the tremendous amount of energy that flew through the flail.

But he had to hold onto it.

Though there was a medium, it needed someone's consciousness to use the energy towards the objective they needed to do.

Energy without a purpose that continued to build up would only cause a havoc.

Hansoo only had one objective.

‘Close...The gate!’

Booooooom!

The energy of the mana node, which turned the flail bright red, started to flow onto a specific point.

Towards the hole in the air, towards Rangkom’s Stake which was piercing through it.

Soon.

Kwaaazzzzzzzzzzkkk!

The hole that had been opening up stopped expanding and started to convulse in mid air.

It seems Hansoo had taken the upper hand on the mana node’s energy.

At that moment.

“Not bad.”

Tiamet smiled while looking at Hansoo through the eye sized hole.

.....

Craaacckk!

The black robed man looked towards the hole where Tiamet was looking through the broken space.

‘Monster...’

Though the hole created by the white stake was indeed tiny, a powerhouse like Tiamet didn’t simply look with their eyes alone.

‘Well. It’s a bit opaque but it’s not bad.’

Tiamet felt the situation across the hole with his senses and then mumbled.

“Saw somebody who isn’t half bad...And somebody familiar thanks to him. Not bad, not bad at all.”

“A familiar face...?”

‘What the hell is he spurting...’

The man muttered in disbelief.

A familiar face.

Since there was countless people across that hole, seeing one or



two people they knew wasn't something strange.

If Tiamet was an ordinary person in an ordinary situation.

‘Wait. You haven’t gone out from here in a hundred years...’

And from what he knew, not many people lived past being a hundred years old.

As the black robed man looked at Tiamet in confusion.

Tiamet slowly started to spread his hand out.

“Then...Shall we go see our cowardly friends? It seems the friends are out to escort me anyway.”

Tiamet looked towards the Ain who was staring at him in a daze and started to shove his left hand into the hole.

Soon.

Oooooooooonggg!

The dimensional portal that was barely holding on in the air started to tremble intensely.

The power of destruction within Tiamet’s left hand started to

move through the portal.

From the capital of the empire.

Towards the center of the War Fortress thousands of kilometers away.

.....

Kududududuk!

The hand which ripped apart space as it advanced stopped right before the eyehole sized hole.

The space was barely large enough for a single pointer finger to come through.

And this pointer finger that was pointing towards Hansoo, a 2m tall giant muscular man, was almost pitiful.

But the moment Hansoo saw the finger.

Whoosh!

Hansoo quickly moved his head away.

No, he even abandoned the flail in his hand and dodged away.

As the instinctive dodge had been performed.

Boooooom!

A giant laser erased everything in its path and passed where Hansoo had been standing just before.

Erasing the Great Barrier and destroying a part of the War Fortress.

“Uwaaaaaaaak!”

“Kuhuuk!”

The screams of the adventurers and the players who were fighting in the distance couldn't dodge.

A simple gesture which led to destruction.

“Ha...”

The mages saw the concentration and the usage of mana from the finger and trembled in fear.

With just a simple thought the surrounding atmosphere trembled and the mana went into a havoc.

They talked about the thousand year warrior but none of them had actually seen Tiamet before.

No, only legends and stories were told because of this.

And the mages scoffed at these legends and stories.

Since these tales made no sense.

But the supernatural being that had appeared in front of them was far past what they had heard.

At the same time a ray of hope appeared in their minds.

‘...We can live! We won’t have to become hostages!’

Having their lives in the hands of others was the same was not being alive at all.

They would need to constantly show that they had a use and the moment they weren’t be of use, they would just get removed.

Such a treatment was not something they would like.

But the empire, whom they were in an alliance with, had stepped up.

Hope had appeared.

‘Kekeke...You’ll all die now.’

As the mages chuckled at the golden army in the distance.

Flick.

The finger in the air swirled around and pointed towards a different direction.

Towards Hansoo who was about to grab onto the flail again.

Then.

Boooooom!

Another beam came out and swept past the upper areas of the formation.

Nothing could stand in the path of this finger.

The barrier and the ruins.

The War Fortress.

Even the mages.

“Kuwaaaaak!”

“Uaaak! Why..!?”

The mages whose limbs had been erased by the beam screamed in pain.

At that moment.

The Ain dodged away and muttered.

In a slightly different tone from before.

“Dumbasses. You think they will care about you?”

That man had lived a thousand years.

By himself.

Alliances and human interactions. Nothing mattered to that man.

Since nobody could tie him down.

He removed things he didn't like and moved according to what he wanted.

The strength which had been refined over a thousand years had become even more perfect and his personality had become more and more like what it was today.

‘...He has become a true monster now huh.’

The Ain mumbled as he looked at the existence who would be over across the hole.

The eyes that had trembled in fear and shock had disappeared and only a pair of cold heartless eyes appeared.

As if she had become a different person.

‘It seems...You need to become a bit stronger. It's a bit too early to let you loose.’

This is the reason why she had awoken.

The Ain looked between Tiamet in the distance and Hansoo as she flew towards the formation.

## Chapter 263 : Golden Dragon Formation (6)

---

‘What a bastard.’

Hansoo mumbled as he watched the left hand approaching him.

It wasn’t hard to kill off a weakling with a flick of a finger.

But this guy was slowly, very slowly, pushing Hansoo around.

He was playing around after not having been able to for so long.

Using this chance where he had finally been able to leave the White Dragon Arena and enjoy himself.

As long as Hansoo couldn’t grab the flail, the vast amount of energy wouldn’t stop Tiamet.

‘This really feels annoying.’

Boooooom!

“Uaaaaak!”

“Kuhuk! Sir Tiamet! Please! We’re allies!”



Countless mages died while screaming around the field.

But the finger floating in the air didn't care as it continued to flick around and turned the surrounding area into blazing hell.

Booooooom!

The Barrier got destroyed and the War Fortress slowly broke apart.

And because Hansoo couldn't focus on the flail, the energy that had flown into the flail just dispersed into the air.

The Stake, which was no longer obstructed, was continuously increasing the size of the hole.

Everybody felt shivers run down their back as they saw Tiamet's eyes gazing towards them from across the hole which was now the size of a fist.

Though Tiamet was smiling, it actually made him look scarier.

Eyes that didn't look at humans like they were humans.

Those eyes were blazing with his greed and desire.

And the mages knew.

How scary things got when a person who didn't consider other humans as his own kind gained a tremendous amount of strength.

Just a finger was this strong, what would happen if his entire body came through?

Of course there wasn't much time for them to think about this.

Boooooom!

Since another beam swept by and erased them from this world.

“Uaaaaaak!”

Arthus Krancheska, who has been laid flat on the ground, grinded his teeth while watching this scene.

“Fucking bastard...Kuaaak!”

They were indeed arrogant but they were still his underlings.

People who he had grown and trained himself.

They were not people who should be dying like this.

‘Fucking bastard...You’re smiling?’

For him to have taken that monster as a role model at one point.

At this rate everyone would die.

From that finger that was cutting across the air for fun.

‘Fuck...Fuck! If only I could use mana! If only!’

Even without the prison, his level still remained.

But without any mana, he was merely a powerless human being.

As Arthus Krancheska watched the entire scene in despair.

Tutututuk

He felt a hand touching his back.

“What...?”

The suppression that had blocked his mana was released.

Arthus Krancheska turned around as he felt the mana releasing out from his heart and regenerating his body.

To see who had released the suppression on his body.

‘Well. It would be that person.’

The Ain.

It should be her.

Since only the one who had placed the suppression could break it down this easily.

But he was filled with confusion as he turned around.

“...Who are you?”

Arthus Krancheska muttered as he saw the one standing behind him.

There wasn't a difference in appearance.

The Ain who had been fighting with him who was over level 300.

The one inside that body was an entirely different being.

He could tell from just one look.

It was not the eyes filled with fear and rage that had fought with him.

The eyes now looked calm and empty but were filled with a dim light.

Like a well with the moon shining down upon it.

“What the...”

As Krancheska made a confused expression.

The Ain spoke towards him.

“It seems you aren't gonna move. Do you have that much free time?”

“...Fuck.”

Arthus quickly regenerated his body with his superhuman amount of mana and glanced at the existence in front of him while opening and closing his hands.

Though he didn't have the prison, he had more than enough strength to deal with weaklings.

It was more than enough to beat down his thing in front of him.

As well as the one dodging the attacks madly in the distance.

“Ugh. Fucking hell.”

Krancheska spat on the ground and headed towards the formation.

He didn't like the eyes that seemed to know everything but there was no time to waste.

Krancheska reached the formation and then stomped on the ground a few times.

A mana wave spread out from where he had stomped and through Eloa and the few dozens of mages who were still alive.

And this simple movement was very effective.

Whooooosh!

The mages felt their mana circuits recovering as well as their bodies.

Krancheska stomped again as he saw this.

Toong!

If the previous wave was for regenerating their mana, this one was for communication.

A special and intricate mana code told them one thing as it swept by them.

<Get that bastard away from this place>.

The mages gritted their teeth and nodded as they stood up.

Nobody would allow a tiger to escape its cage even if they didn't have a hostile relationship.

Though that bastard didn't have any bad blood with them, there was no telling what this man would do if he got across.

The mages carefully started to position around the formation.

.....

Boooooom!

Tiamet looked around at the scene in leisure through the hole which was now the size of a fist.

The outside world which he hadn't seen in a very long time.

‘Soon I’ll be able to send out two fingers.’

Booooooom!

Tiamet swept the surroundings once more and smirked at Hansoo who had distanced himself away from his attacks.

He had heard what this guy was doing here.

But the goal Hansoo was trying to achieve wouldn't be fulfilled.

Since he was confident in himself.

What could that golden army do?



‘But...It’s annoying when he’s this good at dodging.’

Tiamet had actually been quite annoyed for a while.

Though it had started as a joke, that guy was dodging him way too easily.

He had started attacking with the intention of sending a leg flying but that weakling was amazing at dodging.

As if that guy was very experienced with fighting those who were strong.

Of course if his actual body was over there this would mean nothing but in a situation where he could only use a finger, he was feeling quite annoyed.

Tiamet frowned as he spoke towards the man glaring at him from the distance.

“Don’t resist meaninglessly like this. You guys...Cannot become the owners of this place. Be thankful that you’re living by us.”

Hansoo frowned.

He knew what these words meant.

From the things he had experienced.

‘But still... It’s more than I expected.’

At this rate that guy will really come over to this side.

And there was no way for him to block this from happening.

‘Nothing I can do.’

Hansoo clenched his teeth.

His original goal was to take the formation, use the flail as a medium and devour everything with that energy.

Then the War Fortress would become something that nobody would be able to break through.

He would help the Ains with that strength to let them into the Spirit land, use this place as a base of operations and from there start his next plans.

But since things had become like this, there was nothing he could do.

He had to use the final method.

‘Blow it apart.’

Booooooooooom!

Hansoo mumbled as he dodged another beam which barely missed the formation.

Blow apart the energy from the formation.

And destroy everything in the vicinity.

‘It’s a waste but... Nothing else can be done.’

Hansoo deeply breathed in and out.

Though destroying the formation would be a waste and he and his golden army would take a considerable amount of damage, this was still much better than that guy coming over to this side and using the formation.

Then.

A ray of voice made its way to Hansoo.

<Let me into the formation.>

“...?”

A voice that came into his head.

‘They had this sort of ability?’

Hansoo made a shocked expression as he heard the voice of the Ain, though slightly different, in his head.

‘...No way.’

Hansoo’s head quickly deduced the situation.

To figure out the identity of the speaker.

Who had this kind of ability?

‘Ah... For it to have come personally...’

Hansoo nodded and then started to charge towards the flail.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

“...This crazy bastard.”

Tiamet made a confused expression at Hansoo who had started

running while shaking the ground.

‘Is he trying to die?’

Tiamet flicked his finger.

To end the man having his final struggle.

Then.

Whooooosh!

A flaming cloud surrounded Hansoo’s back.

As if it was trying to use Hansoo as a shield.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Tiamet stopped at the sudden appearance of the Ain but then smiled.

“Mudusella. It seems the difference between us has grown too far now.”

Tiamet shook his head at the giant man charging and the Ain stuck behind him.

For her to have become like this where she didn't even have the confidence to appear before him without some weakling defending her like this.

'I won't kill you at least.'

Tiamet decided to deal with the man in front of him and pointed towards the guy.

Then.

Boooom!

A beam extended out from his finger and headed towards the man.

But right before he was about to be hit.

Kududududuuk!

Something broke up from the ground and blocked in front of him.

A giant blue bronze object.

Boooom!

The blue bronze wall couldn't block the beam completely and allowed it to puncture a hole through it, it was still successful in allowing Hansoo to barely dodge.

And Tiamet was dumbfounded by this scene.

‘Aren't they fearless. They could've lived if they were lucky... They dare act against me?’

He had seen them moving around in the back but he had thought that they would strike Hansoo instead of going against him.

‘Maybe I'm trusting these guys too much.’

Tiamet decided to kill off these guys once he got through as he flicked his finger to kill off Hansoo once again.

Kiiiiiiing!

‘Let me end you.’

It was too close to dodge now.

As he finished preparing to shoot the man who had come all the way to the formation.

‘Wait, where did she go?’

Tiamet frowned as he saw that Mudusella had disappeared from behind the man who had come out from the blue bronze barrier.

Then.

Whooosh!

Tiamet frowned as he saw Mudusella flying towards the flail after dispersing like a cloud.

‘Is she...?’

He finally remembered her role in the past.

Mudusella was an administrator.

She knew many more things about divine power than him.

If she were to connect with the divine power...

Tiamet made a grim expression.

‘That’s not good.’



Though it started as a favor, he had taken action and it was his responsibility to end the situation.

What if there was a possibility of failure?

Nothing had ever gone against the way he wanted and this time shouldn't be any different.

‘I was going to let you live...’

Kiiiiing!

As Mudusella was starting to condense into one form and the finger was about to attack her.

Boooom!

“What are you trying to do?”

Hansoo, who had arrived all the way up to him, smashed his finger.

Whooosh!

An attack backed with the full strength of someone and the flick of a finger.

Even so, thinking about the difference in their strength, it would be normal for Hansoo to be flung away.

But the result was different.

‘...What the?’

Tiamet was shocked.

For some reason he felt his body resistance that hardened his body get nullified and his finger was pushed back.

And thanks to this his attack had missed.

Boooooom!

“...You’re really pissing me off.”

Once rage surpassed a certain point, it would stop showing.

Tiamet’s eyes calmed down and lost their fire but it was too late.

Whooosh!

Mudusella, who had been able to dodge the beam thanks to Hansoo, raised her hands towards Rangkom’s stake and the God’s Flail.

Then.

Whooooosh.

A strange energy exploded out from Mudusella.

‘...Mmm.’

Hansoo’s five senses disappeared and his body stiffened.

Hansoo pondered deeply to himself at the sensation of the world having stopped.

# Chapter 264 : Spirit Land (1)

---

Boooooom!

As the Ain placed her hands on the God's Flail and Rangkom's Stake.

Hansoo felt the entire world stop.

He couldn't move a single finger and could only look around.

The same for Tiamet who had an enraged expression.

As well as the flaming body of the Ain.

Everything had stopped.

'...No. It's just the sensation. It didn't actually stop.'

The world hadn't actually stopped.

His conscious had accelerated to such a degree that it felt like the surroundings had stopped.

And he knew who had done this.

In the center of the stopped world.

Somebody walked towards Hansoo who was frozen.

A very beautiful female with golden hair.

“This is a first huh? Seeing me like this?”

<...Is this your original appearance?>

Because Hansoo couldn't move his lips, he thought of the words he wanted to say instead.

It was the first time seeing her but he knew who she was.

The Ain who had her hand on the stake and the flail in the distance.

Hansoo mumbled as he stared at the female walking towards him with a completely different form unlike her original evanescent body.

<You have a lot of tricks huh.>

“Well, having more divine powers increases the things I can do. Creating a form for the sake of conversation is a piece of cake... Do you want one as well?”

Then.

Whooooosh.

Another Hansoo appeared next to the frozen Hansoo.

Hansoo moved with his new body as he spoke with the Ain.

“You are the Seer right?”

The Ain nodded as it spoke.

“Let me introduce myself. My name is Mudusella.”

“How brave. For you to come out personally.”

Acting alone increased the chance of her death vastly.

And Mudusella had experienced two different near death cases.

One during the fight against Arthus Krancheska.

And just now.

Mudusella shrugged at Hansoo's words.

“It's too much for the other Ains to handle.”

If a normal Ain had come instead of her, everything would've been finished here and now.

So she had come personally.

To twist the future and turn it into the direction she wanted.

“ You should've just come out from the beginning.”:

If Mudusella had helped from the beginning, he could've thought up of many more plans.

Mudusella chuckled.

“Do you think being a Seer is an easy job? If I'm always in my original persona then I would've long become insane.”

This was why she had to use a fake persona.

To protect herself from the countless sights of the future.

If not then she wouldn't be able to handle such a long period of a thousand years.

“Don’t complain so much. This is the best I can do. And the other persona is better for fighting anyway. I don’t like fighting that much.”

Her body remained the same even when her personas switched.

Since the level remained.

Which meant the other persona, which was filled with a decent amount of rage and fear, was much more suited for it.

Hansoo nodded at Mudusella’s reply.

‘Anyhow...The seer huh...’

He had never seen the Seer, he had only heard about the rumors.

And for her to use divine powers to do things like this.

‘Anyways, I can catch a breather I guess.’

“Can you close the dimensional gate?”

Mudusella nodded at Hansoo and Hansoo sighed in relief.



‘Ok then.’

Though everybody had stopped, the time was still flowing.

It was very slow but Tiamet’s finger was pointing towards him and was preparing to send out a beam of destruction.

But if they could forcibly close the dimensional gate then the initial problems would be solved.

‘Anyway...This is a tremendous strength.’

Then.

Mudusella spoke to Hansoo.

“I have a lot to ask you. And things I’m curious about as well.”

Kiiiiiiiiiiing.

The formation started to shine with a strange noise.

Amidst the stopped world.

The stunningly beautiful Mudusella looked at Hansoo expressionlessly above the glowing formation and spoke to Hansoo.

“But you don’t have the qualifications to intrude in this world yet.”

Hansoo nodded at those words.

He had realized from the previous encounter.

Tiamet.

And Mudusella in front of him.

As well as the other powerhouses of the Kingdoms and the Empire.

He and the others didn’t have the qualifications yet.

As Mudusella saw Hansoo’s stern expression, she smiled and spoke.

“So have a good trip.”

“Huh?”

As Hansoo frowned at Mudusella’s words.

Boooooom!

The energy of the mana node.

The powers of the stake and the flail swirled around together.

Then.

Hansoo's body started to glow with a golden light.

And he knew what this phenomenon was.

“...Teleportation?”

As Hansoo frowned.

Mudusella laughed and spoke.

“You see, I was the one who set up all the Warp Gates.”

As her words ended.

Hansoo's body started to disappear.

“Since you'd just die if you go like this...I'll give you a gift.”

Mudusella touched the chest of the frozen Hansoo next to the avatar created for conversation.

Ooooooong.

A shining symbol appeared at in the center of his chest.

“...Ain’s blessing.”

As Hansoo mumbled.

Mudusella smiled.

“Have a safe trip. Don’t forget to hurry. I’ll try to handle this place but...There isn’t much time.”

Shaaaaaaaak!

Hansoo’s avatar disappeared and his spirit moved back into his real body.

And Mudusella caressed Hansoo’s cheeks while mumbling.

“And... I thank you for helping our race. We’ll take care of your race until you come back.”

As Mudusella’s hands moved away.

Chchchchchchchhhhh.

Hansoo’s body disappeared completely and not even a trace remained.

Then.

Boooooooooom!

The frozen conscioues were released and time continued to flow again.

.....

Boooooooooom!

Tiamet frowned as he watched the gate closing.

He could still see through it since it had yet to close completely but it was too difficult to interfere anymore.

‘Tsk. Is this as far as I can do.’

Tiamet smirked at Mudusella who was now staring at him.

“Mudusella. You’re still a coward huh. Are you still hiding behind the fake persona?”

“ ... ”

The Ain slowly closed her eyes as she spoke.

“That man will lead us. You and I...A thousand years is a long time to live.”

Maybe it was because she had used too much strength. Her persona was slowly sinking down.

‘...I have to deal with this as quick as possible.’

Tiamet chuckled at Mudusella’s words while she was closing the gate with her remaining strength.

He got his mouth right up to the closing gate and asked.

“Where did you send him?”

But Mudusella didn’t reply.

Since it was becoming hard to maintain her persona.

She merely mumbled inside her head.

‘To our origin.’

The spirit lands.

Beyond the northern lands.

The land that hadn’t been touched for the past thousand years.

‘...Please.’

Mudusella looked towards the direction Hansoo was teleported to and closed her eyes.

.....

A land where a blizzard was raging.

Above the vast frozen land.

Kiiiiing.

A strange golden light started to appear.

Then.

Zooooooooongg!

A man appeared from thin air.

And the moment he appeared.

Crash.

“Cough..Ugh.”

Hansoo coughed up blood as he laid flat on the floor.

‘...Damn.’

As he dropped his guard, the fatigue of the battle swept through his body.

Though the mastery level of the Nine Dragons Spear had risen, it still turned his body into a wreck.

And he had to handle Tiamet with such a body.

Though it was just a finger, that sole finger was more than enough to erase an entire clan.



‘Where did she send... No, I can guess to a degree.’

He didn’t know where exactly he was.

But there was only one place which had a natural environment like this.

Spirit Land.

A place where hundreds of different extreme natural environments existed.

It wasn’t just as simple as being cold or hot.

This environment was powerful enough to even erase a master tier player if they didn’t have the Protection Elixir with them.

No matter how strong Hansoo was, it would be impossible for him to even last a minute in his current situation.

Ooooong.

‘Blessing.’

Hansoo smiled as he looked at the strange symbol embedded in the center of his chest.

This symbol was blocking off the storm swirling around him.

No, it wasn't really blocking it off but...

'It's like persuading it.'

It felt like the symbol was calming down the raging blizzard.

Saying that this man was not its enemy.

And thanks to this, Hansoo's body was able to not receive further damages.

But that was it.

He was still in a dangerous situation.

'...It'll take a bit to recover.'

Udududuk

The Mana Jade that had overheated to the point of almost melting down was slowly coming back and the broken bones and ripped muscles were slowly regenerating.

As Hansoo raised his body up.

Roaaaaaarrrrr!

A tremendous roar was heard from the distant tundra.

And the moment Hansoo heard this.

‘...Azure Ice Tiger.’

Azure Ice Tiger.

A demonic beast which ate up the spirit stones located all over the Spirit Land and succeeded in absorbing the vast amount of ice energy which allowed it to fully adapt to these harsh conditions.

All demonic beasts that lived here were like this.

Things that decided to eat the Spirit Stones in order to survive in this place.

Of course every one of them were powerful.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The level of the Azure Ice Tiger that was charging towards this location was about 270.

It wouldn't be an issue if he was in perfect condition but not now.

No, even then he would only be able to handle one and not the countless others that would smell the blood and charge over.

'Fuck... I don't know why the hell she sent me here!'

Though he was worried about the situation of the Kingdom, and the fight between the Ains and the Empire, surviving in this place was the highest priority.

As Hansoo looked around urgently.

'...Light!'

From the distance.

He could see a blinking light in the center of the tundra.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Hansoo quickly started to dash through the raging blizzard and towards the flickering light.

# Chapter 265 : Spirit Land (2)

---

Roaaaaaarr!

His body that was in a mess.

The speed of the level 270 Azure Ice Tiger that had a much more powerful body than both the players and adventurers.

And Hansoo's skill pool which didn't have a single movement skill.

Thanks to these three things, the distance between him and the tiger decreased very quickly.

Hansoo sighed as he ran.

'Saving the world and all that shit... For me to be chased around by a tiger like this.'

He couldn't blame anybody else either since this was the path he had taken.

"Fuck you, you bastard."

Puff!

Roaaaarrr!

If he had the flail then he could fling it but he had left it above the formation.

Hansoo lifted up a piece of ice by his foot, threw it at the tiger's face and dashed away.

He would fight if he had to but the best method was to finish things without fighting.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

He didn't know what would be at the flickering light but there being light meant that there were humans.

Anyways, it was better to go there.

But Hansoo realized the identity of the light soon after.

And then frowned.

'It got even more annoying. Was it a mistake to come this way?'

Hansoo sighed as he saw the dozens of players shouting in the distance.

.....

Roaaaaaaaaaar!

“Huh? Azure Ice Tiger!”

“What the... Fuck! Our Spirit Stones are overloaded!”

Hydros Clan.

<Al-Kaeruda>, the leader of the 3rd Spirit Land platoon of the Hydros Clan, frowned as he saw the tiger charging towards them.

Usually, they would be happy to see this thing.

Since the reason why their hunting team came into this Spirit Land while drinking the expensive Protection Elixirs was to kill things like this.

Of course it wasn't for leveling or artifacts.

Since those who were able to afford the expensive Protection Elixirs to fight in here were high ranking master players equipped with top tier artifacts.

Experience and dropped artifacts were useless.



They had one objective.

To get a Spirit Stone.

An artifact which promised the players a tremendous amount of strength that came into being after the 5th patch.

Using it or selling it to the Kingdoms or the Empire were both great options.

The players, who were limited in many ways, could break through with these Spirit Stones and head further ahead.

His battle strength was at level 265 despite him being at level 250 while the other 30 or so clansmen averaged at about 260.

Killing a single level 270 Azure Ice Tiger was not hard.

If they hadn't fought just now.

Though the Spirit Stones had given them new strength, it wasn't infinite.

'That crazy bastard...He should just die by himself if he's going to die anyway.'

The gleeful atmosphere from picking up a new A rank Spirit

Stone after killing off a Azure Ice Tiger started to turn grim.

Most of the A rank Spirit Stones his teammates had were overloaded.

And killing that thing in their current situation would cause the remaining Spirit Stones to get overloaded as well as them having to use a few more Stones of Immortality.

As he thought about all this.

Al-Kaeruda frowned.

‘Which clan is this bastard from. Mannerless...You’re going on the Yellow List after this.’

Bug players on the Blacklist.

Redlist for the PKing players.

And Yellowlist for the players who weren’t very good to play with.

Getting on the Yellowlist didn’t put them in danger but rather it caused them to have a much harder time getting into hunting groups, clans and participate in other group activities.

Nobody liked to play with those kind of people.

“Hey! Bastard! Fuck off!”

“Are you crazy?!”

As if his teammates were angered as well, they stood up from their sitting positions while cursing at him.

Since despite them having told him to go away, they knew well that he wouldn't.

Al-Karueda clenched onto his weapon first and stood up as well.

‘You bastard. You thought you'd live if you came here? You're first.’

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Al-Karueda mumbled while glaring at the man running through the blizzard.

Doing such a thing... It wouldn't be strange to get killed on the spot.

And that man was a mess.

‘I’ll kill you both at the same time.’

Kiiiiing!

As they had similar thoughts as Al-Karueda.

Kiiiiiiing!

The teammates standing behind him started to glow with various colored lights.

They had started to activate the Spirit Stones before the Azure Ice Tiger got closer to them in order to deal as much damage as they could.

Of course the guy running in the front was within the area of effect as well.

‘He’ll be easy to hit since he’s large. Die you bastard.’

As Al-Karueda smiled coldly.

The man who was running towards them started to shout.

“Fuck! Don’t attack! Don’t! It’s bad! It’s really really bad!”

‘...?’

The people who were about to attack stopped.

What had happened?

The moment they thought about what could have happened in the near vicinity.

Swoosh.

“Huaa...Ha.”

The man who had run over with that brief moment collapsed on the ground while gasping for breath.

‘Fuck.’

Al-Karueda frowned.

In the brief moment they stopped to think about that could’ve happened, this bastard had gotten to them already.

It was now hard to attack this guy since he was amidst the clansmen now.

‘Anyway...He’s really hurt. Did something really happen?’

Al-Karueda stared at the mess of a man and then asked in curiosity.

“This mannerless bastard...What the hell happened?”

The Spirit Land had many unexplored places and unexpected events did indeed occur from time to time.

Since things had come to this, Al-Karueda asked in order to gain some intel.

The man gasped for breath with a spear in hand as he pointed behind Al-Karueda and spoke.

“Haa...It’s long to talk about! Kill that first!”

Roaaaaar!

As the man pointed behind him.

An extremely loud roar appeared not far behind Al-Karueda.

Al-Karueda then remembered the tiger as he cursed out.

“Fucking hell... It better fucking be a big deal! Kill that thing!”

Then.

Boom!

Boooooom!

The hunting team of the Hydros Clan and the Azure Ice beast collided.

.....

“Ugh...Damn. Fucking hell man!”

“Aaaah! Leader! You have to compensate us for this!”

The Hydros clansmen laid out onto the ground while gasping for breath.

Two beasts at the level of an Azure Ice Tiger in a single day.

Maybe three.

This was the limit that they could fight without overloading the Spirit Stone and hunting safely.

But they had fought twice in a row when their Spirit Stone was overloaded.

Thanks to this, every Spirit Stone they had were overloaded for about an entire day.

And some had to even use Stones of Immortalities.

‘Fuck. Anyways, where’s this guy from? He’s pretty good.’

Al-Karueda looked at the man who had caused all of this in curiosity.

Seeing the way he fought, he was at level 250.

But his control was quite good.

Good enough to not lose out to some of the top tier Master players.

Though he didn’t go that wild since his injuries were severe which also meant that he fought well for being so hurt which actually made Al-Karueda feel a bit better.

‘At least he has some conscience.’

Al-Karueda’s rage toned down a bit as he slowly walked towards the man who was checking his bodily status and asked.

“Hey bastard. Which clan... No. Let’s hear first. What’s the big



deal?”

Being less angry was one thing and responsibilities was another.

Al-Karueda asked since he had decided to receive the compensation from this time around from this guy's clan but then changed his question.

The thing this man had shouted about before bothered him.

In a situation where his clansmen statuses were like this, if this event could harm them then he would need to evacuate this place and fall back.

The man who was healing himself spoke out.

“You know where this place is right?”

One of the clansmen replied with annoyance.

“We know. Area 11. Azure Tundra, Northern Area.”

Northern area of the Azure Tundra.

One of the deepest areas of the Spirit Land.

Nobody had gotten further north from this place.

It wasn't like it was locked but rather that it was too dangerous.

The man nodded as he spoke.

“Thanks.”

“Huh? What the hell do you mea...”

Then.

Whooooosh!

A red cloud exploded out from around Hansoo.

The adventurers would've freaked out from the killing intent within this cloud.

But these guys were players, they could not feel such a thing.

While they were confused.

Kiiiririririk!

Crrunnnch!

“Uhh? Huhh?”

“Uaaak! What the hell is this!”

Even before they could freak out, the red clouds that had attached to their body started to devour them.

Like a swarm of locusts eating at rice plants in the swamps.

The players tried to retaliate but they were tired to death already and had expanded their Spirit Stones already.

They could not deal with Hansoo who had healed himself while they were fighting.

“You bastard! You’re going to go on the Redlist...”

With those last words from Al-Karueda.

Whoooooosh.

Only Hansoo remained behind in the vast land where the blizzard was storming around.

Kiiiiiiiing!

“Uaaaaak! You bas...”

Crunch!

Hansoo dealt with the ones reviving with the Stone of Immortality and was in glee while picking up the artifacts on the ground.

An A grade Venom type Spirit Stone that they had dropped.

And an A grade Ice type Spirit Stone the Azure Ice Tiger had dropped.

Hansoo picked up these two things, sensed that the other tigers weren't headed this way and relaxed.

‘Well I’m alive for now.’

As his safety had been secured, he naturally started to worry about the rest.

What would be going on in the War Fortress?

Were the Ains doing well?

How would Mudusella have ended things?

And a few other things.

‘..They’ll be doing well.’

Hansoo decided to just let things go as they would.

The Ains and the ones he had brought would do things well.

No, they had to do well.

And he couldn’t go back anyway.

If this place was indeed Area 11 the clansman had spoken about.

This place was extremely far away from the War Zone, the most northern land of the Spirit Land.

It’d take forever to return.

‘...Mudusella. Why did you really bring me here?’

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then stood up.

He didn’t know why she had brought him here but he knew where she was telling him to go.

‘If she sent me here then...There’ll be answers over there.’

Hansoo got up and then started to head towards the north.

The answers would be over there.

‘And... I guess I should get a spirit since I’m here. Not some fakes like these...But a real one.’

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the Spirit Stone in his hand.

# Chapter 266 : Spirit Land (3)

---

Whooooooooosh!

Hansoo was lost in thought while walking through the blizzard.

There were still some stinging pains because his body hadn't fully healed but this was the best condition he had been in after he had arrived in this zone.

‘...A long time has passed by now huh.’

Time flew quickly when he was fighting but managing things took much longer.

Calculating the things he had done so far, it had already been a year since he had come to the past.

He wasn't able to care much about this due to him constantly being in battles and fights but as these conflicts stopped, Hansoo's head started naturally get filled with various thoughts.

What would his friends be doing at the moment?

How fast would the invasion of the Abyss have accelerated?

‘Well. It's not that bad. Yet.’

Hansoo smiled as he thought of the people fighting at the War Fortress.

People who would've been fighting day by day in the past.

Or that would have all been massacred at the Yellow zone.

Or been killed off as Bug Players in the Green Zone.

These people had confidently come up to this Zone and took over the War Fortress.

His own role was clear but these people really fought for it and took it for themselves.

Their own rights.

'You're all doing very good.'

Hansoo walked through the tundra's snow and thought about the past.

He thought of his comrades who had been swept away when this world and the Abyss united.

They fought and resisted but they had eventually been massacred



one by one.

‘This time...Not this time.’

Hansoo gripped the Forked Lightning in this hand tightly as he thought of these horrid memories and continued to walk through the blizzard.

There were a lot of things left to do.

There was still the true goal of the Green Zone left to achieve.

‘Spirit.’

Hansoo muttered as he felt the Ain’s blessing on his chest.

.....

There was barely anyone who had gained the power of the Spirit.

And even Keldian only had a skill that allowed him to imitate the Spirit’s powers called Spirit Avatar, he had never been able to actually obtain it.

Since it was extremely hard to.

First, one must obtain the Ain’s blessing.

This was the first hurdle.

Before the Ains were unsealed from the Great Maze, it was impossible to obtain this blessing no matter how powerful or skilled one was.

Though the the Great Maze was opened up when Keldian, Eres and the others were going through this zone, most people didn't even know of such a function nor about the blessings of the Ains.

Since only a few people knew this even now.

Though the group with Eres had more than enough qualifications to receive the Ain's blessing, they were completely unaware of what was in the maze and just went up to the next Zone.

Along with most of the people who had luckily passed through the Green Zone.

This is why they were confused when they were forming up of the plan for the Green Zone with him.

<There was such a power in the Green Zone? Not the Spirit Stones?>

The World Tree could clearly be seen in the Red Zone.

The aboriginals of the Orange and Yellow Zones had given them the intel so it was easy to set up a plan for these areas.

But the Ains, the aboriginals of this zone, were a race they weren't able to meet while they were here as well as in the Abyss so though they knew about the Spirit Stones, they didn't know about the existence of the Spirits themselves.

But Hansoo, who had joined them later, knew about this.

Since Hansoo was close to and saw the person who had obtained the Ain's blessing and obtained the strength of the Spirits deep inside the Spirit Land.

And Hansoo made a resolution as he saw this.

That if he got to the Green Zone again, he would gain this power and allow everyone to have a chance at it.

In preparation for the Abyss.

The power of the Spirits was that powerful and was also useful.

‘Jang Oh. He should currently be busy.’

Hansoo thought of the man who had left him a deep impression as he continued to move.

<Keke. Well... This is a secret but it should be okay to tell you I guess. To obtain the Spirit's power, you first need the Ain's Blessing and then..,>

Hansoo thought of these words as he walked through the Tundra.

Jang Oh hadn't told him the exact locations either.

But he did give him instructions to obtain the strength of the Spirist.

To continue walking in the direction the blessing pointed towards.

The Ain's Blessing was like a house so it felt the emptiness inside and looked for an existence that filled it up.

Not a dead corpse like a Spirit Stone but a living creature.

He would just need to continue in this direction.

<You might be surprised when you get there. But I guess this is teasing you right? Hahahahaha! So why did you kill the Ains?! Because you killed them for the Protection Elixirs, you won't ever be able to obtain their blessings!>

Hansoo thought of Jang Oh laughing at him and shook his head.

But in all honesty, it wasn't really a tease back then.

There wasn't anybody who wasn't interested in the Spirit Stones and almost everyone had killed the Ains for the Protection Elixirs in order to go into the Spirit Land.

And he was part of this group.

But Jang Oh would never have known.

That he would come back to the past like this and begin everything anew.

‘Well...Anybody who would foresee something like this would be insane.’

Hansoo chuckled as he continued to walk.

Then.

Rooooaaaaaaaaarrrr!

A loud roar was heard in the distance.

Hansoo frowned as he looked towards the 100m tall giant object through the blizzard far off in the distance.

‘Northern Wall Beast...I’ve come close to the Thousand Rivers Mountain Range huh.’

If one headed a bit further north from here they would arrive at a giant mountain range that blocked humans off like a giant castle wall.

A humongous mountain range named the <Thousand Rivers Mountain Range>.

The level 290 Northern Wall Beast, which was much more powerful than an Azure Ice Beast, was something that came down from these mountains and roamed over these places.

A giant mountain range, that was so big to the point of blocking any and every invader and was thus called the <Northern Wall>.

The area wasn’t blocked off artificially like the Great Maze of the Ains in the past.

The reason why it couldn’t be crossed was very simple.

Since anyone would die before getting through it.

A tremendous DoT damage that normal Protection Elixirs wouldn’t be able to stop.

And beasts that were several times stronger inside.

An extremely tall mountain that was so tall and wide that it would be impossible to climb it given the duration of the Protection Elixirs.

Hansoo understood why Mudusella had sent him here to a degree.

‘I guess she means that I can climb above that thing after I obtain the Spirit.’

So getting the Spirit’s power was of utmost importance.

Roaaaaaar!

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

A 100m-tall yeti-looking beast.

‘End it quickly.’

Hansoo, with the Forked Lightning in his right hand and the Spirit Stone in his left hand, glared at the approaching Northern Wall Beast.

Then.

Whoooooosh.

The A grade Venom Spirit Stone exploded out with light and let out a green aura.

Well, the Spirit Stone itself was exploding.

Since Hansoo forcibly put it into overload.

A method which gave the user a tremendous amount of strength but made the Spirit Stone unusable after.

Booooooooooom!

Hansoo smashed the head of the Northern Wall Beast after jumping up.

Claaanggg!

Rooooaaaaaaarrr!

The Northern Wall Beast roared in rage as it survived the attack.

‘Yeah...This isn’t enough.’



Level 290 was no joke.

But unluckily for the Northern Wall Beast, it met Hansoo.

The two most recent skills Hansoo had obtained were both specialized for killing giant things.

Kiiiiiiiiiiiiing!

He had fully recovered his health and mana on the way here.

The Nurmaha Ring's ability which ate a tremendous amount of mana but allowed him to ignore Physical Defense was applied on the tip of Hansoo's spear again.

Then.

Boooooooooom!

Three dragons appeared from the spear and exploded towards the beast's head.

Boooooooooom!

The Northern Wall Beast's head was pierced through.

Slump.

Boom!

Hansoo landed on the corpse of the beast as he frowned at the strange sensation on the tips of his fingers.

‘...This feels weird. What is this.’

The Northern Wall Beasts were something he could not come anywhere close to in the past so this was the first time he had actually killed one.

But the strange sensation did exist.

Hansoo decided to ignore this sensation for now and started to head towards the direction the symbol was telling him to.

Then.

Whooooosh!

Whoosh!

From the distance.

Small flickering lights could be seen in the distance.

‘They chased me huh.’

Hansoo gripped his spear as he looked at the players who were communicating through the flickering lights.

The Spirit Land was still part of the players’s territories.

He won’t be able to dodge them forever.

It would be selfish to want to go through this entire area without any conflicts.

This was what he had expected.

But there was one thing that was out of his expectations.

‘...At least 500. And it’s increasing.’

With that many people, it meant that every hunting team of the 15 Great Clans in Area 11 had grouped up together.

And this wasn’t it, there were more to come.

Hunting teams that were specialized in killing the Azure Ice Tigers and the Northern Wall Beasts were gathering up to number almost a thousand.

‘You’re going to even stop hunting to chase me?’

They wouldn’t walk here for a stroll.

The high tier master players came in here using items that costed anywhere from hundreds to thousands of dollars an hour to come in here.

To obtain greater benefits.

And they wouldn’t invest this heavily because of one single collision.

‘...Did the Empire have a hand in this? These guys aren’t people who listen that well.’

They could just pretend to follow orders.

But these guys were very into this whole thing.

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then made a decision.

‘Go through them.’

He didn’t know what was going on outside the Spirit Land.

And he was almost at the location the Ain’s Blessings was telling

him to go to.

If they did form a plan to deal with him, it would be better to act before they grouped up completely.

Hansoo then started to madly dash towards them.

Boooooooooom!

Then.

Shimmer shimmer.

The flickering lights started to enclose their encircling towards Hansoo.

And the first one to arrive slashed down at Hansoo with his short sword.

A player that was covered in shining artifacts grinded his teeth as he slashed at Hansoo.

“You fucking bastard! The outside is in chaos because of you! Fucking...”

“You seem to have a lot of Stones of Immortalities?”

Boooooooooom!

Hansoo mumbled after instantly blowing apart the guy's head then frowned at the sword embedded on his side.

An injury which occurred as he tried to deal with him in a single blow.

These guys weren't easy.

But there wasn't much time.

So he had to kill each of them with a single strike.

Even whilst receiving some damages.

'Let's go.'

Boooooooooom!

There were plenty of people who would hand over the Spirit Stones to him.

Hansoo blew apart a A grade Ice type Spirit Stone in his left hand and started to charge towards the encircling.

# Chapter 267 : Underground (1)

---

The leader of the Hydros Clan, Karon, shook his head.

“What a mess...”

Karon was at loss for words as he saw the giant War Fortress that was surrounded in some white aura.

Quite a lot of things had changed from the collision that happened the day before.

The normal players who lived day to day with their daily earnings didn't know but the giant clans who used the Kingdom's and Empire's territories as their base of operations were busy assessing the situation.

And it was the same for the 15 great clans which were so large to the point of influencing the local powers.

But one thing was clear.

That things had twisted in a very complex manner.

‘The ones who appeared... Have no thoughts of coming out from the War Fortress.’

And they couldn't go in even if they wanted to.

Since the Golden Dragon Formation was protecting them.

The half-powdered walls of the War Fortress got reconstructed as the cracked ground mended itself.

The bright light surrounded the entire War Fortress and prevented anybody from entering.

And the players whose revival points were in that perimeter got forcibly moved to the village next door could only stand outside and stare at the high standing War Fortress from the distance.

The people from the Kingdoms who had tried to go through the barrier had received heavy damages from the attacks of the Ains and had retreated.

The only thing they could do was watch for now.

‘For this entire thing to have been caused by one mad guy. Unbelievable.’

There was a rumor.

That one bug player had caused all this.

He destroyed the Great Maze, pulled out the Ains, suppressed the ‘Red Dragon Wielder’ Arthus Krancheska, the captain of the Magic



Brigade, and ate up the War Fortress.

This was something that the entire Hydros Clan could not accomplish.

But for him to have done this all by himself.

‘It doesn’t seem like a fake rumor... We need to see how much of this is the truth.’

Though intel was being gathered at a rapid pace, it hadn’t been long since the event had occurred.

And because there were lots of other random information from all around, there was a huge lack of time to gather the important intel.

There was also a bigger issue as well.

‘What do I do with this...’

Karon touched the high quality mail in his hand and pressed down on his temples because of the headache.

Then.

Squeak.

The door of the building used as the clan's office opened up as a man walked in.

“Uh. Clan Leader. There's an interesting piece of information.”

“...What is it?”

Unlike the other clans, the Hydros Clan was created through close relationships and top players joining afterwards.

Most of the high ranked individuals came in with connections so they were all close to each other.

Karon asked back in confusion as he heard the story from the leader of the hunting teams.

“...So you're telling me that the one who caused the ruckus here is in the center of the Spirit Land which takes days to go to ? And he erased an entire hunting team of our clan?”

“Yeah. Apparently they found this out after getting pissed off when they got killed.”

“This is insane. Can he teleport or something as well then?”

The Spirit Land didn't have warp gates.

So the only method to travel was on foot.

As Karon was befuddled at the fact that somebody who should be here was all the way over at the most northern lands of the Spirit Land.

The guy shrugged his shoulders as he spoke.

“The rumor has already been spread all around. Those guys were so pissed that they went around spreading it.”

“Sigh... Fucking hell. The northernmost area? Ugh...”

As Karon tightly clenched his head like it was about to explode, the man asked in confusion.

“Don’t we just need to buy time? What’s to gain from killing him?”

According to the rumors, he was an extremely powerful individual.

And killing one person didn’t give much profit.

It was better to focus on the treasure chest in front of their eyes.

‘If we could just get through that...’

The War Fortress which had buckled up like a turtle.

But everybody knew how sweet the meat inside this thick shell would be.

As the leader gulped his saliva at the War Fortress in the distance.

Karon shook his head as he handed over the message in his hand.

“Just read it and see what’s on it.”

“This...”

As he read the message from Karon.

His expression turned grim as well.

.....

“So... They were ordered to hunt me down no matter what?”

Crunch.

As Hansoo asked the man while grabbing him by the throat, the player spat as he replied.

“Ugh...Then do you think we’d be chasing you like this otherwise? You’re dead now. Using hacks unfairly like this.”

If the man who he was choking was a normal civilian of this world he might’ve been trembling in fear of death but sadly he was a player.

The player looked at Hansoo in annoyance while grinding his teeth.

‘Fucking hell. What a waste of time.’

It didn’t annoy him because this guy was strong.

It wasn’t like they died and there was a limit to how much one could take.

He just didn’t like the situation itself.

The Empire did promise them rewards.

But it wasn’t asking for a favor but rather giving them a command.

<If you don't do things properly then don't even think about setting foot in the territories of the Kingdoms and the Empires.>

How would they move around in a world like this without Warp Gates and without the support of those powers?

And seeing their reaction, it seemed like they were going to forcefully send them into the Spirit Land if they didn't comply.

'Fucking hell. How dare a fucking NPC do this. They tried so hard to please us up until now.'

During the ages when the Kingdoms and the Empires fought, the NPCs tried very hard to drag the players and the 15 Great Clans.

But they had all united now.

The 15 clans could clearly feel that they were outsiders now.

A tremendous difference in strength.

They could still visualize Cykrus smashing apart the earth with his giant greatsword.

Of course they could fight against these NPCs since they didn't die.

But what would be left for them?

There won't be any fun in playing in a world filled with ruins if they won and losing would cause an even bigger problem.

‘Fucking bastards. They should just do it themselves.’

But everyone already knew that the people from the Kingdoms and the Empires couldn't set foot in the Spirit Land.

Though it was shitty, the only method they had was to kill this guy.

“Hmm.”

Hansoo thought about the situation for a bit and then started to chuckle.

Crunch.

Whoosh!

Hansoo broke the neck and then looked around as the player started to turn into golden light.

Holes and broken ice.

And artifacts everywhere.

Things the players dropped as they got killed while chasing him around.

‘It’s already been 3 days since they started chasing me huh.’

3 days.

This was the time he had been looking for the traces of the blessing in the Spirit Land while smashing these things apart.

Following the way the symbol in his chest was telling him to go, all the way up to right below the mountain range.

He could see the raging blizzard above the mountain which rose up almost vertically.

This was not something that he could withstand with just blessings.

Since Mudusella wouldn’t ask something impossible, he needed to find a way to go in but it was nowhere to be seen.

Which meant that there was only one possibility left.

‘Underground.’



Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the hard, frozen ground below his feet.

Though snow and ice were covering it, nobody really knew how deep it would go.

‘...I’ll have to use the Nine Dragons Spear.’

As Hansoo gripped his spear.

Dragons started to slowly appear and surround his body.

All the way up to seven.

Hansoo tapped on the ground but there was no telling what was below this.

Which meant that seven dragons might or might not work.

But he only got out seven and pointed straight down.

Since he might have to fight against the players even after smashing his way down in the worst case scenario.

In a situation like this where people were chasing him down from all areas, using a skill like the Nine Dragons Spear which had a

huge aftereffect was something risky.

In some ways, it might be better to regroup back at the War Fortress and slowly go through with the Ains instead of smashing his way down.

But Hansoo laughed coldly and prepared to attack below.

‘You feel impatient huh?’

The Kingdoms and the Empires were trying way too hard just to recover some pride or for revenge.

Which meant one thing.

That the issue wasn’t him, but rather the one who had sent him here and his current location he was at.

And Hansoo was very happy to see this.

‘Let’s see what you have hidden here.’

“Hey! Kill that guy!”

“Fucking bastard!”

Hansoo glanced between the tall vertical mountain covered in

layers of snow and the players charging at him from the distance, smiled in a cold manner and then smashed downwards with his spear.

With the black orb created from seven dragons.

Boooooooooom!

Though the Tundra was extremely hard, it couldn't withstand the Nine Dragons Spear.

A tremendous noise occurred as the floor below Hansoo started to break apart.

Smashing apart the ice and melting the snow.

And into the darkness below.

Whooosh!

Hansoo, who had started to fall into the extremely deep hole slowly, used his leftover mana to attack upwards and accelerate his descent.

To go down even faster.

And the players accelerated further as they saw this.

“This bastard! Digging his own grave! You just wait right there!”

“You’re fucked!”

The bloodied body of 3 days of chase.

The depleted mana from the big skill.

Hansoo shrugged at the players charging at him.

“You guys will be able to use it as well if you’re lucky.”

“Huh?”

As one of the players stopped at his words right before they jumped down into the darkness.

Rummmbleeee!

All the snow that was layered on top of the mountain next to him started to fall down with a tremendous noise.

Creating a gigantic avalanche in the process.

“Holy shit!”

“Uaaaa! Run away!”

The players screamed at the sudden avalanche that had occurred.

.....

Oooooong.

‘...What a rat.’

Sounds of cracking came out from the hands of Tiamet, who was sitting eyes closed and holding the stake above the White Dragon Arena.

Though the Godly Weapon couldn’t break, it was more than enough to show how distressed Tiamet was.

“He’s really annoying huh. Just like you said.”

“ ... ”

“Jang Oh. Spit it out if you have something to say. Don’t stay silent.”

The dark shadowy man gazed back at Tiamet expressionlessly.

## Chapter 268 : Underground (2)

---

Tiamet looked back at Jang Oh expressionlessly.

“I understand that you didn’t forget the fact that we’re taking care of you outsiders. Well, shall we call what we have a contract, like how you guys call it?”

Jang Oh made a bitter expression at the condescending words of Tiamet.

‘I know. That’s why you treat us this way.’

Horrible living conditions.

This special area that was created near the extravagant capital always told them.

That they should be thankful to at least be treated this way before going up.

His friend, Clementine, tried very hard for their survival.

But was the life given to them satisfactory? That was a different story.

Reality was harsh.

Especially in this damned world created by ‘God’.

Tiamet spoke towards Jang Oh.

“We’ve been nice to you so far. We’ve protected you from the players and kept you alive but... I don’t like to keep things that are undeeded.”

He and the natives of the Kingdoms and the Empire had a hard time going into the Spirit Land.

Since for them the Ain’s Blessing was an impossibility and the Protection Elixirs were not working.

This is why he had kept these guys alive.

These parasites that passed by his world momentarily.

But if they didn’t do their job, there was no need to keep them.

“Don’t worry. I’ll solve this problem.”

Tiamet laughed towards Jang Oh who surrounded himself in bits of shadows as if he was about to move out.

“Take them all. Everybody who’s just sitting around and eating.”

Jang Oh's expression froze.

“Don't you trust me? I'm more than enough.”

These weren't empty words.

He had been doing well by himself.

And though he heard that the new guy was strong, he had confidence in winning.

Since he had seen the other's skills over the hole.

Then.

Whooooosh!

“Kuhuk...”

Jang Oh groaned at the powerful hand grabbing onto his throat.

And Tiamet, the owner of this hand, slowly tightened his grip as he spoke with a cold expression.

“I'm telling you to do it properly you fucking scrub. Don't you



understand? It seems you don't want to take them because it's dangerous but... Know this. If you fail then you guys don't have any value left. If you still have a brain then you should know what is better, all of you dying versus just a few."

"Ugh..."

"Stop him no matter what. From going over the mountain range. Don't let a single person cross it."

Smash!

'Mudusella. Things won't go the way you want.'

Tiamet mumbled after he threw Jang Oh on the ground.

.....

Rummmmmble.

Hansoo continued to drop as he got hit by the avalanche that fell from above.

At that moment.

He heard something from below.

The sound of the black marble created from the Nine Dragons Spear smashing against something.

It had succeeded in melting the snow but something was blocking the energy.

Hansoo focused his sight as he fell.

Soon.

Through the mist that had been created from the ice and snow melting, he could see some blackish things.

A steel wall that had been half destroyed by the Nine Dragons Spear.

No, it shouldn't be steel.

Steel wouldn't be able to withstand the Nine Dragons Spear.

Some sort of alloy.

Despite it being half smashed apart, he could still see faint traces of light running through it.

And Hansoo could somewhat guess what this was.

‘This looks similar to the things from the Golden Dragon Formation...Why is this here. Hmm...’

The wall of the Azure Dragon’s Seat that was surrounded from the mana node’s energy.

The feeling of the metal and the energy that was emitted from it were similar to it.

‘Jang Oh told me he went through the entrance. Hmm.’

Hansoo thought of the words of Jang Oh from the past but merely shook his head and then raised his spear.

And used his falling momentum to smash into the wall.

Boooooooooooooom!

‘Not bad?’

Despite it being half destroyed already, the wall did a good job of withstanding Hansoo’s attack.

The issue wasn’t the material but rather the energy flowing through it.

The wall that was about a meter thick started to heal itself with

the energy flowing through it.

Then.

“Ahhhh!”

“You bastard! This isn’t anywhere close enough to kill us!”

The voices of the players from above could be heard.

This was within expectations.

Though they got pushed away from the avalanche, this wasn’t enough to kill them.

It was just to push them away and buy some time.

‘Hmph. It’ll be annoying if you chase.’

Hansoo looked at the hole that was too small for him to go through and nodded.

Then his mana was sucked into the Nurmaha’s ring.

Kiiing!

Hansoo saw the shining ring on his finger and then smashed the ring into the alloy wall.

Boooom!

The wall still stood but there was a difference this time.

Whooosh!

The Power Nullification of the ring erased about a two-meters-radius's worth of energy from the wall.

This wouldn't last long since the wave of energy was flowing back into this area.

But this was enough.

Hansoo smashed his spear down onto the wall again.

Crunch!

Without the protection of the mysterious energy, the wall could not withstand Hansoo's attack from just the toughness of the alloy.

A hole about Hansoo's size was created and Hansoo jumped through the wall.

“Huh? Hey you bastard! You’re running?”

“Hold him down!”

Boom!

Booom!

The players ran towards the hole Hansoo disappeared through.

But it was too late.

Shhhshshshh!

“Uh!? What the. This thing is shrinking!”

The Power Nullification had long worn out because of the waves of energy that rushed back in.

The hole in the alloy wall that was barely enough for Hansoo to get through was already getting smaller.

“Fucking hell!”

“Damn!”

Boom!

Boooooom!

The players attacked the shrinking hole in panic but it was useless.

The energy flowing through the wall was too powerful for them to break through.

“What in the...”

“What the hell is hidden here? Jesus...”

Some people sat down and gave up but some still held on.

“Get back up and try looking around! There might be an entrance somewhere! Even a castle has doors!”

Some of the players heard this and nodded.

And then started to slowly use their skills to search around.

Chiiiiiiiiik.

Despite the tremendous amount of ice, which had accumulated and condensed over tens of thousands of years, it could not

withstand the combined heat from the skills of thousands of players.

And as they started their search, a question surfaced into their heads.

‘What is this?’

The players made confused expressions.

The game, Exodus, was set in medieval times.

Building up walls with stones and the royalty fighting with swords and spears.

Though these stones and weapons were far beyond normal ones because of magic but the level of science was indeed very low.

An alloy like this, which should only exist in some Sci-Fi movies, should not be present here.

‘Is this for some major update...Or something?’

The players came up with the most befitting answer.

Why else would something like this exist below layers of ice thousands of kilometers away from civilization?



At this moment the eyes of the players changed.

Curiosity started to replace the rage inside them.

And the speed of them melting the ice sped up from this.

At that moment.

“Uh?”

One of the players exclaimed out loud while he was melting the ice and proceeding in a twisted path.

Though it was very muted, it could not stay undetected from the focused perceptions of the other players.

“Did you find something?”

“Entrance? Did you find the entrance?”

Everybody started to rush towards where the voice came from.

But then the one who made the noise shook his head.

“No...It’s not the entrance but...”

The eyes of the players naturally looked towards where the man was looking at.

There wasn't an entrance there but a strange letter.

[A...]

‘What the hell is this now...’

It was so large that despite the player having melted a 30m radius, only a single letter could be seen.

And the players who had gotten curious decided what to do.

“Shall we... Try digging it out carefully?”

“Some should provide support with skills so things don't fall on our heads and the others should melt it!”

Everyone nodded as they spread out.

Chiiiiiiik.

Chiik.

They dug around it like an ant's nest in fear of things collapsing but in order to excavate everything, they would need to clear an area several times larger than a football field.

So everyone carefully enlarged the area while making sure things didn't fall.

They were still master level players and were the most powerful out of those.

The ice melted away very quickly and soon an underground cave was created.

Of a size that could allow thousands of people to live.

And then they read what the letters said.

[ASTRO-17]

'...What is this.'

An english word that symbolized space.

Though they knew what it meant, it didn't belong here.

The game's main concept was unveiling the unknown while traveling through the lands, something like this didn't fit the game

at all.

.....

Whooooosh!

The moment Hansoo penetrated through the wall.

He thought that a tunnel or a small space would appear after going through the 1m thick wall.

But things were completely out of his expectations.

“...Amazing.”

Whoosh!

Hansoo mumbled as he fell towards the ground far below.

A cylindrical space that was several kilometers wide and tall.

And Hansoo was shocked as he saw the giant world that spread out below his feet inside this space.

# Chapter 269 : Underground (3)

---

“Fucking hell. There’s nothing to see.”

The players started to leave one by one after a long period of curiously staring at the mysterious letters.

This damned thing didn’t have an entrance anywhere.

Even if it did, they would have to melt all the ice surrounding this thing at this rate.

Which was not possible.

“Let’s go up!”

“Ugh. What a waste of time.”

The players complained but started to climb up one by one with weights lifted off their minds.

They still gained something from this.

‘Even if the guys from the Empire are crazy they wouldn’t fault us when we have come this far.’

If they really wanted to go through it then they probably could by

gathering every player here including the ones above.

But why did they need to?

This was more than enough.

They had even given up their hunts to come all the way north to find this guy, what can they do about him escaping into some mysterious piece of metal?

‘There. Nothing we can do.’

As they came up from the hole, they could see countless others having climbed out from the snow and were checking their gear.

And one of the players who came out from the hole shouted towards them.

“Yo! Let’s go! It’s a dud.”

But nobody moved.

‘What? Do they not trust me?’

Well, his words did lack some explanation.

But as the player was about to shout again.

One of his clansmen spoke with a frown on his face.

“...We can’t man.”

“Huh? Why?”

The clansman showed the player the message that had come.

Though there were a lot of words in it, the summary was simple.

<By the orders of the Empire, we are sending the 4th Brigade.  
Work well.>

And the player frowned as he saw the message.

‘Damned Empire...Stressing me even inside the game. What the hell is the 4th Brigade anyway.’

According to what he knew, there was only 3 Brigades in the Empire.

The player shouted while frowning at the news of the Brigade he had never heard of.

“What about it! If they just started then it’ll take forever for them to get here. How long are we supposed to wait!”

These players had taken two days despite running at full speed to get here.

Of course it would take longer if one calculated the time it took to kill beasts on the way.

Then.

Whooosh.

“Don’t worry. We’re here already.”

“...Huh?”

His vision darkened for a second and then the shadow below his feet stood up.

‘What the...’

The player was shocked at the sight of his own shadow getting up and moving around.

Then.

The shadow turned into a man.



‘Hmm...’

A powerful aura that radiated from his entire body.

He didn’t know what the 4th Brigade was but this was more than enough to tell him that they weren’t simple.

And there was another problem.

‘What is that.’

A small shield in the man’s right hand.

As the players made fearful expressions at the shield that let out a suspicious but powerful aura.

The man who had used the spirit and his own skills to travel thousands of kilometers at a tremendous speed, Jang Oh, spoke.

“How’s the situation?”

A few of the players were irritated at the arrogant NPC but it was still a NPC from the Empire.

They explained the situation.

Which made Jang Oh shocked.

‘...There’s energy flowing? Wasn’t it a ruin?’

The place he obtained the Spirit wasn’t as strong as this.

Since they barely maintained their existence deep inside the ice or in the middle of a swamp somewhere.

‘I guess it’s a bit different’

But this didn’t matter.

Since all he needed to do was accomplish his objective.

‘This is the end of jumping around.’

Jang oh muttered to himself as he jumped into the hole Hansoo had made.

With the shield raised.

.....

Whooosh!

Hansoo looked around as he fell.

A vast space.

A lake and a forest.

The lake was so clear and blue that it seemed like fishes would jump up at any moment and the green color of the forest made it look extremely healthy.

And the best part was the sky he was falling through.

Ooooong.

A giant object was floating in the air and lighting up this entire space.

Bright but warm.

Like...

‘It’s like a sun. A miniature sun?’

It seemed like it contained a tremendous amount of energy but seeing it was radiating very soft light he could only think of the sun.

And something else came into his eyes as he fell more.

If everything he had seen so far was beauty of nature then this was something quite opposite.

Cylindrical buildings that rose high into the sky.

Oooong.

Hansoo used a bit of mana to intensify his vision.

He then saw the identity of these buildings.

Starting at the outer parts, and at the inside through the windows.

And a conclusion quickly came.

‘It’s a residential building.’

Though there were a lot of strange objects, there were basic living conditions set such as tables, seats, beds and others.

It was a building created for residents.

And looking at this giant cylinder, a thought came up in Hansoo’s head.

‘Colony.’

A colony created for survival which one could see in Sci-Fi movies.

Tatatatak.

Hansoo landed onto the trees in an area which seemed to have been created as a orchard.

‘...Why is such a thing below the Northern Tundra?’

Hansoo made a confused expression.

Even Jang Oh, who had gained the powers of the Spirit, didn’t tell him about this.

‘Did he not tell me...Or was it different from this.’

He didn’t know when and why this was created but he knew one thing for clear.

That there were Spirits here.

Shrrrng.

Hansoo touched the branches of the tree next to him.

Then a joyous and familiar aura seeped out.

An aura full of life and vigor unlike the destructive auras of the Spirit Stones.

‘Aura of the Tree Spirit.’

A type of Spirit Stone which was sold much cheaper than ice or fire types because of its lack of usage in battles.

But it was doing its job perfectly here.

Maintaining the best state for the trees that were living here.

‘The Lake... And the Land as well.’

Hansoo started to walk as he sensed the nearby auras of the lake and the land below his feet.

He didn’t have time to waste.

There was one objective he had right now.

Getting the Spirit and going across the mountain.

And for this, he had to move.

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then picked a direction.

‘To the Power Room.’

Though this place was being managed by a Spirit, the Spirit did not live here.

To be exact, the energy of the spirit was keeping every corner of this place alive.

This place which was isolated from light, air and water from the outside.

‘And also check on the way. See whether there are living creatures here...’

It was made for living creatures.

It was a low probability but there might be traces of living things.

There might even be somebody who had the answer to the question of what Mudusella wanted him to bring.

Tatatatak!

Hansoo started to head towards the central area with the buildings while following the aura of the Spirits below his feet.

Then.

Shhshshshhhh.

The surrounding trees that were being protected by the Spirit started to tremble.

As if they were communicating.

.....

Tatatatatak.

After a bit, he got to a giant structure after passing through many others.

‘It’s here huh.’

A giant structure of which the entire outside was reinforced by a metal spirit.

He could feel a tremendous amount of energy and vigor from inside it.



‘There must be something in here.’

Hansoo nodded.

Even if something was inside there, it didn’t matter.

Since he just needed to get the Spirit’s power and go across the mountain.

Then.

Rummblee.

A rumbling noise was heard from where he had come in from.

And Hansoo nodded at this sound.

‘He came fast.’

Though Tiamet couldn’t come, there was no way he would just sit and watch.

And Clementine’s forces wouldn’t sit around either.

Hansoo thought of the man who had come to meet him.

‘...I didn’t want to meet you like this but I guess I’ll have to turn a blind eye this time around right?’

His previous mentor.

At the same time his protector.

And his friend.

Hansoo composed himself as he saw Jang Oh who was creating a hole through the wall he had come through far off in the distance.

While gripping the Forked Lightning tightly.

.....

“Damn. Are you seeing this right now?”

“What is it?”

“It’s live right now. Is it like the hint for the next big update? Damn, I’m jealous of these guys.”

A rumor filled with curiosity circulated between the players outside the War Fortress.

Usually a live broadcast would only be used in battles as a tactical

usage but that wasn't the case this time.

The players have envious expressions as they saw the live broadcasts of the players who were looking at this entire thing all the way up at the Northern Wall.

They were jealous because the rewards the first party that succeeded after the 5th update came and the Maze had opened were quite substantial.

Rummmblee!

“Woah....What the. Is that a NPC? Jesus christ.”

“What is that?”

Rumble!

The people started to mumble in shock from the NPC who was smashing a hole into the alloy wall with a tiny shield in his hand.

Usually they would be attracted at the sight of a powerful NPC but their eyes turned to something else.

Not the NPC but rather the alloy wall he was creating a hole in.

Specifically the things that would be inside.

Then.

Chiiijijik!

The moment the NPC male created a hole with this powerful attacks.

The players who were watching cheered.

“Woah! Is he going in!?”

“Damn...Shall I go over there as well?’

Due to the yells of the nearby players, the others who had been encircling the War Fortress started to turn on the broadcast one by one.

Soon.

The entire surroundings of the War Fortress were filled with tiny floating screens.

# Chapter 270 : Underground (4)

---

In the past.

He had gone through the Green Road and had barely gone up but immediately fell into a lethal situation.

Though he had gotten stronger in the Yellow Zone up until then, such a fucked up Zone like the Green Zone was a first.

<What the fuck! How are we supposed to survive here! Are they trying to kill us all!>

They could probably survive if they didn't get caught but the eyes of the Bug Killers were too sharp for them to successfully hide when there was nobody to teach them or help them.

And the information about the location of the exit for the Arancar zone which he had logged into made him fall into a deeper despair.

<What the fuck...The Capital of the Empire!>

But there was no need to worry that far.

Since surviving day by day was a challenge in itself.

But right before he was about to get killed off by the Bug Players.

A man appeared before his eyes.

<Hahaha! What a poor bastard!>

The first impression wasn't that great but to him, who only had despair, a ray of hope had appeared.

Of course there were still issues.

.....

Rumblee!

The players were in shock from the scene of the man in front of them who was breaking apart an entrance.

The alloy wall which had stood strong despite the combined attacks of all of them was slowly being broken apart.

From that man and the flat object in his hands.

‘...4th Brigade, I guess they aren't a pushover. What is that anyway?’

As the flat object in the man's hand collided against the alloy wall.

The energy field surrounding the alloy wall was dispersed.

This was the reason why the man had been able to smash apart the alloy wall all by himself.

‘Damn. Is there a way to...’

A small wisp of greed appeared inside the player’s minds but they suppressed it.

Since attacking somebody from the Empire was a crazy act in itself and there was something else that made them more curious.

What would be behind the alloy wall?

Kiiiiing!

But right before the entrance was broken apart.

The man who had been attacking the wall, Jang Oh, suddenly stopped.

“Huh?

“Hey, why did you stop!?”

While the players were questioning his actions.

“Hmm...”

Jang Oh looked around at the players and then let out a wave of darkness.

Nothing tremendously lethal but it was still powerful enough to severely damage them.

And everybody dodged while cursing in shock.

“What the fuck?”

“What the hell man! Why!?”

As the players backed up.

‘Heup.’

Jang Oh gathered up all the strength in his body and smashed the wall under his feet.

Boooooom!

The alloy wall that had been badly damaged gave up as a hole appeared.



Jang Oh left behind the players and jumped down.

Whoosh!

“What the hell man!”

“Why are you going alone!”

The players who had backed up all charged towards the hole.

Because they were going crazy from curiosity by this point.

But at that point.

“Back off you bastards.”

Boooom!

The man let out a tremendous amount of darkness and prevented the players from coming in.

And everybody freaked out at this attack and ran away again.

Soon the small hole had closed up again due to the alloy wall's regeneration.

“Ahhhhh! Fucking bastard!”

“How dare a mere NPC do this!”

Everybody started to vent their anger by cursing off Jang Oh who had left them behind.

They had been wary of going in so far but now the story had changed.

An extremely mysterious space that may be the beginning of a giant quest.

And the beautiful world that they saw for a moment before the hole had closed up.

Bright lights, a clear lake and lush forests.

This was not something that should exist hundred of meters below the ice in the northernmost tundra.

“What the hell! Why did they tell us to stay then!? Didn’t they need us?”

“And he said he was the 4th brigade! Why did he come alone!?”

If he was going to go in alone then why did the Empire act like this?

And why did they send them a message to stay here?

‘Fucking hell...’

As everybody was grinding their teeth in rage.

One of the players shouted.

“Let’s go in everybody!”

There was no reason for them to not.

Though they couldn’t break through because they lacked numbers before, they had more than enough now.

They just needed to cooperate to isolate the mana flowing through the alloy wall and penetrate through it.

Everybody acquiesced at these words.

“Sure!”

“Yeah! Do you even know how many are watching this!? We need to show them what’s inside!”

The man who had shouted smiled contently.

‘I’m going to see it with my own eyes. And... Kill those guys if we get the chance.’

The man smiled.

Those who were monsters.

People who someone like him could not even dream of handling.

But seeing the situation now, they would probably fight each other inside.

At least one side will get turned into a mess.

Which gave them an opportunity.

‘This is going to be a jackpot. Hehehe.’

The mysterious shield the man had.

And the glittering artifacts the man who they had been chasing had around his body.

‘This is basically a present box.’

Boooobobooooom!

The players started to break apart the wall while thinking about the scenery inside and the two people who would be fighting to the death.

.....

Rummbble!

As a man fell down from the hole.

Whooosh!

The man’s body got surrounded by shadows and then appeared right before Hansoo.

Crossing across hundreds of meters in an instant.

And Hansoo frowned at this.

‘Hmm.’

It seemed like he used a skill but because it had mixed with the shadows around Jang Oh’s body, it was hard to tell.

Hansoo muttered to himself as he looked at Jang Oh who had perfectly integrated his skills and the shadow together.

‘A man with many secrets.’

Though they were quite close in the past, Jang Oh was extremely protective of the people in his village and did not show anybody how he worked.

Since he always worked solo.

And Jang Oh was frowning as he appeared before Hansoo.

But it wasn't from the rage he had against Hansoo.

<.....>

Jang Oh frowned at the constant trembles of the soul fragment in his head and then shouted in his mind. <Shut up for a moment. I'll handle it>. Though they, were ones with the soul fragments, were made to forcibly listen to the orders of the soul, they weren't under control from the Lord symbol from Clementine's clan.

Since the powers of a clan didn't work through dimensions.

They all had their own thoughts and motivations. <.....>

Jang Oh released his frown as the fragment loosened up and smiled towards Hansoo.

With an expression full of respect.

And not only his expression.

Jang Oh spoke towards Hansoo.

“Amazing. You’re the second person I’ve seen in my life who is this amazing.”

The first was Clementine.

He himself had rampaged through the lower areas.

But the moment he saw Clementine he understood that the world was large and there was a lot of monstrous people.

Jang Oh decided to follow Clementine due to Clementine’s endless potential in leadership and how she took extreme care of her own people.

Since it felt like there would be no more dangers if he followed Clementine.

‘I never thought there would be somebody else besides Clementine who could shock me.’

Jang Oh whistled.

Actually, this guy was beyond Clementine.

According to what he heard, this guy had saved the World Tree, dealt with the Gragos of the Orange Zone and even killed off all the God-like higher races of the Yellow Zone.

In a world like this where it was hard to even keep one’s own life, this man had saved an uncountable amount of people.

His achievements made him look like a hero who might appear in legends.

And deserving of his reputation, he had pushed out the damned players and revived the Ains even in this Green Zone.

‘How worthy of respect. You... Are doing something that I’ve wanted to do so much but could not.’

His other comrades were telling him to get revenge for Metiron and kill the man in front of him but his thoughts were different.

Kiiiiing.



Jang Oh spoke towards Hansoo in front of him.

“You’ve done well so far but stop here.”

This guy couldn’t even beat him, much less Tiamet.

Jang Oh continued to speak.

“This was good enough. The thing you’re doing... Is enraging Tiamet. Stop here and join us instead.”

This guy’s skill would help him and Clementine tremendously.

Even if this guy wasn’t needed, he liked Hansoo a lot for a strange reason and really wished to recruit him.

So he had told him about Tiamet.

To make him give up on his own.

And to make him join his side.

‘You’ve seen it as well. That power.’

He didn’t know what was beyond that mountain range.

But one thing was clear.

That the thing this guy was doing here was something Tiamet deeply cared about and wanted to prevent.

If he succeeded then Tiamet would stand up from his seat with a towering rage.

Forsaking everything else.

‘Just give up. We’re just... People who are passing by. But if you continue to resist...’

Jang Oh thought of his comrades who were caught like hostages and then clenched his hold on the blackish shield.

.....

“We got through!”

Boooooom!

The players shouted in glee from the hole in the wall.

But this glee only lasted for a moment.

People started to shout at the hole which had already started to

shrink.

“Hey! Not all of us can go in! We have to keep this up!”

A few of the people here would have to stay and keep attacking it to prevent it closing back up again.

A few of the people laughed.

“Well, there’s no reason for all of us to go in right?”

In the distance.

Inside the cylindrical world.

There was a very unique looking area inside this place.

A factory-like structure which was surrounded by giant walls.

‘Let’s see what’s there first.’

Though normal people were afraid of mystery, they weren't.

‘We’re immortal.’

The mysterious only roused up their curiosity further.

“Hahahaha! Let’s go!”

“Everybody, can you see! Continue to tune in since we haven’t started fighting yet!”

The players smiled at the giant structures from above and then started to fall one by one.

Towards the ground.

# Chapter 271 : Berserk (1)

---

The day when they had first met.

The man who laughed at him with a funny mask.

Hansoo spat back at the man.

<Go ahead and fuck off if you're just going to make fun of us.>

Though he was weak, he was still an adventurer of the Otherworld.

The viciousness he had grown in order to survive did not lose out to anybody else's.

And the man laughed at Hansoo as if he was cute and then spoke.

<I'm just saying this because you look so damn poor... Shall I help you?>

Hansoo chuckled.

He knew that this man was strong.

But that was it.

The ones who were chasing him were immortal.

The <Ant Eater> clan was not something a small group of adventurers could handle.

<Don't bother bluffing around and just fuck off>>

At that moment.

<Hahahaha! How far can this bastard run! You're now...>

The bug killers stopped as they saw the man with the strange mask.

<Fucking hell...>

As Hansoo grinded his teeth at the bug killers who had caught up, the man in front of Hansoo chuckled as he spoke towards the bug killers.

<I'll deal with this guy so just leave. I'll talk to the guys above so don't worry."

Like an order.

'Is he insane?'

Did that dumb mask boost his confidence or something?

But as Hansoo made a dumbfounded expression.

A shocking thing happened.

<Mmm...Understood.>

<For you to have come here personally... We'll send a message to the vice leader for you.>

The people who had been chasing Hansoo backed off peacefully.

And Hansoo was lost for words.

<How is it? Fun right?>

The man took off the mask on his face and smiled.

This was the first time Hansoo had seen Jang Oh's face.

.....

As Hansoo thought back to the past.

Jang Oh spoke:.

“This is the final time I’m saying this. Stop all this and just follow me. And... Make everyone under you surrender. Then they’ll at least be able to keep their lives.”

It wasn’t too late to stop yet.

Though Tiamet treated the adventurers like crap, he didn’t try to pull them out by their roots.

He merely kept them below him and controlled them.

Hansoo replied expressionlessly.

“What about the Ains?”

Jang Oh shrugged at Hansoo’s words.

“...Nothing we can do about them.”

The adventurers would just leave this place.

But the Ains and Mudusella wouldn’t stop trying to get across that mountain range.

And this was something Tiamet was dreadfully afraid of.



The Empire and the Kingdoms wouldn't sit by and watch.

And even now, there were preparations going on in the Empire.

'Destruction Cannon.'

Jang Oh muttered to himself as he thought of the hidden weapon underground back in the Empire's capital.

It had been 800 years since the Ains had been trapped.

They, who had sealed the Ains in fear, always thought of the worst case scenario.

What would happen when the Ain's seals were released?

What would they try to do once they got released?

And what would happen to the Empire and the Kingdoms because of the Ains.

The natives had constantly worried and prepared about this for the past 800 years and they had even prepared for a situation where the Ains got to the Spirit Land, a place themselves couldn't enter with ease.

The Ains would try to cross the mountain range but would

eventually all get killed before they got there.

Since there was a huge difference between those who had been preparing for 800 years and those who had been in stasis.

“Just join us.”

Hansoo chuckled at Jang Oh’s words.

If he took this offer, he would be safe temporarily.

He would also be able to reduce the deaths by a large amount.

But that meant that their lives will always be under the control of these guys.

The reason why the Empire and the Kingdoms could not move out with ease wasn’t because of the War Fortress.

It was because of the Ains who were slowly gaining back their strength.

And for Hansoo to betray the Ains, who will become his strongest allies, and kill them all?

At that point the balance of power will be broken and there would be nothing they could do when Tiamet decides to kill them

all off.

And even so, it was not something he could accept when he needed to receive the Spirit's powers.

‘Well, at least I got to confirm two things.’

First, Tiamet was very wary of the Ains and the adventurers who could become variables.

Second, that the variable was across that mountain.

‘Let's see what's above it then.’

Hansoo looked at Jang Oh after organizing his thoughts.

Since their opinions and situations varied, they could not avoid a collision.

And he wasn't looking to avoid it anyway.

It was probably the same for Jang Oh as well.

‘Because of our past... I'll give you an offer as well.’

As Jang Oh gave him a final offer because he pitied Hansoo and the others, this was the final thing Hansoo could do for Jang Oh.

Hansoo steeled himself in order to not show his emotions and then spoke towards Jang Oh in a resolute voice.

Wanting him to accept.

Though he wouldn't.

“Shall I make a better offer?”

“...What is it?”

Hansoo clenched his spear and spoke.

“Quietly hide until this all ends. Don't interfere. Then after everything ends we will treat you guys well.”

Keldian had told Hansoo to kill everybody who interferes.

Along with the Dark Lord of this zone, Jang Oh.

But there was something Keldian didn't know.

He didn't know how the people below Jang Oh were living their lives.

‘They haven’t done any wrong.’

Jang Oh had decided to shoulder all their sins.

But the moment Jang Oh heard Hansoo’s words, his expression froze.

He could not do such a thing.

This other guy was probably saying this because he thought that he would win in the end.

But his thoughts were different after a long period of watching Tiamet’s strength.

Tiamet would win and this guy would lose.

So before this guy took all of humanity into oblivion, he needed to kill him.

‘You should’ve stopped here.’

Then.

Booooooooooom!

Shadows exploded out from Jang Oh’s body and surrounded him.

Not the cloud-like shadows like the ones he had used so far but rather thick and dark shadows.

And soon a black knight appeared before Hansoo's eyes.

Whoooooosh!

Jang Oh swung across the air with the shield in his right hand.

Towards Hansoo who seemed to have expected all this and had started to thrust with his spear.

Booooooooooom!

The moment the Forked Lightning in Hansoo's hand collided with the shield, a tremendous explosive sound occurred as a shockwave spread out in all directions.

Veins popped out from Hansoo's hands.

An attack which carried all his strength behind it.

But the shield had successfully blocked his attack.

'Tsk. I knew this would happen.'

He was superior in terms of the physical capabilities of his body and in mana.

But his opponent had many cards to play as well.

Boooom!

Boom!

Hansoo's spear twisted around like a snake then cut across the air towards the black knight.

The attack which could even smash apart a master player arrived in front of the knight but that's as far as it went.

Jang Oh deflected the attack away with his shield then dispersed his body into fragments of shadows.

Then.

Whoooooosh!

A dangerous aura from below his feet.

Hansoo lifted up his feet and dodged away from the shadows that were charging towards him.

The shadow blades that rose out from the shadows below his feet.

Booooooooooom!

Jang Oh, who had been focusing on defense previously, suddenly threw the shield towards Hansoo and Hansoo quickly lifted his spear up in order to block mid-air.

Though he had lost his balance, he was still superior in terms of strength and mana.

But then.

Ooooooong!

Jang Oh's shield made a strange humming noise as it started to let out yellow light.

The moment that yellow light passed by Hansoo.

Shwooooosh!

The Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement that surrounded Hansoo's body and his artifacts got shattered apart and the shield smashed towards Hansoo's bare body.



Booom!

Veins popped out in Hansoo's arms as he blocked the shield with his spear.

And as Hansoo jumped back after pushing away the shield.

Whooosh!

Hansoo frowned at the chain-like shadows that exploded out from beneath his feet.

'Dark Spirit. Annoying. That shield too...'

Crunch!

He had ripped apart the chains with brute strength but the shield had succeeded in dodging the spear and smashing into Hansoo's chest.

Booooooom!

A tremendous amount of force smashed into Hansoo's chest and Jang Oh didn't let a single moment go to waste as he continued to push Hansoo back.

Boom!

Boom!

The surrounding flora all got snapped and broken from the shockwaves as the nearby lake melted due to the collision of mana.

And Hansoo was taking all of these attacks with his bare body.

Boooooom!

Every time he got hit, cracks appeared on the Thousand Soldiers Armor and the spear got bent to the point of breaking.

Hansoo smashed the shield which dispersed his mana with the yellow light every time it hit him and jumped back more.

But Jang Oh didn't let Hansoo do as he pleased as a storm of shadows rushed in towards Hansoo.

‘So this is how it's like to fight against him.’

He could not tell where the body, skills and weapons were.

It was just all darkness.

He surrounded the entire body with darkness and stormed through.

Cut the enemy's vision and attack from the shadows.

Endlessly.

Even if he gained the Spirit's power, he could not do such a thing right now.

This was the accumulation of endless effort.

Jang Oh, who had succeeded in integrating his entire body, all of his skills and his artifacts with the shadow was nothing but a mass of darkness.

A form which did not resemble a human at all.

‘But... He's still human.’

Boooooooooom!

As the yellow light dispersed his mana again and the shadows were about to smash into his body again.

Hansoo spoke.

In a cold manner.

“Michael Dawson. How does it feel to sell out your comrades?”

Then.

Jang Oh stopped in place.

Michael Dawson.

One of the two clan leaders of the Ant Eater clan.

The name that made Jang Oh regret for all of eternity.

<If there is a hell... I'll be the first one to go there.'

'Jang Oh... Your mentality is way too weak.'

The moment the shadows around Jang Oh's body trembled.

Crunch!

Hansoo's spear flew towards Jang Oh's body.

## Chapter 272 : Berserk (2)

---

Jang Oh thought of the past from time to time.

The times when he had traveled along the Yellow Zone with Clementine and his other comrades.

‘Eres... I met them here as well.’

People who had come 2 years earlier and had gotten used to this world.

Jang Oh smiled.

The Green Zone, in many ways, was much more perilous than the Yellow Zone but it didn't matter.

Since Clementine had always led them in an amazing way.

Though they were afraid of the players but they were good at hiding and they didn't think it would matter much even if they got caught.

Since he and his comrades were powerful.

There was nobody who could go against them out of the players as they increased their levels explosively and prepared to leave.

They proceeded towards the Empire's capital, Kirkis.

They just needed to spread out to not get caught by the players and just get to the log out zone.

The group of Eres had gone up far before because they had logged in from a different spot but they could just meet them above.

But right before they left.

They met true despair.

The power which determined who the losers of this world were, the Empire.

And the man who shouldered that entire title by himself.

Tiamet Kratus.

<I don't know what that fairy... I don't know what they're trying to do but I cannot leave behind any variables.>

They tried to resist the man who was mumbling strange words and was capturing them but it was all futile.

Though they were confident in their own skills, Tiamet was on

another level.

They could not even fathom the strength of Tiamet, which had been polished and sharpened for a thousand years, and they got sucked into the White Dragon Arena one by one.

If Tiamet wanted to kill them they would've long died.

He kept them alive for one reason.

In order to drag out everybody who was hiding around by using them as bait.

<Fucking hell...>

While the adventures trapped in the White Dragon Arena fell into depression.

<Let's talk.>

Clementine, who they had planned to meet above, appeared.

Maybe to rescue them or maybe because of another reason.

But one thing was clear.

That Tiamet was intrigued by Clementine's words.

And that in just five short minutes, Clementine and Tiamet had found a common ground.

So a contract between Tiamet Kratus and Clementine had been created and these people were able to get released.

Though he and the others were very curious about the contents of the contract but Clementine merely laughed it off and refused to speak about it.

But before she went up.

Jang Oh found out about the contents of the contract.

<Please take care of this place Jang Oh...>

Jang Oh could not forget Clementine's voice.

The kind voice which asked him to do such vicious things.

---

Boooooom!

Boom!



The players whistled at the sounds which rang out from afar and carefully moved around far off in the distance.

“Sheesh...Do you see that? Monsters. Let’s just leave them to fight by themselves and move around on our own.”

One of the players whispered in fear.

If they showed the battle and the viewers asked to fight then things would change.

Since they couldn’t refuse the words of the people watching them.

‘No. I don’t even want to get involved in that at all. Crazy bastards... How do you even get that strong?’

Even if they got involved, there wasn’t much they could do.

Maybe they might be able to ambush them later.

But right now, there was a bigger and more important objective.

The players ignored the noises in the distance and carefully headed towards the giant structure in the distance.

<Damn. That doesn’t look simple.>

<Woah, Hydros clan. Nice job.>

<Stop crawling and try running! They're probably too busy fighting to care about you guys anyway!>

It was clearly different from the residential areas until now.

As the vast area with the giant structure came into view, the chat room watching the live broadcast exploded.

And as if the movements of the players got quicker as if they were responding to the chat and soon they arrived by the giant dome shaped structure.

And befitting of this giant structure, a much more powerful protective energy field than the one above was flowing through it.

Clang!

One of the players frowned as they smacked the wall.

“We did arrive but... Maybe this doesn't have an entrance as well?”

One of the players nearby shook his head and spoke.

“Let’s spread out and search. Whoever finds it sends a signal.”

And the players nodded as they spread out.

---

Rummblee.

‘...It suddenly got quiet. But wait... Isn’t it dangerous if those guys stop fighting?’

One player, who had been moving around the area, felt a chill run down his back as he continued to search around.

But this worry only lasted a moment.

“...Found it.”

The player, <Karax>, felt his heart thumping and smiled.

It wasn’t big but was clearly designed for people to enter.

And the player who had found the entrance first started to enter it.

‘Well... They did tell us to send a signal but...’

Karax shrugged his shoulders.

Was there really a need to?

‘I could just be checking things out first in case it’s dangerous.’

Karax chuckled as he carefully entered.

He wasn’t broadcasting this anyway since he wasn’t really interested in things like that.

There was only one important matter.

Things of worth.

If they found it together they would need to share it but if nobody knew about it then it’ll all be his.

But while he was walking into this place.

‘...Woah.’

Karax stopped and whistled in place.

From the scene that appeared in front of his eyes.

Oooooooooong!

Thousands of marbles.

Sizes ranging from that close to humans all the way up to a small house.

Though these glass-like marbles were transparent, they were filled with multicolored lights.

Some blue, some red and some green.

And Karax realized where he had seen these lights.

It was awfully similar to the things he and the others had.

‘Spirit Stones.’

Of course he belonged to the top tier players who could hunt in the Spirit Land.

He had his own Spirit Stone and had even seen a few S grades while hunting.

And the light that radiated out from these things were similar to the light that came out from the Spirit Stones.

But there was a fundamental difference.

The difference of energy.

The lights that flickered around as if they were alive.

They really seemed to be alive.

The lights inside the marbles were constantly pulsating while releasing tremendous amount of energy through the tube attached above the marble and that energy flowed to an unknown location.

“Mmm...”

Karax pondered about breaking these for a moment but soon gave up.

These beautiful lights gave out an eerie feeling of some sort.

‘Hmm...Is there nothing else?’

Though the marbles had caught his attention first, these shouldn't be the only things in this giant building.

At that moment something came into his eyes.

‘...They seem to be heading to one specific spot.’

Though about half of the tubes were heading towards the colonies outside, the other half was different.

Towards a deeper location.

‘Yeah. This shouldn’t be all of it.’

Ommmmmmmm.

Karax left the marbles and proceeded to head deeper into the structure.

---

Kwaaaddddk!

The moment Hansoo attacked the heart.

“..Kuhuk.”

The shadows surrounding Jang Oh’s body trembled.

An accurate attack right on the heart.

The skills and the power of the spirit shattered.

Jang Oh realized that Hansoo had saved a bit of strength for this chance.

‘...I thought I knew him a bit from the fight he had with Metiron.’

The spirit was something that was as powerful as the Mana Jade Hansoo had.

Though he lost out in terms of the quality of skills or one’s physical prowess, he won in the quantity of skills and the mastery level of the skills.

He had thought that he wouldn’t lose out in terms of artifacts with the shield but...There was another fatal difference.

‘For his battle skills to be better than mine...’

As Jang Oh was lost in thought at the fact that his battle skills that had been honed for 18 years had been beaten by a newcomer to this zone.

Whooooosh!

Hansoo’s right fist headed towards his temple to kill.

‘Yeah...This is better...’



As Jang Oh was about to faint while watching the fist coming towards him.

<!!!!!!!!!!!!!!>

The soul fragment Jang Oh denied started to violently shake.

Then Jang Oh's right hand moved at lightning speed and blocked the fist with his shield.

Then.

The Seven Strands Spear which had threatened Hansoo in the zone below started to head towards Hansoo while being surrounded in a dark aura.

Though there was no mana jade to support this, Jang Oh was much stronger than Metiron and there was the power of the spirit on top of this.

And the power behind it would not be small at this close of a range.

Whooooosh!

Hansoo frowned as he backed off.

Soon.

Crunch!

Craack!

Jang Oh regenerated the caved in chest as he spoke to Hansoo expressionlessly.

“Jang Oh is too compassionate. How would he be able to complete the contract with Tiamet at this ra...Fuck!”

Jang Oh suddenly shouted in shock and raised his shield again.

Then.

Boooom!

Hansoo's right hand smashed onto the shield again.

Hansoo muttered while looking at the different eyes of Jang oh.

‘You speak too much.’

Boooooom!

Hansoo then continued to attack.

He had to finish this off quickly and go in.

‘Those guys are getting on my nerves.’

Hansoo looked towards the structure behind him that had started to activate with a strange noise.

# Chapter 273 : Berserk (3)

---

Oooooong.

<...It was taken huh.>

Jang Oh mumbled as he looked at his body from a dark location within his mind.

He had failed.

And now the only thing he could do was hope that the person who took over his body, Taehee, did better.

For the contract.

<Fuck.>

Jang Oh thought of the past.

The words Tiamet had said casually while walking past him.

<I....Really don't like these guys. As well as that fucking fairy...>

He didn't know the exact reason why but Tiamet didn't want anyone to go past the mountain range and to the forgotten lands beyond.

Neither the citizens of this world.

The Ains.

Nor the players.

So he had sealed the Ains and suppressed the citizens by creating the Empire and the Kingdoms.

And there was no need to worry about the immortal players since their limitations prevented them from doing so.

But a variable appeared.

Themselves, the adventurers.

Apparently Tiamet realized something the moment he saw them.

That they could go across.

But at the same time he realized something else.

That he couldn't kill them all by himself.

Because the adventurers would continue to climb up endlessly.

He, who was rooted in the White Dragon Arena, couldn't kill everyone of these guys who appeared all over the entire world and eventually somebody who could go across the range would appear and slip by him.

So he had decided to do his best in order to get rid of every adventurer and captured Jang Oh's group to use them as a lure for others.

But then Clementine made a deal with him.

<I will catch them all for you. The adventurers.>

Tiamet wanted to control the adventurers and Clementine needed to handle those who passed by his eyes and came through the Green Road from below.

Since both sides needed the same thing, the deal was made swiftly and with ease.

And there was no need for the citizens of this world to step out either.

Since there was a group who was easy to manipulate and could not die.

With the support of the Empire and the Kingdoms as well as the

rewards and the hatred towards the Bug Players, a humongous clan that didn't lose out to other clans had been created.

And Jang Oh received the help of the Empire and had become the clan leader.

To look over the Spirit Land and capture the other adventurers.

And for this price, Clementine's comrades from below had been guaranteed safety.

For the Login area, Arrancar Zone and the Logout Area, the village next to the Capital.

This is how the <Ant Eater> clan had been created.

‘Sigh...’

Jang Oh was dispirited as he watched his own body's controls having been taken from him.

Jang Oh didn't want others to know about what he and Clementine were doing.

It was better the less people knew about this.

And to not let others shoulder this weight with him, he had

decided to shoulder it all by himself and had decided to stay behind in this world.

He had gained the power of a Spirit and had raised the mastery level of his skills to the apex.

For 20 years without rest.

And he had dealt with the issues within the Spirit Land all by himself because the adventurers were too weak for this place and because the citizens could not come into this place.

But for him to lose like this.

Jang Oh mumbled bitterly while being trapped within the darkness after having lost.

‘Clementine... Is this alright?’

He had never doubted Clementine so far.

The Fragments of Seven Souls, the Contract Trait and the Lord Trait.

There was a limit to how many people one could control with these.



Though the Lord Trait could control a lot more people, the Contract Trait was rarer and more useful and something like the Fragments of Seven Souls only existed with Taehee.

Though they had gained safety within this world, they were still weak within this world and people who couldn't become their allies were more dangerous than monsters.

<Jang Oh. Your life is more precious than the lives of ten thousand I don't know about. If I can kill ten thousand to make sure the ones who follow me are safe then...I shall gladly do so.>

He had thought that Clementine's orders was the best and had always followed them.

Though he was swimming in a sea of guilt, he withstood the clashing waves thanks to the smiles of those who passed through safely due to him.

Since the second he gave up, Tiamet would set out to destroy them all due to them not having any more use for him.

But then an strange person appeared.

Some crazy maniac who told him that he would take everyone here.

'...Was killing them all the best choice? Did we have to kill them? Clementine?'

Someone said once.

That once you are held back by the chains of reality, the past comes back to you.

Jang Oh thought back to the things he had done and fell into sadness.

.....

Boooooooooom!

Hansoo frowned as he looked at Jang Oh who was attacking him.

He, who was armed with countless Zero-umbering skills, was extremely powerful.

But between himself, who had only trained for a year, and Jang Oh who had 20 years to increase the mastery of his skills, there was indeed a huge difference.

And even more so since people like Taehee and Jang Oh were the elites of the elites.

Chwaaaaak!

The moment the red powder spread out into the air.

Black shadows spread out to block the red powder and reduced the damage.

Then.

Booobobooooom!

Countless skills whose their original identities could not be made out because of the shadows smashed Hansoo's body, his reinforcement and his armor.

Though he was superior in terms of physical strength and artifacts, that one shield neutralized it all.

Kiiiiiiing!

‘...I guess he trusts this guy. For them to lend him a Divine Weapon.’

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the shield that was slowly gnawing away at his mana with the the yellow lights.

Arham's Shield.

A shield which dispersed all forms of energy that were malicious

towards it.

Though it didn't have a uniquely powerful attack like the God's Flail, this single passive skill's effect in a battle was tremendous on its own.

Though it was a bit inferior to the Power Destruction of Nurmaha's Ring, it still worked as a form of dispelling.

If he didn't have enough mana or the Mana Jade, then his mana would long have dried out.

Hansoo started to worry.

'At this rate... I indeed would win.'

Boooooom!

Hansoo mumbled while looking at Jang Oh who had turned pale.

Though it was better than the situation with Metiron, Taehee, who should be roaming around the indigo or even the violet zone, was much stronger than Jang Oh.

Even if it was a fragment, the body could not withstand it.

But the real issue was behind him.

Oooooooooongg!

The sounds that were coming from the large structure behind him were getting louder and louder.

No, the aura that was being released from that place was the issue.

Rummmmmblee!

A huge amount of mana that could even shake the lands below was seeping out.

Oooooooooong!

If one could color the auras that were seeping out then there would be numerous dozens of different colors.

Countless types of Spirit's Auras.

And the pressure that was being radiated was so intense that it caused both he and Jang Oh's skins to tremble but the surrounding trees were just becoming more invigorated.

The reason why Hansoo was so sure of his victory was because of this.

Oooooong!

Unlike Jang Oh who already had something inside him, Hansoo's symbol was trembling intensely as it absorbing all the surrounding auras of the Spirits.

And thanks to this Hansoo's entire body was glowing with lights as well.

Whooooosh!

Flames appeared every time he swung his arms and lightning appeared where his spear smashed onto the ground.

Originally, the Arham's Shield should be gnawing away at his reinforcement and making it harder to battle but the energy from the Spirits was filling the gaps.

‘Did she give me the symbol after having expected all of this?’

Hansoo thought of Mudusella and started to recapitulate the current situation.

He had the upper hand in the fight.

But even though the situation behind him allowed him to have the upper hand in this battle, leaving it alone didn't really make

him feel any better.

Though it was all within his expectations, if this amount of energy exploded in the wrong direction then that itself was more than enough to become a catastrophe.

‘...I need to deal with that first.’

Then.

Boooooom!

Hansoo raised the Forked Lightning and then attacked Jang Oh.

The Shield let out rays of yellow light to disperse his reinforcement but countless colors filled the gap where the reinforcement had been.

Craaack!

Wind, Lightning and Flames stormed the location where the shield and the spear collided.

To the point of even causing the darkness surrounding Jang Oh's body to retreat.

Boooom!

As Jang Oh couldn't handle the power behind Hansoo's attack and took numerous steps backwards.

Whooooosh!

Hansoo moved his body and charged towards the structure.

Ignoring Jang Oh completely.

“Hmm.”

Jang Oh, no, Taehee looked towards Hansoo's back and shrugged his shoulders.

‘Can't follow that. Anyways...He's really strong.’

The auras that Hansoo was absorbing had come out from that structure.

The closer Hansoo got to that building, the faster he would absorb the auras and the stronger he would get.

Fighting against Hansoo in a situation like this where they were already in the losing situation was basically suicide.

Taehee decided to give up and turned around depressedly.



‘I had a lot to talk about...I guess I need to look for another chance.’

There hadn’t been a chance to say a word but she had come here with a lot to talk about.

But eventually another chance would arise.

Since that guy didn’t seem to like her which meant that they would eventually meet again.

Whooooosh!

Jang Oh’s body that was surrounded in darkness disappeared.

.....

Oooooooooong!

Hansoo quickly ran past the glass orbs and headed deeper.

He could still see the footprints that had been left behind within this place.

Hansoo eventually arrived at a place.

‘This is...’

Hansoo frowned as he looked at the mysterious object in front of him.

Rummmblee!

A giant sphere that had taken position inside the giant structure.

The giant sphere, which had the radius of a hundred meters was floating in mid air as it devoured the energy that had flowed out from the spheres he had run past.

Hansoo was curious about the identity of the sphere but he had something else he had to worry about.

‘....Where did he go?’

Hansoo was confused as he looked at the panels beside the sphere.

Since this giant structure wouldn’t move on its own, the player definitely activated this himself.

But there was no trace of the player who activated this.

Not even the trace of battle.

‘...Did he logout or something?’

As Hansoo frowned thinking about the player who suddenly disappeared.

Rummmblee!

A tremendous earthquake could be felt.

‘This....?’

It wasn’t really an earthquake.

Hansoo was slightly worried about the whole space collapsing.

Boooooom!

As if it finally started acting up, the sphere in front of him began to let out a blinding amount of light.

At the same time.

Rummmblee.

Hansoo finally realized why the earthquake had occurred and

what the giant sphere in front of his eyes was.

Hansoo's body and the room he was located in started to slowly rise up.

Smashing through the countless layers of ice above.

‘... It was an engine...?’

# Chapter 274 : Land From The Past (1)

---

Empire's Capital. Kirkis.

‘Hmm.’

Somebody walked towards Tiamet who was sitting in a lotus position in the center of the White Dragon Arena.

The Commander General of the Empire's Magic Brigade.

Gran kain.

He was almost 80 and there were less than 3 people in the entire Empire who were stronger than him, but he was still very cautious when approaching Tiamet.

After preparing himself both mentally and physically, he started to carefully speak towards Tiamet.

“The Destruction Cannon is almost ready. If we use the Rangkom's Stake as a medium after we finish stabilizing it then we can attack the Ains anytime we want.”

Tiamet remained seated in the same position and spoke in a grim manner.

“Before attacking them, send a final warning to them using the

players again. Telling them to give up.”

“...Understood.”

‘We wouldn’t be able to finish them off even if we used the cannon in a surprise attack Why is he giving them a warning?’

Kain didn’t understand but he didn’t show his thoughts.

Since Tiamet was an existence at the same level as a God to them.

But Tiamet suddenly frowned and started to glare at Kain.

And Kain was shocked from this gaze and he started to sweat profusely and carefully asked.

“Why... What’s the matter?”

Kain thought back to every single action he had performed but he couldn’t figure it out.

But Tiamet wasn’t looking at Kain.

He was looking towards the north, past Kain.

‘... Jang Oh. This useless bastard. I even gave you a Divine Artifact.’

Rummmblee.

Kain couldn't see it due to the distance but he could still feel it.

This aura was too familiar not to notice.

Tiamet stood up as he felt the minute but longing sensation that resonated out from the north.

And Kain was shocked at this action, he hurriedly asked.

“Sir Tiamet. Did I do something...”

“Let's go.”

“Pardon?”

Tiamet spoke expressionlessly.

“We're going to the cannon.”

Crraacckle.

Tiamet pulled out the Rangkom's stake.

---

---

Rummmblee.

‘...A ship?’

Hansoo felt his body rising up into the air and quickly deduced the current situation.

This giant colony flying into the sky being a space ship was just his speculations, he could be wrong.

But there was one important thing.

Was it safe?

Hansoo looked towards the engine which was letting out a blinding amount of light.

It looked like it had been made with technology he didn't quite know about that was way more advanced than that of Earth but it had been hidden under the ground for too long.

Without anybody maintaining it, it wouldn't be strange for a problem to occur.

The worst case scenario was it exploding on the spot or falling back down after a short flight.



The fall wouldn't kill him but the explosion of the engine was more than enough to harm him.

Since the energy being held inside was not something even Hansoo could ignore.

Well, it was the same if it fell too.

He would be fine from the crash but the all the spirit's orbs containing the energy would explode.

It was the same as an explosion at that point.

‘Let's see.’

Whooooosh!

There was somebody who was useful for a situation like this.

Hansoo spread out his Dark Cloud and started to check every corner of the Engine Room.

Since he had to escape if things were actually dangerous.

Well, he should have just escaped instead of checking the surroundings but there was a reason why he stayed.

The reason why Mudusella had sent him here.

If he could be sure that this strange space ship wouldn't explode then he might be able to find out a lot more.

Ooooong!

Kiririririk.

The Dark Cloud started to seep into the entire Engine Room.

From the tubes that supplied the energy all way to the various controls.

As well as the Engine.

Of course he didn't do this to understand the technology behind all this.

Since it would take literally an eternity for him to figure all this advanced stuff.

He solely focused on one thing.

The flow of the energy.

The most important thing was how well this energy was being controlled and contained.

And soon.

Whooooosh.

The Dark Clouds all flew back into Hansoo's body as he deduced that it was safe enough.

Surprisingly, this giant engine was working in top condition while controlling and suppressing that tremendous amount of energy despite being activated after hundreds of years.

To the point of even making the flow of energy beautiful.

It felt like he was watching an art piece.

He tried to see if he could affect it with the Dark Cloud but the flow continued onwards while ignoring his attempts.

Which meant it was safe to say it wouldn't fall or explode randomly.

Hansoo then naturally thought of the next thing.

'Could I control it?'

Controlling it was one thing but he was curious of the intel hidden on this ship.

And Hansoo was able to figure out the answer with ease.

‘It seems that thing is controlling it.’

Hansoo walked up to the panel next to the giant sphere.

Kiiiririk

Kiiiiingg.

The panel, which had yellow letters on a blue background, looked small but this was only relative to the giant sphere.

Seeing it up close it was quite large.

5m sideways, 2m up and down.

And some spherical image was appearing on the panel.

‘Globe?’

It was like the globe he had seen often when he had been young.

‘Is this the image of the planet we are on?’

It looked like a space ship.

Of course it would have something like this.

And as Hansoo touched the screen, the giant planet spun and showed another angle.

Hansoo spun it around to check things and then thought to himself.

‘A bit different from earth...Well I guess that’s normal.’

It looked much larger than earth as well.

But this singular projection was not enough intel.

It wasn’t showing any important locations, its purpose was just for simple imaging.

‘I need more information...’

He tried to pry deeper into the panel.

But what he got in return were bright red warning signs.

[Restricted User]

[Access Required]

[Level 3 Plus Information. Administrator Required.]

[Add additional...]

The interface itself wasn't hard but every part of it prevented him from entering.

‘How did the damn players activate this.’

Hansoo smacked his lips.

He originally had three plans.

First, gather as much intel as he could from this place.

Second, go to the restricted lands past the mountain range with this.

Third, use this as a weapon.

This being a colony had no use to him.

Though it could house people, that was it.

If he took this to the War Fortress then the superhumans of the Empires and the Kingdoms would charge over.

It would receive a huge amount of damage even before people got on.

And this place wasn't a login area so he would receive attacks every time he went to the login areas.

But he should easily be able to follow through his three original plans.

This giant ship was basically a bomb.

Killing that monster Tiamet might be too much but it could be used in various ways.

Since he could still kill somebody like Cykrus.

'But...That's only when I can control this damn thing.'

If his intention wasn't to create a giant crater for a lake to play around in, then there was no point of blowing it up here.

Since this ship seemed to have stopped in mid air.

'....I guess this could be used as a floating garden in the future.'

Hansoo moved his eyes away from the panel.

There was no point of wasting time here.

There was a reason why he came here.



Obtaining a spirit in order to go across the range.

Well, he could already do this.

Since there were thousands of spirits outside of this engine room.

As long as he passed the test the symbol gave him.

He wouldn't need to take this giant ship and could just run across it.

‘Since the symbol Mudusella gave me doesn't look simple... I should be able to get a stronger spirit.’

The level of the spirit one gained was relative to one's strength and the quality of the symbol.

As Hansoo turned his body.

Kiiiiiiiing!

The symbol on his body started to shine.

‘...What the?’

The symbol musella planted on his body.

The light from the symbol flew across his arm and then towards the panel.

And the moment this light touched the panel.

Kiiiiiiing!

New words appeared on the panel.

[Administrator confirmed...Logging In]

[....Access Granted.]

“Mudusella, I don’t really like surprise events like this hehe.”

Hansoo chuckled.

# Chapter 275 : Land From The Past (2)

---

Rummmblee.

“What the...What’s going on?”

“Did those guys who went in activate this thing?”

“Can anybody contact them? I can’t seem to be able to.”

All the players who had been above the giant ship were startled from the sudden movement of the giant structure.

Though they didn’t know how far up it would rise, there was nothing in it for them if they just floated along with this.

‘Yeah, no.’

One of the players clenched their teeth.

This obviously seemed to be linked to an amazing questline.

If he died here then he wouldn’t be able to participate.

He needed to find a safe spot first.

And his eyes naturally fell upon a location.

The entrance which had been clogged up by skills to prevent it from fixing itself.

‘...Not everybody can go in but.’

While they were all glancing at each other, one of the players spoke calmly.

“Since we can’t all go in, let’s divide it up. An equal number of people between clans. We can just share the rewards from in there afterwards.”

But as they were about to agree to this.

Kiiiiing.

“...What is that?”

“Isn’t that from the capital? Kirkis.”

In the distance.

A light was flickering thousands of kilometers in the distance.

From the capital of the Empire.

The players frowned as they saw the small but clear rainbow colored light.

“Did the Calicule clan receive any messages? Isn’t your clan leader the owner of a territory in the Empire?”

One of the clansmen from the Calicule clan stayed silent but it was clear that he was confused as well from his expression.

<Astania>, the leader of the Calicule clan.

One of the people who had achieved a tremendous amount of merit points and had been granted the ownership of a special territory right next to the capital of the Empire.

Their clan leader, Astania, should know something about this.

Since there were rumors saying that he had connections with Tiamet as well.

But they had not received any messages regarding that.

‘What could it be...’

Everybody fell into confusion as they saw the seven colored lights that continued to flicker while continuously becoming larger and larger.

---

As the administrative rights were confirmed, all of the red warning letters disappeared.

Then.

[Administrator number 1011, Access Confirmed.]

[You Are Now Allowed To Access The Mudusella System.]

‘....Mudusella System?’

Hansoo’s eyebrows rose up.

Since Mudusella was the name of somebody he knew.

But he decided to ask other things first.

There was a lot he wanted to ask.

“What is the objective of this ship?”

Large words started to appear upon the panel.

[The ASTRO-17 Ship's construction had started on the 19th month of year 2199 in order to reach the nearest planet, TIAMET-1131, and had completed its preparations on the 21st month of the year 2211.]

“Reason for this objective?”

[To find more space for the expansion of the race.]

Hansoo nodded.

He finally figured out the origins of this thing.

‘Terraforming... Is that what it’s doing?’

A few other questions appeared in his mind after finding out the objective of the ship, he decided to ask the thing he was the most curious about first.

“Does the race that built you exist upon this planet?”

This was not something the Empire and the Kingdoms, who fought with swords and built castles out of stones, could build.

Even if the Empire had a lot to hide, this was clearly some super advanced technology.

So he had thought this ship came from outside.

But if this ship was built in order to leave the planet then the story changes.

There had to be a race who had the technology to build this.

A race which he could not guess the identity of no matter what.

There were three possibilities.

1, They left behind a few hidden ships in various locations and all went to their goal planet.

2, They existed somewhere on this planet and were hiding from the eyes of others and were silently observing them.

Or 3.....

‘They could’ve been annihilated.’

Depending on which of the three it was, his plans would be affected in a huge manner.



It would be good if it was number 1 or 3 but if it was 2 where another race was silently observing him then he would need to prepare for this variable as well.

Hansoo smiled bitterly.

‘...These worlds are like damn onions.’

He knew that he couldn't prepare for everything even if he came from the future.

Since this world that God had prepared for them was not something they should conquer but rather run away from.

A maze-like place where they trembled in fear while passing through.

But as his plans succeeded and the worlds were conquered, these worlds were like treasure chests as they continuously took out new things to throw at his feet.

In a huge scale.

Hansoo quietly waited for the reply.

It was a good thing in the end.

Since him worrying about something that hid in the shadows meant that his light had reached and drove away the darkness from the corners of the world.

‘Let’s hear this out. Which of the three it is.’

But sadly, It didn’t fully fulfill Hansoo’s expectations instantly.

Kiiiiiiingg!

Instead of the answer to Hansoo’s question, a different type of information appeared.

[...Energy wave similar to weapon type ZA-114 detected.]

[Converting all surplus energy into Resonance Shield.]

[ETA : 3.1131 seconds. Prepare for impact.]

Normal people might not have understood these strange words.

But Hansoo realized what was going on in an instant.

‘...They did something.’

Even he could feel the tremendous amount of energy approaching the ship from deep inside it.

As if they had converted the giant formation of the War Fortress into a cannon.

Chiiiiiiiiing!

All the lights inside the colony started to turn off.

As if they were gathering energy into a specific point.

Crunch! Crunch!

As Hansoo planted his feet onto the floor of the ship in preparation for the impact.

Boooooooooom!

A humongous tremor shook the entire ship.

Rumble.

The giant sphere next to him trembled as it started to let a blinding amount of light.

Soon, after the shock passed by.

The System's panel showed him the current information.

[Remaining Shield : 85.1%]

[...Calculating situation.]

[In case of continuous bombardment, chance to fall before leaving the atmosphere...98.1%]

[Flight to outer planets judged impossible in the current situation, beginning movement towards the closest colony according to emergency protocol.]

[Setting flight path...]

[Flight path confirmed. Moving to the closest shelter.]

Then.

Rummmmmbleee!

G force that would easily cause harm to normal humans started to get applied.

Of course it was nothing to Hansoo.

But he still cursed out.

“Fuck.”

The issue wasn’t the acceleration.

It was the direction the ship was heading towards.

Hansoo realized which way the ship was heading towards and smiled bitterly.

The ship was headed above and past the mountain range.

Past the mountain range that was roaring with mana storms.

At that moment.

[Second impact approaching.]

[Remaining shield 85.3%.]

[Prepare for impact.]

---

Boooooooooom!

The second strike landed on the ship.

Rummmblee!

Within the trembling ship.

Hansoo asked the ship's system.

“Can we arrive at our destination? We won't blow up before?”

If it would explode then he needed to get off the ship as soon as possible.

But the system gave a rather positive reply.

[If the weapon attacking us has similar recharge times to Weapon Type ZA-114, then it is possible]

“The shield can hold on?”

This was the most important part.

But sadly, the system's reply wasn't good.

[Currently remaining shield amount is 70.7%.]

[The shield will be destroyed. One extra strike after the destruction of shield is allowed. Prepare for failed landing.]

“...Failed landing.”

That was fine.

He was confident in surviving even if he fell from the stratosphere.

The issue was the natural conditions storming around the mountain range.

There was a limit he could withstand with the symbol.

From what he knew, even stronger mana storms appeared starting from the mountain range.

If the shield protecting this ship disappears then he would need to withstand the storm with his bare body.

‘...I don’t have time for all this.’

Hansoo looked towards the system’s panel.

There was a lot he wanted to ask the thing in front of him.

But he had to prepare for the harsh conditions beyond the mountain range.

Boooooom!

As he felt the trembles from the third strike.

Hansoo quickly headed out from the engine room.

To the room where thousands of spirits were.

And the spirits were still letting out their brilliant lights inside their glass orbs.

He needed to choose one out of the thousands.

But there wasn’t really a need for him to choose.

The symbol had been pulling him for a long time.



Hansoo walked past the glass orbs.

Towards the location that the symbol was pointing towards.

And soon.

Kiiiiing!

Hansoo stood in front of a peculiar looking glass orb that was significantly larger than the others.

‘Strange. What’s in it?’

It was different from any spirit he had seen before.

It didn’t have the red glow of a flame spirit, the dark glow of a dark spirit or even the bright blue light of a ice spirit.

‘Well. I’ll find out after I get it.’

Boooom!

Another strike landed on the ship as the ship accelerated further.

Hansoo decided to stay on the ship until the end.

Since the weapon could aim at him instead of this giant ship if he got off.

It was better to get across the mountain range and disappear from view.

Hansoo raised his hand towards the mysterious glass orb that had numerous dozens of colors intermingled with each other.

Then.

Whoooooosh!

And Hansoo felt the conscious of something from the flask entering his head.

It didn't really feel good but he knew.

That he would need to get friendlier with this from now on.

He had gained a powerful ally.

Ooooooong.

Hansoo's eyes slowly closed as he felt the foreign consciousness entering his mind.

Then.

As if the ship was preparing for an emergency landing, countless screens that showed the current situation outside the ship appeared in various locations inside the ship.

And everything outside the ship was being shown.

Including the beam of light heading towards the ship.

As well as the mountain range in front of the ship.

Though it felt like he had climbed at least 20 km above, they were still a bit away from the top of the mountain range.

But soon.

Whooosh!

The scenery past the mountain range appeared on the screens.

Clouds, blizzards and mists.

The thing Tiamet wanted to keep hidden from the world.

And the closing eyes of Hansoo got focused onto the screen.

‘This is what’s beyond the mountain range...’

But even before Hansoo could check the scene clearly.

Somebody spoke to Hansoo.

From inside him.

<What are you? You aren’t even from the original race so how did you contact me?>

Hansoo’s consciousness got sucked inside as his body fell to the ground.

## Chapter 276 : Land From The Past (3)

---

Kain made a shocked expression as he looked at the object falling in the distance.

“Sir Tiamet... What is that?”

The mages of the Magic Brigade were naturally scholars at heart.

They were able to prepare for things with their extensive knowledge and they always strived for more knowledge.

But he had never even heard of something like that.

How could a giant metal object fly around in the skies?

And it withstood several strikes from the Destruction Cannon that could easily smash apart a city with a single strike.

Though it finally fell, it still succeeded in flying past the mountain range.

Kain looked at Tiamet in search for an answer but Tiamet just walked forward and pulled out the Rangkom's Stake that was inserted in a hole at the base of the giant metal tower that was the Destruction Cannon.

Rummmble!

The bright light surrounding the giant metal tower disappeared as the stake was removed and it started to shut down.

As the medium that transmitted the energy was taken out, the Destruction Cannon was naturally shutting down.

Oooong.

‘...Is he shutting down the cannon?’

Though they couldn’t attack that hunk of metal anymore, the original reason why they had started up the Destruction Cannon was for the Ains.

And using the cannon was impossible without Rangkom’s Stake.

Tiamet suddenly spoke to Kain who was gazing at the giant metal tower that was cooling down.

“Take care of this place. Do everything I’ve told you as well.”

Though a lot of context was missing, it was clear what Tiamet was saying.

He was saying that he was going to go somewhere.

Kain was in a even bigger shock.

“Where are you going? If you leave the White Dragon Arena then...”

But before Kain could even finish his words.

“Don’t worry. It won’t be long.”

‘I should’ve set out from the beginning.’

Tiamet sighed.

He was afraid of acting because of the thousand-year peace they had.

But he really needed to act now.

He could not sit idle and watch that bastard do as he pleased.

Though Kain was looking at him with worry, if everything went according to his plan then he would be able to come back.

‘Hmm. Before I go...’

Tiamet flew into the air and started to fly towards a direction.

Not towards the North but rather in the opposite direction.

And Kain frowned as he saw this.

‘He’s going there again. Damn... For how many years... How many times for that girl...’

Kain’s expression was filled with worry and disgust as he looked at Tiamet who was disappearing into the distance.

---

In a bright white space.

Some rainbow-colored object was floating in front of Hansoo.

It looked humanoid but it was clear that it wasn’t a human being.

The being looked at Hansoo whom it had dragged into his subconscious and spoke.

<Not even the original race... Hmm.>

The being that was staring at Hansoo, the spirit, saw his chest and then smiled with what seemed to be its mouth.



<Oh! You have the access code. No wonder then. Anyways, what are you. I've never seen a race like you. Did you finally meet aliens? Hahaha!>

Hansoo mumbled inwardly as he stared back at the Spirit who was looking at him in curiosity.

‘It figured that out instantly huh.’

Though he looked similar to the players and the original inhabitants, he was still from another dimension.

And the spirit had seen through this at a glance.

The spirit looked around at Hansoo and then continued to speak.

<But why did you come? Are you here to finally release us?>

Then.

Crackle.

Hansoo's skin started to freeze up.

As Hansoo frowned while looking at his freezing skin.

The spirit looked at Hansoo with an amused expression.

<Some extra service so you can see what's going on outside.>

“How mindful.”

His body freezing meant that the ship's shields had been broken and that it had started to enter the harsh areas beyond the mountain range.

Though the spirit's symbol, his mana and his body were holding on for now, he would eventually freeze to death at this rate.

Hansoo started to explain the reasons for his venture here while staring at his freezing body.

Since he needed to get this spirit's power to protect himself.

But even before he could speak.

The spirit spoke.

<But if you are going to ask to lend you some strength... Or beg like that then I'll deny it. >

“...”

<I despise you humans. You don't expect me to grant your

request after you having trapped me here for a thousand years right. If you have any sense of morality that is.>

“...You clearly said with your own mouth before though. That I’m not the same type of humans from before.”

But the spirit merely scoffed at him.

<You guys still look the same. What do you think I’d feel like when you look just like the ones I despise?>

‘...There is some logic behind these stupid words. Ugh, I heard the dark spirit had a bad temper but this thing is even worse.’

He remembered Jang Oh saying how much he had suffered when trying to tame his own spirit.

‘Should I have picked a tree spirit... Or something more docile?’

This thing clearly looked stronger than a tree spirit.

And its temper was no joke as well.

Hansoo frowned at his freezing body for a bit but then decided to try once more.

Since he would need to be on friendly terms with it to borrow its

strength anyway.

“It seems you don’t want to leave despite having been trapped here for a thousand years. Isn’t it time for you to finally leave?”

That was clearly the reason why it had hated the humans.

The ones who had thrown it in here.

If they shared the same body then it would get a chance to see the world as well.

The spirit smiled in an evil manner at those words.

<Well I could just take over your body. Kekeke.>

Hansoo then spoke as if something like that was nothing.

“...Then just say that in the first place.”

<What?>

The moment the spirit spoke back.

Hansoo smashed out with his spear.

Towards the spirit in front of him.

Booooooom!

“Wasting my time and all.”

<Fucking bastard! At least warn me!>

Hansoo and the seven colored object clashed.

And soon.

Rumble!

Booom!

The white space started to fill up with numerous different colors.

---

A special district situated next to the Empire.

A girl was frowning within a well-decorated house.

“What? They all died?”

The woman shook her head while looking at the screen in mid air.

‘What the hell is that spaceship... And the cannon.’

The woman looked outside her window towards the capital and made a confused expression.

She had lived here for a long time and had been to many places but never had she heard about something like that being hidden there.

The Player, Astania, frowned as she looked at the corner of the Empire where smoke was rising from.

‘These bloody NPCs have too many secrets. They never give a clear-cut answer either.’

The Clan leader of the Kaligul clan, one of the 15 great clans.

As well as the lord of the special district of the Empire.

Though it was an amazing title that every player was in envy of, it was of no help in a situation like this where it only brought her stress.

As Astania was frowning at what happened in the capital.

Whooosh.

Something appeared in front of her who was looking out into the distance.

“Waa!”

Astania was even more shocked after seeing who it was.

Somebody who should not be here had appeared.

“...Why are you here?”

Astania was shocked because it was Tiamet who had appeared.

She had gone from time to time because she had been invited for tea.

But it was always at the White Dragon Arena.

This was the first time Tiamet had come out from the White Dragon Arena according to what Astania knew.

And Tiamet pondered for a bit.

As to why he had come here.

He could see Astania whenever he wanted since she was close to the capital.

Since he could just invite her after this all ended.

He just needed to deal with some brat.

‘...Is that really all it is?’

Tiamet chuckled and threw something at Astania and then left.

“I’ll see you after I come back”

“...What?”

Astania made a confused expression after catching what Tiamet had thrown at her.

‘Bouquet?’

As if he had done what he needed to do after handing over the bouquet, he jumped down from the window.

Which was located at an extremely high spot.



But before he landed.

Whooosh.

Tiamet lightly landed.

Lightly.

But the result was not light at all.

Boooom!

The surrounding space broke apart as it got suppressed below where he had stepped.

And the ground started to gather below Tiamet's foot.

As so much space got compressed below his feet to the point of it almost looking black.

Tiamet stepped once more.

Then.

Boooom!

The space exploded with a huge noise and Tiamet's body flew off along with a shockwave.

Not towards the North but eastwards.

‘Annoying me this much... I should prepare a gift for you.’

Tiamet quickly disappeared into the distance, shrouded by the distorted space.

Rumble.

And Astania was dumbfounded as she looked back and forth between where Tiamet had disappeared towards and at the bouquet.

‘Wait, that's towards the War Fortress... Anyways, how did he know I liked this?’

Astania made a confused expression as she looked at the bouquet in her hands.

---

A person looked towards the players and the residents of the kingdom gathered in Korin Kingdom and sighed.

“Ugh...So boring. When the hell is this Hansoo coming anyway?”

The adventurers would've flown into rage if they heard what Karhal was saying.

Since this place was not a place where they could drop their guard even for a second.

The War Fortress that was being targeted by the players was being protected by the formation, the players were steadily receiving symbols from the Ains while the Ains themselves were recovering in the Spirit Lands.

The most peace they had in awhile.

‘Well. Even if they do charge in here, it wouldn’t matter.’

While Karhal was yawning.

Rumble.

Ruuumblee.

Some thunderous rumbles could be heard across the distance.

Well, the noise itself wasn’t important.

Karhal was shocked at the aura that was shaking the atmosphere

itself that was charging towards where he was and jumped up from his seat to peer at the horizon.

And something appeared in his sight.

Something that was even breaking apart the space itself to approach the War Fortress.

But even before he could react.

Boooooom!

A huge explosive sound rang throughout the entire War Fortress.

Then.

‘Look at this.’

Crack!

Tiamet smashed down at the protective layer around the War Fortress and frowned while looking through the translucent barrier.

# Chapter 277 : Land From The Past (4)

---

Booooooom!

A single strike.

The greenish barrier surrounding the War Fortress cracked from a single strike.

And Karhal grounded his teeth as he looked at the protection of the Golden Dragon Formation that was breaking apart like a glass bead that had been dropped.

‘Fuck... So that’s Tiamet huh. Isn’t he just a fucking monster?’

This barrier was nothing like what the vice captain of the Magic Brigade, Eloa, had made before.

It wasn’t created with just a fraction of the mana but rather everything the formation had.

The barrier that had even withstood the Great General Cykrus cracked from a single strike.

Booooooooooom!

The formation shone crazily as it tried to fix the cracks in the barrier but Tiamet was already raising his hand for the next strike.

And as he smashed down with the stake once more.

Boooooom!

The barrier that had been barely holding on finally broke apart.

“Uh...”

“What the...”

With a mere two strikes, the formation's barrier had been broken.

The other adventurers who had prepared their weapons after hearing Karhal's call were now just staring at this scene in the distance in a daze.

A fight was only possible if they were at a similar level.

Though thousands of people had gathered and there were hundreds of thousands more coming, nobody had the confidence of beating the man who had broken the barrier with just two strikes even if they all charged in at the same time.

And one man sighed in relief.

“Damn... Thank god I ran away. Anyway... It’s safe here right?”

The inner parts of the Spirit Lands.

A person stared at the War Fortress in the distance as he mumbled.

---

Rummmmmblee.

In the inner parts of the War Fortress.

As the translucent bronze blue barrier disappeared, Tiamet was finally able to see what was going on clearly.

Tiamet chuckled.

‘These rats...’

The War Fortress had long been surrounded.

Nobody could escape.

Well, a few might escape in secret but the rest should be trapped.

But Tiamet realized how the people inside had escaped after

seeing the inner parts of this place.

‘A hole connected to the maze.’

Though there was a bit of distance from the Spirit Land and from the maze, if hundreds of thousands of people started digging at the same time, it wouldn't take that long.

And it seemed nobody realized what they were doing because they were so focused on the Ains and the Spirit Lands.

Tiamet started to smile as he looked at the empty War Fortress.

‘You think you'll be fine if you hide there?’

Of course the Spirit Land itself would give put him under pressure.

Since he couldn't use the Ain's blessings or the protection elixirs.

‘I was originally only going to take a few but, I've changed my mind.’

Half.

He was going to reduce their numbers by half.



Well he could just ignore them.

But if he left like this then they would believe that their tactics had worked.

And he couldn't let anyone see this.

It would be a warning to them.

Boooooooooom!

As a giant energy storm started appearing around Tiamet.

“Tiamet. Shouldn't your personality have calmed down a bit more after a thousand years? I really hope that girl remembers this part of you.”

“...Mudusella.”

Seer.

The one who saw the future.

She, who could see the future, saw the world in a different manner than those who only saw the present so she also thought in a different manner.

Her objectives were different and so were her actions.

Nothing connected properly or made sense.

Just like now.

For her to have appeared in front of him like this.

‘This damned bitch... What’s her plan?’

Tiamet frowned at Mudusella who had appeared in front of his eyes.

---

Crackle.

Hansoo checked his frozen body after having come out of his subconscious and then he clicked his teeth.

‘That was close.’

The Dragon Essence Blade and the silver liquid from the Body Enhancement Surgery tried to resist the storm of mana that was freezing his body but it was nowhere enough.

While he had been laying on the ground, over half of his body

had been destroyed.

And his entire body was frozen inside a block of ice.

Every part of his nerves made him feel like he was inside a pool of water.

‘I can’t really see the outside world very well.’

Hansoo gazed at the block of ice and then started to wake up something that had been sleeping inside his consciousness.

Then.

A voice filled with rage rang throughout his head.

<Fuck. That old fogey of an owner goes missing! How did I get mixed around with a kid like this!>

<Shut up and hurry.>

The spirit was enraged even more at Hansoo’s commands but the water had already been spilt.

The defeated soul could not deny the orders of a soul at a higher station.

Since they, the artificial souls, had been designed like this.

<Damn...>

Kiiiiiiing!

The symbol in the center of Hansoo's chest started to shine.

Then.

Whooooosh.

Hansoo's entire body started to let out a seven-colored light while melting the ice surrounding his body at a rapid pace.

Soon.

Boom!

Hansoo smashed apart the entire block of ice and stepped out as the seven colored lights pushed back the storm of mana.

And as the mana storm that was damaging his body got pushed back, the silver liquids and the Dragon Essence Blade started to quickly heal his body.

Though he was still standing in the center of an ice storm, he

could not feel any of its coldness.

It felt like he was alone in another world.

‘Nice.’

Hansoo smiled as he walked through the storm and headed back into the ship’s inner parts.

The first thing he wanted to check was the status of the system.

If it was still fine then he would be able to use the ship to move faster and even gain some more information.

This was a mysterious world to him.

Of course the more information he had, the better he would be able to make plans.

‘Let’s see.’

Hansoo walked back into the engine room and then gazed at the frozen engine and the system panels.

The engine had long been overloaded from the earlier events.

Ooooong.

There was a faint light inside the engine as if it was recovering slowly but the system panel had no thoughts of turning on.

‘Ugh... Gathering intel is impossible.’

Hansoo asked the existence in his head in case.

Since the spirit should know much more than him.

<Anything you know?>

And an aggressive reply came back.

<Fuck off. Why should I tell you?>

It needed to lend Hansoo strength because he had lost but there was no need for him to reply.

‘Tsk. As I expected, since there’s nothing to gain here... Let’s leave’

He had thoughts of waiting till it recovered but soon shook his head.

He didn’t know how long it would take.

And there was something else that was bothering him.

‘Tiamet.’

Tiamet, who had tried so hard to prevent him from coming here, wouldn’t sit still.

He would do everything he could to suppress him.

He needed to prepare himself.

And more than anything else.

The scene he had seen through the system's panel momentarily bothered him.

‘I need to check this all out.’

Hansoo dashed out from the engine room.

Whoosh.

And after coming out from the structure, he could see that the situation was even worse than he had thought.

There was a giant hole on the side of the ship that had plummeted into the ground.

The ice storm rushed in through the giant hole and thanks to this the entire colony inside had been frozen.

The lake, trees as well as the giant structure where the spirits were at.

Ooooong!

‘Well, at least the outer wall seems to be recovering a bit.’

Hansoo gazed at the outer wall for a bit and then quickly rushed out.

Whooosh!

The moment he came outside, the storm became even harsher.

As if it was telling him to stay hidden inside the ship.

But the spirit’s light coming out from Hansoo’s body did a perfect job of protecting him.

Though he had been freed from the threat of the storm, Hansoo’s expression turned even darker.

‘...As I thought. This is coming from a single location.’



He had been able to check the storm out much more clearly.

Though it seemed like it was raging from all around, he could clearly feel it.

That this giant ice storm was originating from a single location.

Which meant one thing.

That something was creating this storm.

If it was natural, it wouldn't come out from a single point.

And soon Hansoo's eyes moved towards a location.

Towards the location the storm was coming from.

Then something came into his view.

A tower.

It wasn't large.

But tall.

Too tall.

It was so tall that even he, who was extremely far away, could still see it.

Hansoo knew.

That if that mountain range, which was over 20km tall, didn't exist then everybody would know about this tower.

It was that tall while also shining as well as being something that shocked the people who looked at it.

A mysterious tower over a dozen kilometers tall.

As he focused his eyesight, he could see the outer wall that was made of steel and various alloys.

Though it was covered in ice and frost, they couldn't cover up the traces of civilizations.

Hansoo then looked to the lower parts of the tower.

Since what he was looking at wasn't the tower.

But much below it.

And Hansoo realized what he had seen through the panel was not a dream.

“A city...”

A forest of buildings spread out below the giant tower all the way up to the base of the mountain range.

There was no way to hide a giant forest of trees that were over a kilometer high despite the raging ice storm.

Hansoo watched the metal forest and thought to himself.

He had assumed three things before.

They left.

Were watching.

Or had perished.

Of course the only thing he was clear of was the frozen city and those three possibilities still existed.

But as soon as he saw the city, he had a strong feeling about something.

About what happened to them.

“They perished huh.”

Hansoo mumbled as he watched the frozen city.

Hansoo gazed at the city that had completely been frozen.

He also realized what the strange sensation he had been feeling up until now was.

‘...Similar.’

It was strange.

But not quite alien.

The scene in front of him was still within his understanding.

It would be like this in about a century back on earth.

Hansoo decided his destination as he stared at the forest of buildings.

‘To the tower.’

The spirit, who seemed to know something, had no thoughts of cooperating and he needed to figure out a way to deal with Tiamet but he didn't know where Mudusella was so he would need to figure everything out on his own.

Hansoo quickly moved towards the giant tower in the center of the giant city.

# Chapter 278 : Land From The Past (5)

---

Rumble.

A humanoid being was quickly moving north within the Spirit Land.

Every time this existence that a human's appearance but was clearly inhuman stepped, the lands collapsed and the space broke.

Tiamet looked at the status of his body while quickly flying north towards the mountain range that had started to appear on the horizon.

‘....Annoying.’

Tiamet frowned as he felt the mana storms that were slowly gnawing away at his body.

He couldn't receive the protection of the spirits.

Though he was being protected by the vast amount of mana he had, the mana storm was slowly eating away at his body.

And it would become worse if he reached the lands beyond the mountain range.

Tiamet grinded his teeth and clenched his grip on the stake.

‘The hell am I doing for a single rat.’

But he had to go over.

Before that rat screwed things over.

<Tiamet. Haven’t you lived a bit too long? You will perish at his hands.>

‘Nonsense.’

Though his stamina was being gnawed away from the mana storm, the gap between him and that rat was still gargantuan.

Rumble!

Tiamet shook off Mudusella’s prophecy from his head and increased his speed even more.

To go over the mountain range had he had already reached.

Then.

Boooom!

A white human being started to fly up next to the almost vertical surface of the mountain range.

Rummmble!

A giant avalanche occurred.

---

Rumble.

Hansoo, who was shrouded in a seven-colored light, continued to push his way through the storm.

Through the frozen city.

‘There is no trace of life...’

Though he was prepared for the worse, there was nothing that caught his attention.

The giant buildings which seemed like they housed residents in the past were all devoid of any signs of life and all kinds of means of transportation were just laid out on the side of the roads.

But one never knew, anything could pop out from the shadows.



Hansoo quickly proceeded towards the giant tower while being on alert.

And in his head, constant nagging could be heard.

<Damned bastard. You really need to be thankful to me. Without me, you'd long been frozen dead.>

The spirit's words were indeed true.

The storm was getting stronger the closer he got to the tower.

Without the spirit, he'd long have frozen solid and died.

But Hansoo ignored the spirit's words as he continued forward.

Since this spirit had tried to take over his body by force.

At that moment.

Hansoo saw something strange.

'...What the.'

There was a strange space looking like a shop on the 1st floor of the building he was walking past.

There were tens of strange boxes neatly packed on top of each other inside it.

Though there still wasn't any signs of life, Hansoo was intrigued and was about to enter.

But then.

Rumble.

A faint noise entered Hansoo's alert ears.

Very faint.

Hansoo turned around towards the origin of the noise.

The noise was coming from the giant mountain range behind the fallen shipwreck.

And there was a huge avalanche coming down from the top of the mountain range.

Something like this shouldn't happen for no reason.

'...I thought he'd be working on traps and hostages, I never knew he'd come in person.'

Hansoo frowned as he thought of the person who was causing a natural disaster while approaching him.

Tiamet would see the fallen ship after going across the mountain range and would eventually find him.

They would need to fight.

Hansoo started to quickly calculate in his mind.

‘Do I have a chance?’

Though he had gained a spirit, he had never even dreamt of beating Tiamet in a battle.

Since that thing was a monstrosity in itself.

If they fought fairly then he would get shredded apart in mere few seconds.

‘But... That’s only if he’s in perfect condition.’

Tiamet had personally come.

For him to break the chains of the White Dragon Arena to move out, it stressed how urgent this entire thing was.

‘But he’s still a bit slow.’

Hansoo could tell Tiamet’s current speed due to the faint vibrations in the air.

If Tiamet was coming over with his original strength, he should’ve gone past the mountain range a long time ago.

But the fact that he was still climbing meant that he was being affected by this mana storm.

And it would only become worse after he climbed over.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

‘Worst case, I’ll fight him but...In a place where I hold the most advantage.’

Hansoo quickly started to move out towards the origin of the mana storm, the tower.

Even though Tiamet’s condition wasn’t top notch, there was still a huge difference between them.

It was best to avoid a fight but at this rate, he would need to approach the tower no matter what.

‘Fucking hell.’

Hansoo smiled bitterly as he sensed the aura of Tiamet slowly climbing the mountain range.

His original plan was not this.

Since he never even thought that Tiamet would leave the White Dragon Arena to fight him.

There was only one plan in the beginning.

<Use the Spirit Land as a safe zone to increase our strength and then go over to the next zone.>

Spirit Land.

A land of death where one would not be able to survive without the Protection Elixirs.

But there was another method to survive.

<Ain’s Blessing>

Their symbol which allowed them to somewhat hold the spirits.

The Protection Elixirs were just a byproduct of squeezing the Ains dry.

Once the Ains got inside the Spirit Land then the flow of Protection Elixirs would dry out which meant that the players outside would not be able to enter.

No matter how many there were, it was impossible to enter without the Protection Elixirs.

At that point they could just slowly gather their strength inside the Spirit Land and then move on over to the next zone.

Ally with the Ains to ensure safety, achieve the Spirit's strength through the symbol and then climb up.

This is what he and his friends, the final members of humanity, had planned regarding the Green Zone.

But for a monster inside the White Dragon Arena, who shouldn't have moved for anything, to come out in person.

<You will see enemies you have never seen before. The lion isn't interested in an ant but is indeed interested in a buffalo>.

Hansoo thought back to the words of Rahiman, one of his comrades, and laughed bitterly.

‘...I knew I’d suffer after coming back to the past but for it to be this much.’

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Hansoo thought to himself as he proceeded towards the tower.

There was a discussion he had with his friends.

Regarding what they would do if they returned to the past.

Of course rushing ahead of everybody was a sure thing.

The reason why they had been able to survive until the end was because they had that much potential and skill.

Hansoo remembered the excited faces of everyone as they talked about what they’d do.

Someone said they would establish a harem by gathering every beauty with their strength, another said they would help the weak with the strength.

Some said they would kill everyone who got in their way and another said that they would get stronger than anybody had ever been.

‘I...’

At that moment.

Hansoo stopped.

‘What was my plan?...’

As long as he was a human being, he had his own desires.

It would only be normal if he had something he wanted to do after coming back to the past.

Since this world was not a world where one could have no regrets and coming back to the past meant that he could fix all of them.

Creating an army by gathering humanity and rescuing his friends who were waiting above?

It was good enough to be a reason but it wasn't quite enough.

‘...There was something I wanted to do.’

It was clear he also had something he wanted to do.

Since his expression was very serious back then.



But he couldn't pinpoint what it was.

As he tried to think about it, his head started to ache.

And the noise Tiamet was making was becoming louder.

“Hooo.”

Hansoo breathed out.

‘This isn't the main priority right now.’

He needed to survive the fight first.

A single piece of missing memory wouldn't impact him in the fight.

The most important thing was that he was doing well.

If the memory was an important one then he would eventually remember it.

Hansoo started to run even faster towards the tall tower in the distance.

<What the hell is this kid...>

The spirit who had been sitting in the corner of Hansoo's mind mumbled quietly.

---

Rumble.

The apex of the mountain range exploded.

Then.

Tiamet stood on the top of the tremendously tall mountain range and looked down.

He never thought that he'd come back here.

Tiamet grasped Rangkom's Stake as he looked down at the now frozen city below his feet.

'I cannot let the immortals know about this place...'

Tiamet started to quickly search for Hansoo's traces.

The city was huge and even Tiamet couldn't sense every part of it but it wouldn't be hard.

‘There.’

Tiamet looked towards the fallen shipwreck below.

The hope of the humans to reach space.

Though it had lost its meaning now, it didn’t feel good to see it after having destroyed it by his own hands.

A tremendous amount of energy started to gather around Tiamet’s hands as he looked at the ship that was slowly repairing its outer walls.

‘No aura of life. But still, just in case...’

Boooooooooom!

The moment Tiamet raised Rangkom’s Stake and aimed at the ship.

A very faint shockwave was heard by Tiamet.

And Tiamet’s eyes quickly focused on the origin of the sound.

‘Found it.’

Tiamet smiled in a cold manner as he watched the small being who was madly running towards the tower.

He was almost at the tower.

But not quite there yet.

‘The ship...’

Crackle

Tiamet looked back and forth between his freezing body and the ship and then frowned.

Though he would be able to destroy the ship and catch the boy at the same time if he were at his peak condition, it was a bit too much for him now.

‘The rat first.’

Then.

Tiamet absorbed back the energy that was gathering on the stake and redirected it to his feet.

Booooooooooom!

Tiamet blew apart the top of the mountain range as he flew up into the air.

‘That’s as far as you go.’

Tiamet disappeared.

Rumble.

The avalanche slowly proceeded its way down towards the ship.

# Chapter 279 : Land From The Past (6)

---

‘Fuck. The pain...’

Hansoo grasped his head while charging towards the tower.

His previous attempt trying to remember the past had given him a headache and it was becoming worse by the second.

Well, it wasn’t really pain to be exact.

It was something screaming out from inside him.

To remember.

But he couldn’t, as if that part of his brain was damaged.

The spirit inside him pondered for a long moment and then spoke out suddenly.

<Hey. Are you perhaps...>

“Mm?”

As Hansoo answered the spirit’s words.

Rumble.

Sounds of explosions were heard behind him.

Sounds of space collapsing.

Hansoo released the hand that was grasping his head and then prepared himself.

‘It’s coming.’

Rummmblee.

Something was charging towards the tower with a destructive might.

<Woah!>

The moment the spirit felt that aura and exclaimed out.

Swoosh!

A white line charged towards Hansoo.

And Hansoo’s body prepared for the attack.



The Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement protected and enhanced his body.

He even forcefully used the Racial Metamorphosis, which was still cooling down, and covered his entire body with scales.

Three dragons instantly flew out from his heart and gathered on the tip of his spear.

Then, he thrust with his spear.

Boooooom!

A tremendous shockwave resonated out through the entire vicinity.

‘Ugh!’

Though he had blocked it, he hadn't done it perfectly.

If he hadn't used the Racial Metamorphosis then he would've been pushed back hundreds of meters underground.

The white line smashed through the Nine Dragons Spear and charged forward.

Crack. Crack.

The land beneath his feet broke apart and sank down.

His muscles were working as best as they could to prevent his arms from breaking.

His heart and the mana jade crazily pumped out blood and mana in order to reinforce his body as much as possible.

Chiiiiik!

The leftover energy from the collision heated up his entire body.

But even before Hansoo could completely deal with the collision.

Whoosh!

Something flew out through the blizzard and smashed down, a white stake.

A weapon that seemed it would not stand for even a second against the golden Forked Lightning.

But the moment they clashed.

Boooooom!

The Forked Lightning was deflected upwards as Hansoo's body made more cracking sounds and flew back.

And the white line continuously attacked Hansoo.

Boom!

Boooom!

Gold and silver lights collided and created numerous shockwaves that destroyed their surroundings.

Hansoo clenched his teeth while receiving these attacks.

His assumptions were mostly correct.

But not perfect.

‘He’s beyond my imaginations.’

His opponent had become extremely weak but not entirely from the mana storm.

Since it would be impossible for Hansoo to be able to remain standing otherwise.

But he easily figured out the reason.

‘It’s probably related to him being trapped inside the White Dragon Arena.’

The reason why Tiamet hated coming out from that place.

There must be something that was gnawing away at his strength alongside the mana storm.

But he was still this strong.

To the point of being able to push back Hansoo with ease.

Whooosh!

The red powder exploded out from Hansoo’s body and aimed for Tiamet’s body.

Mana wasn’t of importance right now.

He needed to use every skill he could.

The Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement’s dark golden light covered his entire body as the three dragons on the tip of his spear had increased to five.

Boom! Boom!

But the white light surrounding Tiamet's body was holding on against all of Hansoo's attacks.

And Hansoo clenched his spear as he looked at his opponent.

‘...Fucking hell.’

His opponent was crazy strong.

‘This... He would survive in the Abyss.’

Though he would be the weakest in the Abyss, for him to become this strong while the dimensions were locked was crazy.

And the more he fought the stronger his headache became.

‘My god. When did my speciality become bad luck?’

As Hansoo chuckled at the multiple unfavorable situations he was in.

“...?”

Hansoo made a confused expression at his opponent who had stopped attacking him.

‘Why did he stop?’

As Hansoo looked towards Tiamet who was looking back at him from the distance.

Tiamet was making an expression of disbelief while looking at Hansoo.

Well, towards the three kinds of auras surrounding Hansoo’s body.

“What the hell are you?”

He had felt it in the past.

But he had ignored it since it was impossible.

And mostly because he couldn’t tell the identity of the one who had attacked through the dimensional wall.

But it was different as he clashed against it right in front of his eyes.

“Where did you gain that?”

Tiamet kept his expression of disbelief as he attacked once more.

Tiamet's white line rushed towards Hansoo.

Boooooom!

“One person cannot have multiple skills of Anihilation.”

Tiamet mumbled as he looked at the three types of energy that had come out to stop his own attack.

The red clouds.

It in itself represented annihilation.

If a stronger person used it then destroying an entire world would be a joke.

The dragons on the tip of his spears.

The same for this.

Anybody who gained this could become an invincible being who can control the entire world.

It could easily rip apart the heavens and destroy the earth.

As well as the strange dark golden energy surrounding his body.

Though he didn't know which race it was mimicking, it should not be a simple one.

If his own race had tried to use their technology to take over the planet, then the race that energy was mimicking could easily control the entire planet with just their strength and even soar into space.

Every one of these were seeds created by ascendants.

This was why Tiamet couldn't believe Hansoo's status.

Skills of Annihilation.

It was skills that only those who have been born into transcendence, like himself, could gain after proving themselves.

And he himself was a bit away from gaining one as well.

There was one condition to gain it.

Fight until you get annihilated.

Or destroy the entire world and swallow it whole.

This was why they were called Skills of Annihilation.



A tremendous amount of strength that one could only gain after overcoming various trials both internally and externally.

Though the ones he had were mere seeds, their potential were immense.

A seed of something whose roots can cover the entire world and whose leaves and branches could shoulder the heavens.

But for him to have three.

There was a thing called a limit.

To raise three in a pot where even one seed didn't have enough room...

The pot will explode.

“You. Sooner or later you will destroy yourself. Or you are already being destroyed.”

Tiamet looked into Hansoo's eyes and mumbled.

---

Clank.

Clang.

In the vast lands of the Spirit Lands.

In the center of the flaming land which prevented the players from coming in, hundreds of thousands people held onto their weapons while glaring at one side of the Spirit Land.

“Fuck... Why are you doing this suddenly”

Enbi Arin gritted her teeth as she looked at the beings in front of her.

The Ains.

The Ains who had absorbed the energy from the Spirit Lands weren't lingering pieces of shadows anymore.

The Ains, who were now flaming or covered in arcs of lightning, had become unimaginably more powerful than before.

Though there were only a few thousand of them, each of them were radiating auras which were more powerful than that of Arthus Krancheska himself.

Cold sweat dripped in the backs of the adventurers.

‘Fuck... This is why the people of the Kingdoms didn’t like to go inside the Spirit Land.’

They should be happy that their allies, the Ains, had become stronger.

Since having a powerful ally was always welcome.

But the story changed.

The prophet standing in the front of the Ains, Mudusella, ignored Enbi Arin as she continued to speak.

And Karhal exploded out.

“Fuck! What do you mean! You just sent that Tiamet guy by himself freely and now you’re saying we can’t go help!? That powerful bastard is just crawling into his own grave!”

There was a reason why this had all occurred.

Right after Mudusella spoke to Tiamet.

Tiamet left and headed towards Hansoo.

And Mudusella returned afterwards just to suppress them with

the Ains.

Of course a fight happened.

Since Mudusella was the leader of the Ains and wanted to avoid a fight against a monster like Tiamet.

But the story was different.

The Ains held a favorable position beyond the mountain range and Tiamet was in a very unfavorable position.

Though they could not go over before they receive their spirits but it was the perfect chance for the Ains.

But instead Mudusella didn't have any thoughts of moving out and even suppressed them from acting out.

No matter how powerful Hansoo was and no matter how much of an unfavorable position Tiamet was in, nobody could imagine Hansoo actually winning the fight.

Since they saw Tiamet personally breaking apart the barrier created by the giant formation with just two strikes.

Various thoughts spun around the adventurer's heads.

Even more so since they saw Mudusella and Tiamet speaking with each other.

‘Fuck... What is she thinking?’

“If you aren’t going to move out then move! At least let us go and help!”

Enbi Arin couldn’t hold in back anymore against the silent Mudusella and exploded out.

It wasn't just for Hansoo.

The adventurers were feeling uneasy after witnessing Tiamet’s powers.

If that guy rushed into the Spirit Land then they would get annihilated.

And that man had walked into the most dangerous location possible for himself.

A perfect chance.

If they couldn’t kill the most powerful enemy they had in his weakest state, it would only arouse their unease further.

At that moment Mudusella quietly responded.

“Patience.”

“What?”

“Have some patience. It’s a very important phase.”

‘It’s not time for some weaklings like you to butt in.’

Mudusella looked towards the mountain range expressionlessly.

# Chapter 280 : Egg (1)

---

Rumble.

The shockwaves from the battle near the tower rang throughout the vicinity.

Even to the fallen ship in the distance.

Squirm.

And surprisingly, the ship had fixed the giant hole created from the strike it had received.

Since this place was filled with the spirit's energy.

The mana storm was dangerous to humans but it was an excellent energy supply to the spirits which were the main source of energy for the ship.

Oooooong!

The moment the ship finished fixing its outer wall.

Kiiiiing!

Faint blue light appeared outside the ship and started to protect

it.

The ship had restarted its shields after having restored itself completely.

Then.

Wooosh!

The coldness inside the ship disappeared quickly as the frozen colony returned to its original strength thanks to the spirits' energy.

The frozen lake melted as the trees sprouted new leaves.

A miraculous scene from just the simple supply of energy.

And the near-death colony was once again filled with life.

But that was it.

Ooooooong.

As the ship fixed itself, it had gone silent again as if it had done all it needed to.

Then.



A ray of golden light appeared in the corner of the quiet ship.

“Keheuk! Haa.. Haa!”

A few players breathed out heavily as they revived on the spot.

One even checked his own inventory and then sighed out in relief.

“Phew... I thought I died with with the Stone of Immortality. How lucky.”

They had rushed inside after seeing a hole had appeared from the strike but that was it.

The ice storm rushed into every corner of the ship.

They tried to hold on even by using master level skills but they could not hold on for long.

They died the moment their skills ended and had thought that they would die even after using the Stone of Immortality but thankfully the ship was recovered after they opened their eyes.

The players picked up the fallen artifacts near them and then smiled at each other.

“Well. The ones who got logged out are done... Let’s just search this treasure vault on our own.”

‘And it seems this thing can move as well.’

The players soon started to scatter throughout the ship.

---

Boooooooooom!

Shockwaves rang throughout the vast area under the tower.

In the midst of the white and dark golden lights clashing.

Tiamet silently observed Hansoo who had been blocking his attacks.

‘Not bad... Skills of Annihilation is indeed formidable.’

Once someone reached the level of Tiamet, they could see things that couldn’t be seen.

For example, he could see if a soul was injured.

But surprisingly, Hansoo’s soul was extremely sturdy and strong.

Too strong for somebody who lived in an ordinary plane for 20-30 years before coming here.

It was like the soul of a general who had gone through countless bloody battles over numerous decades.

A sphere which was tightly condensed like steel but still radiated a powerful aura.

This was the spirit of Hansoo that Tiamet had seen.

Well, it should be like that.

‘Yeah. It’s breaking of course.’

Tiamet smirked.

The steel sphere had numerous cracks running through it.

It wasn’t enough to break the entire thing but these deep cracks still ran throughout the entire sphere.

And it was because of those Skills of Annihilation.

These skills gave him a tremendous strength but that was it.

There was a price to be paid for strength that surpassed one's own limits.

Even if it was strength one didn't desire.

'For him to have strength beyond his abilities...'

Well, this probably didn't matter for Hansoo.

Since that wasn't the main issue right now.

Boooooom!

The white stake in Tiamet's hand started to act up crazily.

He had decided to destroy Hansoo.

And Hansoo frowned as he blocked off another white line.

He didn't understand Tiamet's actions and words.

He was getting destroyed?

And what did Tiamet mean when he asked where he had gotten his skills?

‘He should’ve seen tons of skills in his life... Is he talking about the Zero numberings?’

As Hansoo frowned.

Ooong.

Another wave of pain rang through his head.

‘Damn...’

Hansoo clenched his teeth at the sudden pain but this wasn’t what was important right now.

Since another white line was charging towards him.

Rumble!

These powerful attacks were making it hard for Hansoo to think.

‘I guess he’s done with dilly dallying.’

Tiamet’s attacks were getting more powerful by the second.

Boooom!

‘At this rate I’m going to just beaten down to death.’

Holding on was a torture in itself but the result of this battle was already decided.

He needed to find a way.

And at that moment something came into Hansoo’s eyes.

The giant tower that stood in the midst of the blizzard.

Boom!

Hansoo blocked off another attack and then turned around.

He needed to stake everything on whatever hope he could find.

Looking for a method to deal with a powerhouse in a barren land was not easy.

But Hansoo came back to his senses.

Even that seemed hard to do.

The attacks continued towards Hansoo who was backing off while swinging his Forked Lightning.

The moment he blocked it again.

Booom!

Hansoo's body flew back and smashed into the outer wall of the tower.

“Ugh...”

The fragments of the mysterious metal tower's outer wall dropped down as Hansoo's body fell to the ground.

And the blizzard started to enter the broken part of the tower.

A hole had appeared as the outer wall had been destroyed.

Hansoo got back up and looked inside.

He had a chance to go inside.

But he frowned as he looked inside the hole.

Because he realized something very important.

‘...There is no mana storm inside.’

He should not go in since he would just get destroyed in there without the mana storm suppressing Tiamet.

Even if there was something inside, he would get killed before reaching it.

And Tiamet slowly approached Hansoo.

“Keke. Why? Did you think something would be inside?”

If there was then he wouldn't have sent Hansoo flying this way.

The moment Tiamet himself had arrived.

Hansoo's death was destined.

‘I should just finish him off here and clean...’

At that moment.

Ooong.

‘Ugh.’

Tiamet frowned at the sudden pain that rose up from the corner



of his heart.

Something was raging near his heart.

A formidable strength even he could not easily suppress.

Tiamet frowned as he looked at the man who was standing against him.

‘There wasn’t much time left until I could’ve become a dragon but...Because of this damned brat...’

A secret of the world which somebody had told him a thousand years ago.

<You...Do you know about the transcendent abilities? They’re also called Skills of Annihilation.>

The shocking facts he had heard from him.

That there wasn’t only one world and that countless events that surpassed human logic were happening.

And that some people had risen above the limits of the world, became transcendents and went to a more suitable world.

At that moment.

He had started to dream.

Dragon.

A transcendent creature.

A perfect lifeform he had dreamt of.

He had wanted to become a dragon.

Not just imitating a dragon but becoming a true dragon.

So he had started a huge project which even he didn't know how long it would take to finish.

But there was a limit to his own strength.

The limit this world had set upon everyone.

He hadn't reached it but he could feel it.

So he had gone into the preparation of to become a transcendent.

He created the White Dragon Arena to collect the energy from a mana node and carefully absorbed that strength through

Rangkom's Stake.

And whilst he collected this strength carefully within his body, he used the White Dragon Arena and Rangkom's Stake to suppress it.

Since it would all go to waste if this strength went crazy before he made his way to break the wall.

And after a thousand years.

He could see the end.

The moment he would break out from the egg of the White Dragon Arena and become a legendary dragon.

Squirm.

Even now, there was a tremendous amount of power sleeping next to his heart.

Strength which could flip the entire world upside down.

So powerful to the point where he didn't know how to use it and could only suppress it.

He had collected this strength for one purpose and if he had

collected a bit more then he would've become a transcendent.

But he had come out from the egg before it had stabilized.

And thanks to this the power within himself was enraged and was gnawing away at his own strength.

In order to suppress this power and prepare then another few centuries would be needed.

Crackle.

Harsh sounds of teeth rubbing against each other came out from his mouth.

‘Because of one bastard...’

He was enraged.

He couldn't just kill him.

Since death was too good for this guy.

A sinister smile appeared on Tiamet's face.

Tiamet spoke out.

“I don’t really know if you treat the ones you brought as tools or actually care about them.”

He had lived for a thousand years and seen a lot of things, he still couldn’t tell a person’s mind.

He didn’t know if Hansoo was ruthless or was full of justice.

But that wasn’t important.

Since there was only one important thing.

“But... There should at least be one person you should care about. I’ll kill them all because of you.”

No matter how cold one was, there should at least be one person who they cared about.

The moment he dealt with the current situation.

He was going to kill them all.

And not leave behind a single person.

Adventurers who had come and those who would come in the future as well.

‘And you... Need to watch all of this.’

As Tiamet smiled coldly.

Hansoo frowned.

Not from the threat but because of the deepened pain.

Oong. Ooong.

The pain inside his head was become stronger by the second.

As if the pain before was a joke.

Something was constantly stimulating him inside him.

And his heartbeat got harsher along with the pain.

The moment his heartbeat and the pain reached the apex.

Pop.

The sound of something blowing up was heard from his head.

‘...What?’

Tiamet frowned as he looked at Hansoo who froze on the spot.

# Chapter 281 : Egg (2)

---

Ooooong.

In a dark space.

Hansoo, who had been clenching his teeth because of the pain, opened his eyes.

‘Where...’

Hansoo looked around the space within his conscious after sensing that the pain had disappeared.

He had been inside his conscious numerous times before.

A vast white space.

But he had never been in a place like this before.

Strange lights and darkness filled up the entire surroundings.

Like watching a movie, there were countless silhouettes of people all around him.

Familiar faces.



But this space was not simple.

There were countless cracks within the world filled with light, darkness and countless scenes.

As if somebody had gone through it with a sharp blade.

And Hansoo finally realized what was in front of his eyes.

‘...Memories? Why did I come here?’

There should be a reason why he would’ve been dragged in here.

As Hansoo made a confused expression.

A loud voice was heard by him.

<I called you here. Damn...How did you survive like this.>

Because their consciousness had merged, wherever his own conscious was the spirit existed as well.

The spirit came in with Hansoo and then tutted while looking around.

A soul which had countless cracks running through it.

As well as these memory fragments.

‘He used too much power, beyond his own limits.’

The spirit shook its head as he checked Hansoo’s recent feats through the phasing memories.

Maybe if it was the spirit himself but the humans were not creatures created for battle.

They needed to rest when they got tired and needed supplements when things were lacking.

But this guy was different.

Battle. Battle. And more battles.

He raised his strength and wrought out his body.

He was continuously clashing as he proceeded forward.

And the spirit made an expression of disbelief as it looked at these memory fragments.

‘Unbelievable.’

It knew a bit about the humans since it was created by them.

Humans could not proceed like this even if their objectives were clear, they lacked momentum.

Since they were designed to chase after happiness and joy.

Even if their objectives were clear, if the current situation was different then they would go around it and try to reduce the risk as much as they can by preparing for it.

This was human nature.

But this damned maniac went into battle as soon as he saw any chance of success.

While sacrificing his own soul and body.

All while planting multiple seeds of annihilation in his body and raising them.

If he slowly raised his strength then he might've been able to use them all with ease.

But he had gone too far in too short of a time.

To the point of cracks appearing on his enormously powerful

soul and his body being damaged.

The body could just be healed but the soul, which was the basis of everyone's existence, was different.

‘...At this rate, he'll utterly be destroyed.’

The spirit fell silent as it watched Hansoo.

Some might say he was a hero but this was just a retard in its eyes.

Since heroes at least had some complacency inside them.

This was just a machine.

A machine with an issue.

A broken train that was constantly charging through and not knowing that its own engine was being destroyed.

‘He shouldn't have been like this from the beginning. Strange.’

It had glanced at its memories but only the past few months.

The moment the spirit was about to look into the cracked space in more detail.

Rumble.

The space trembled.

His strength was not sufficient and could not stay here too long.

‘I guess I just need to deal with the main issue quickly.’

It wouldn’t last long.

The spirit collected its thoughts and spoke to Hansoo.

<At this rate, you’ll break apart. This is why I called you.>

Hansoo’s soul and conscious was its own.

Though it didn’t like Hansoo, it didn’t want mutual destruction.

And it had a very good method for itself.

As well as Hansoo.

The spirit spoke to Hansoo.

<Originally, you do not have the qualifications to control us. Only the enhanced race has the right.>

“Enhanced race?”

The spirit nodded.

<According to your memories, you call them the Ains. Those are the enhanced race.>

“...Enhanced race.”

As Hansoo was about to ask, the spirit cut him off.

<That’s not important right now. The only important thing right now is that at this rate either your soul or body will break. Since you are lacking in strength.>

Hansoo nodded.

He knew he was in a disadvantageous position.

And the spirit spoke to Hansoo.

<But...There is a method.>

“What is it?”

<Fusion.>

The reason why Hansoo wasn't able to use it properly was partly because it didn't like him but because they weren't very compatible with each other.

They were created to be wielded by the enhanced race.

Even if Hansoo had the racial code, this was just permission.

Only after they resonated through a long period of sharing their soul would they be able to let out a much more powerful might.

But there was no time.

So it needed to forcibly attempt something.

Hansoo frowned at these words.

“If there was such a method then why are you telling it to me now?”

The spirit frowned.

<Since one of us would be destroyed if this succeeds.>

The reason why they couldn't fuse was because both sides didn't want to lose out to each other.

It was called fusion, but it was actually a battle for ownership.

With their soul and mind at stake.

The spirit grinded its teeth and muttered.

<Damn... I don't want to go through such a risk as well. I've finally come out after such a long time.>

It might win and it might lose.

But the loser would be annihilated.

They would be able to survive well together so who would go through this?

The spirit did not want to do this.

But there was no choice anymore.

The spirit spoke to Hansoo.

<At this rate, both of us will die out. I'm sure you don't want to die either? So risk it. If I win then your mind will disappear. On



the other hand, if you win then my mind will disappear and all my power will go over to you.>

Though the spirit had been pushed back earlier when they fought in their minds, it had no relationship with the outcome of the fusion.

Since it was a battle between the souls to determine who was more suitable for this body.

‘And...If he has cracks in his soul then there’s a chance for me to succeed.’

There was a reason why the spirit had called Hansoo here.

If Hansoo’s soul was still intact and powerful then it would’ve tried to hold on to the end.

Since a sure loss was the same as a meaningless death.

But it had a chance.

No, it was actually high.

‘You... Wouldn’t be able to pass this up either.’

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then spoke.

“Even if one of us wins, it would be hard to beat Tiamet.”

The spirit was indeed strong.

But it would just give him another level of strength.

Just as the Mana Jade or the Body Enhancement Surgery.

<Did you forget what's next to us? If you can use my strength properly then you can use the strength of the tower.>

“Mmm.”

Hansoo nodded.

The tower's mana storm that even Tiamet was barely holding back against.

If he could use this strength then he could easily deal with the situation outside.

“Sure. Let's go.”

<Put your hand here.>

Hansoo raised his right hand as he saw the spirit raise its own right hand.

The moment they touched.

Kiiing.

The sensation of something mixing could be felt.

The other party's thoughts and emotions.

'Well, it wasn't a lie at least.'

As Hansoo mumbled.

The spirit continued to speak.

<There isn't much for you to do during the process. But you won't be bored. Kekeke.>

"Won't be bored...Huh."

The spirit chuckled.

<We'll be able to see each other's memories. It won't be long. Everything fell into ruin not long after I was born you see. So... Observe well. I'll have fun watching as well.>

‘Not long after it was born?’

The moment the spirit’s words ended.

Whoosh.

Hansoo’s mind got dragged into an unknown space.

Into the spirit’s mind.

---

Rumble.

‘Where...’

Hansoo muttered to himself as he looked around.

Though his consciousness existed, it was in a different place.

‘...It’s the spirit’s memories huh.’

He could feel his own form inside a 5m wide flask that was shining in seven colored lights.

The memory of when the spirit had been born.

<Woah. You made me? Greetings.>

Hansoo could feel the voice of the spirit speaking to those standing outside the flask.

He could not control the spirit's body or anything.

Just observe.

But he could still use the spirit's perceptions and look outside.

There were constant machine noises coming out from the countless panels outside.

[Synchronization... 98%]

[Probability of success integrating with enhanced race...99.8%]

[Beginning immediate fusion with the enhanced race.]

At the same time.

<Hahaha! How exciting!>

The spirit screamed as it got sucked into the tube above the flask and headed towards a different location.

Along with Hansoo.

Whooosh.

It didn't take long either.

Since the body of the spirit was sucked into a location.

A similar sensation of when he had come into its own body.

And Hansoo could guess what had happened.

'It fused with the Ain.'

Hansoo then realized why it was so discontent.

<Keke. You're my owner huh. Hi. Wow. It's really comfortable. I don't really want to leave at all.>

'It's so different.'

Hansoo thought to himself while listening to the spirit's mumbles.

The body of the Ain where the spirit was in right now was dimensions apart from his own.

They fused perfectly as if the body itself was made for the spirit.

Like finding the other half of their soul.

And the fusion of the two souls which was so hard for himself had been completed in an instant.

It only took an instant.

Then.

Whooooosh.

Hansoo could feel a familiar sensation.

“You’re my partner huh. Hi. I’m called... MSL-17. I’ll be in your care from now on.”

<Keke. MSL-17. I don’t know what it means but I like you. Greetings.>

A huge glass panel could be seen in front of him.

And Hansoo realized where he was.

‘The top of the tower.’

At the top of the tower that he was next to.

And below his feet, the forest of cities he had seen before spread out.

Buildings that were kilometers high.

And hundreds of thousands of transportation vehicles could be seen throughout.

‘So this is what it looked like before it froze...’

In the midst of the futuristic city that was dimensions apart from the frozen city.

Hansoo even saw the face of the Ain who had become the spirit’s owner from the mirror’s reflection.

A beautiful and lovely woman with flowing golden hair.

“Can you see? The people below...Those are the people we need



to care for from now on.”

And Hansoo had seen this woman before.

‘Mudusella. So you were the previous owner of this spirit. But it said everything fell into ruin not long after it was born.’

1000 years in the past.

Hansoo looked back and forth between the beautiful woman’s reflection on the glass and the shining city below as he muttered to himself.

# Chapter 282 : Train Headed To Destruction (1)

---

Rumble.

It had been a day since he had come here.

And Hansoo felt a little suffocated inside the walking Mudusella.

‘Ugh. Since I can’t move according to my will...’

Where Mudusella walked and saw.

Whatever she touched and felt.

This was the limit of Hansoo’s perception.

Thankfully there was a lot to see.

‘Amazing.’

Hansoo looked out through the window along with Mudusella at the world.

She wasn’t looking at the city.

But above it.

A giant sphere surrounding the city.

And outside this sphere.

Whooooosh!

Rummmble!

A tremendous snow storm was raging throughout.

There was not a single trace of sunlight due to the grey clouds.

The thing that determined day and night in this giant city wasn't the sun but rather a giant artificial orb on the top of the tower.

And below the artificial sunlight.

Somebody walked towards Mudusella.

The person, who was wearing a fancy uniform, spoke to Mudusella with an air of arrogance.

“MSL. There's no time for you to laze around here, there isn't much time left until the move.”

“...I was just looking outside the window. Since I won’t be able to see this anymore.”

At these words the man in the uniform, rank 1 citizen Akamel, smirked.

MSL-17, Mudusella, saw Akamel’s expression and just continued to walk.

She understood his actions.

But the one who was enraged was the spirit instead.

<That fucking bastard! People who would just die out without us! It’s not even like he made us...>

The spirit realized something then quickly quieted down.

Created beings.

There wasn’t a clearer word to describe them but it was still a bit off to call themselves like this.

And Mudusella smiled at the spirit’s words.

“It’s ok. You didn’t say anything wrong.”

They, the enhanced race, had all been created.

For a single objective.

In order to control the artificial energy system, code name <Spirit>, created by the genius researcher <Nepallem> efficiently.

The previous methods were not enough to move limited amounts of energy in an efficient manner.

The energy needed sentience to control its own movements.

Not a single bit could be wasted.

Especially in a world like this where everything was lacking.

Whooooosh!

Mudusella, who had been staring at the storm outside the barrier, asked Akamel.

“Do we still have contact with the other cities?”

“Why do you ask?”

As Akamel replied bluntly, Mudusella continued expressionlessly.

“Shouldn’t we at least know each other’s conditions when we’re all sharing the energy of the node? If it runs dry then we’re in big trouble.”

A river of energy that brought new hopes to humanity.

Energy nodes.

And this was the strength that had taken humanity to the brink of extinction.

Humans yearned for more energy and thus they pried open every bit of space where the node passed by.

And the result was this.

The node had overloaded and the entire world flipped upside down.

Volcanos erupted as the mantle below the surface flipped and in worse cases, continents broke off.

Endless amounts of hail plummeted down from the skies to cover over half of the entire Earth as the volcanic ash quickly covered the skies.

The entire planet got covered in darkness and the 2nd alternative energy source, the solar energy, was nowhere to be found.

Then the long ice age came.

But thankfully there was still a ray of hope.

A giant tower stood in the spot where the energy of the node could still be used.

<Obelisk>.

The tower that acted as the last line of defense of humanity against the harsh environment.

They created a shield by using the node's energy, supplied humans with the energy needed for their daily lives as well as maintained the artificial sun.

The glorious city below could not survive a single day without this Obelisk.

And they, the MSLs, had been born to use the node's energy as efficiently as possible by using the spirit's energies.

Akamel frowned at MSL's words.

‘Imputent. How dare it retort when it’s just a creation.’

But the level of MSL was not something even Akamel, a 1st grade citizen, could act rashly in front of.

The MSL series was one of the two series that had the greatest abilities out of all the enhanced race.

Nepallem had personally put more effort in order to create just 100 of them.

‘Tsk.’

Akamel smirked as he replied.

“They’re doing the preparations well. Anyway, you guys need to do things properly. We need to maintain as much energy as we can before we go over to the new planet.”

“...Understood.”

MSL-17, Mudusella, looked towards the mountain range.

Towards where the spaceship would be being built, beyond it.

Sooner or later the node will run dry.



So they needed to go over to a new planet.

The planet they had found, named Tiamet.

‘How long can we hold on?’

Rooooarr.

She mumbled quietly as she stared at the ash-colored storm outside the city.

---

Mudusella parted from the 1st grade citizen and headed up the tower.

And the spirit, who had just been born recently, was extremely curious about everything as it continuously threw questions at Mudusella.

<Hey. Why aren't we living outside the tower down below? It seems there's a lot of fun things there.>

The city below the tower was shining with various colored lights.

As if it was alluring the one looking.

Its title of being the final sanctuary of the humans didn't quite fit it as various media panels and commercials swarmed throughout the city and were more than enough to arouse the spirit's attention.

It was not a city which seemed like it was lacking in energy.

Mudusella smiled as she replied.

“Only 1st grade citizens can reside there. Even if the buildings are large and there are a lot of them... They are as numerous as well.”

Their population had been around 70 billion.

And they had run away from the armageddon of the world towards the Obelisk from various cities all over the world.

Though about 80% of the people had been killed off during the exodus, there was still a huge amount of people remaining.

This city alone held about 380 million people.

‘Too many.’

No matter how wide the city was, there were too many people for them to all live <Happily>.

So in the outside zone where one can live in the most <Humane> way, only the 80 million or so 1st grade citizens could live there.

People who were determined to have necessary abilities or skills towards the survival of the humankind.

‘Everybody would be able to live in a much better condition if the 1st grade citizens were a bit more frugal but...It doesn’t matter with me.’

Power and rights were the issues of the humans.

For them, the enhanced race, this didn’t really matter.

Muduella turned away from the mirror to head in deeper into the tower and the spirit asked dejectedly.

<You’re going back already? There’s almost 10 minutes left.>

Mudusella nodded.

“Time to work now. The time given to me has ended. If I don’t go then my sisters will suffer.”

They, the enhanced race, didn’t need to sleep so they needed to constantly work other than the few meager breaks they received.

They were given 2 hours of rest a day.

The rest time that was created for them because some thought they also needed some rights was always a bit too short.

There was never enough energy so the MSL series and various other kinds who needed to deal with the energy efficiently needed to constantly work.

For the benefit of the countless humans here.

Though most of the 1st grade citizens went on to say that these 'creations' didn't need any rights but sadly for them, Nepallem was the one who had suggested it.

The opinions of others would be crushed apart with ease but not Nepallem's.

The savior of humankind who had created the spirits and the enhanced race that was currently keeping the humans alive.

So the 1st grade citizens could only accept the rest time of the enhanced race.

<Fucking bastards. Look how much they boss us around when we don't even get paid for all this.>

“Well, it’s not like we need it. It’s not like we need to eat or enjoy ourselves.”

They were the enhanced race.

Though they were created from the humans as the basis, various unnecessary wants had been greatly suppressed.

Since greed would always create unknown variables.

And there was the chipset behind the necks of them implanted by the 1st grade citizens.

‘Humans... They fear too many things all the time. Did this environment make them like this?’

Mudusella had already reached her workplace while having various thoughts.

A huge area in the center of the tower.

Though it was only about 5m tall, this place was multiple times bigger than a sports field.

Mudusella walked across the glass floor that gave the impression of levitating while crossing it.

Kiiiing.

Ooong.

There was a single glass cell in the midst of various bright and beautiful lines in the ground.

It looked like a coffin or even a jail cell but this beautiful glass cell was the location where Mudusella, MSL-17, spent 22 hours of her day.

Oooooooooong.

As Mudusella moved into it.

The entire energy flow of the tower came into Mudusella's perception.

The tremendous amount of energy that kept the the 380 million people of the city alive.

Kiiiing!

<Ahh! I'm getting drunk!>

The spirit, which had been grumbling the whole time, started to control the flowing energy.

Soon.

Kiiiiiiing!

Part of the energy flowing through the tower came under the control of Mudusella and the spirit as they started to move the energy towards one place.

Though it was called working, it wasn't very hard.

Since it was basically instinctual to them who were literally created to do this job.

The spirit felt the tremendous amount of energy flowing through its senses as it mumbled.

<Damn, that Nepallem or something is really amazing, he even made this?>

There were about 50 thousand of the enhanced race within this place.

They had been placed in various locations within the tower and the city in order to use the energy of the city efficiently.

From the small lights all over the city to the entire power grid of the city.

But they, the MSL, had been created for an even more important task.

The epitome of the enhanced race.

The very core of the system that the humans used.

<Mudusella System>

The MSL series, the 98 sisters, had been born to manage the Mudusella system.

Only for this purpose.

And below Mudusella's feet.

Below the giant glass floor.

Millions of glass tubes were located throughout the tower.

Exactly 19 942 124.

And inside it.

'Are they..., Happy?'



They, the core part of the Mudusella system.

Mudusella made a happy expression as she looked at the 20 million or so third-grade citizens and mumbled.

But then.

“You’re still lost in unnecessary emotions, how long are you going to keep those alive I wonder.”

Somebody spoke to Mudusella from outside.

Someone whom even Hansoo was familiar with.

‘Tiamet.’

But he was different from the Tiamet he knew.

As Hansoo looked at the strangely different Tiamet from a thousand years ago, Mudusella was doing the same.

‘TMT-17.’

Though he was born as her mate, she never knew what he was thinking about.

Mudusella looked at TMT-17 with a worried expression.

# Chapter 283 : Train Headed To Destruction (2)

---

During the early days of year 2100.

Humans were confident.

Space.

Deep sea.

Illnesses.

Death.

Various other mysteries.

Humans had overcome countless things they had been afraid of and had thought that they had succeeded.

There was not a single disease they could not cure and humans had already been able to live past 300 with ease.

The entire surface of the planet, including the seas, had become the human's territory a long time ago.

They hadn't planned colonies yet because their planet was so big but they already had great technologies regarding space flight and countless humans had already gone off to dozens of planets, including Tiamet, for terraforming and other research.

But then.

The energy node had been found.

Not a machine but a strange energy flow that used the human's bodies as the basis.

Different from the fossil fuels, solar energy and nuclear energy the humans had been using up until now.

The power the humans had built upon so far was so they could control and go against nature.

They created medicine to rule over the disease and made facilities to increase their lifespans.

They made spaceships for space and huge oceanic cities to rule over the seas.

But this was different.

A strength which made the humans themselves strong.

They could swim around the depths of the sea with ease and no illness would harm them.

Their lifespans would increase the more they stacked it inside their bodies and it allowed them to smash apart steel with brute force.

Of course humans, overcome by their greed for this new strength, started to devour this new type of energy.

And Nepallem stood in the lead.

But humans overestimated their own abilities and underestimated their own greed.

Due to this, the node blew apart and the humans had been pushed to the brink of extinction.

Then they finally realized.

That they couldn't control every single situation with their own intellect.

And so it had started.

The thing the humans had been most afraid of and as a result hadn't took over yet.

The great system that had been created to suppress the greed of humans.

The symbol of their innermost fear.

<Mudusella System>.

And the thing needed for it was a spirit that could efficiently control energy and manage the system.

And...

---

Rumble.

Mudusella spoke to the man who had appeared in front of her.

The man who had appeared covered in white light.

“TMT-17. It’s been a while.”

Hansoo made a shocked expression as he looked at the man Mudusella greeted.

‘..Tiamet. Was he an Ain?’

The Tiamet in front of him had the same form as Tiamet a thousand years from now on.

But the aura of a spirit could clearly be felt.

The man called TMT-17 that clearly had the trait of an Ain spoke to Mudusella.

“Can you not put that damn number in the back? I just call you Mudusella as well. We’re going to be on the same ship, let’s drop some formalities at least.”

“I don’t think it’s right to call me by the system’s name just because I manage the system.”

TMT-17 just shrugged his shoulders.

TMT series.

The series with the codename Tiamet was one of the top two series along with the MSL series.

Of course their objectives were different.

Though they both used spirits to control the energy, their reason for their creation was clearly different.

If the Mudusellas were created to manage the Mudusella system that provided humans with the good environment.

Then the Tiamets were created to get rid the various variables and dangers that may come in the way of humans.

So their name was Tiamet.

Those who would protect the humans in the unknown planet Tiamet which was filled with dangers.

TMT-17 looked at the countless glass tubes below and smirked.

“I’m playing guard here but doing the same thing in that damn ship. I’ve got a lot of work to do. I even have to look after those beanheads.”

“...That’s our job.”

“No. It’s your job. My work is to kill and smash things apart.”

“...”

Whilst Mudusella made a disgusted expression.

Oooooong.



With a strange noise, an announcement was made in the entire area of the <Obelisk> Mudusella was in charge of.

[In 15 seconds, 3rd grade citizens shall be released into the area of MSL-17]

[Underground residence... Beginning energy supply.]

[To conserve energy, it will only be open from 11:00 to 13:00 today.]

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The millions of tubes below Mudusella started to move around.

Down.

At the same time.

Lights came on below the giant tower.

Tiamet shrugged as he looked at this scene.

“It’ll become busy now. I’ll move away for now then. Have fun.”

“...I won’t be able to see you off.”

‘Really annoying.’

The spirit spoke towards Mudusella within the silence excitedly.

<Can you rest since it’s empty now? The people who manage you all went to take a break.>

But Mudusella shook her head.

Like Tiamet said, it would only get busier.

Then, an order came through the chipset.

From the Akamel she had seen before.

<Mudusella. Apparently the Mudusella System let out the 3rd grade citizens. Since there’s a bit of room within the system...Calculate quickly.>

The orders of Akamel had a hint of maliciousness as well as a bit of expectation.

The Mudusella System didn’t go on break when the humans did.

It was the opposite.

When the 3rd grade citizens are released was the time the Mudusella system performed its most important task.

As Mudusella breathed in and out.

Boooooom!

A giant sphere above Mudusella's head started to spin whilst letting out bright red lights in all directions.

---

Underground residence.

Kiiiiiiing!

With the enhanced race's energy control, the frozen residences started to come back to live.

Light filled up the wide area as the flowers, trees and lakes beside the apartments started to brim with life.

And from the 500m wide tower in the center.

Chiiiiiiiik!

The glass tube started to open in order to descend.

And white gas came out from these tubes.

“Ugh! So stiff!”

“Are you sure this keeps us in top condition?”

“Woah! 5 days have gone past already!”

People started to appear one after another.

And they started to chatter loudly as they started to check on their bodies and their surroundings.

And soon sounds of complaints could be heard.

“Damn. Can’t we just live back there?”

“Fuck! We were just about to kill the Red Lava Lizard!”

“Ugh...Walking after having flown for so long, I really can’t get used to it.”

And there was an existence who was smirking at these people.

‘Useless.’

From the highest point of the residential areas.

Tiamet smirked as he looked down.

People who had run away from reality.

People who agreed that it didn't need to be reality as long as they were satisfied.

There were no better than livestock.

A virtual world that was created for those who had decided to give up on changing reality and had ran away.

'Was it called... Exodus? What a nice name. Anyways, that Nepallem guy is amazing. He even found a use for these useless things.'

Tiamet thought up of the virtual world created from the Mudusella system and then smirked.

But then, a girl came out from between the people.

'...Astania.'

Tiamet mumbled the name of the female in the distance in a

daze.

At that moment

Splat!

“How dare you come here!”

“You’re just an obedient dog.”

‘...Damned bastards.’

Tiamet frowned inwardly at the citizens who had thrown eggs by his feet.

---

“Mmm...This is making this complicated.”

“Huh? What do you mean?”

Akamel asked in confusion as the man who he had been talking to suddenly mumbled.

There weren’t many who can ignore Akamel.

But the man in front of him was an exception.

This man was special even out of special people.

The man whom Akamel had been talking to, Nepallem, started to frown.

“Well. One TMT is looking for a fight in the underground residential areas.”

Akamel made a shocked expression.

‘This bastard...Why is he over there...’

It would know what would happen once it walked in the crowds of people, why did it go there.

‘Damn. This is why it’s always better to get rid of their rights and just use them like dogs. Why did he give them free movement...’

He liked neither the enhanced race nor the 3rd grade citizens.

‘Or maybe we should just treat them like the 2nd grade citizens....’

As Akamel mumbled with a cold expression.

Nepallem got up and started to head somewhere.



“Where are you going?”

“I’m going to go have a look.”

And this shocked Akamel.

Though he knew that Nepallem was a hero and a famous being, why would he still go there.

“Just leave them, we’ll deal with them. Just focus on the plan this time around please.”

There was a reason why Akamel was annoyed.

There was so many things Nepallem had to do, why did he have to bother with such a menial task?

‘And...It’s tomorrow.’

In a situation where not a single mistake is allowed, for him to go see one man.

Nepallem chuckled as he shook his head.

“There’s a reason why I’m going. He’s... Really special.”

“...?”

‘He’s different from the other TMT series?’

Akamel looked at Nepallem in confusion but Nepallem just headed down.

And Akamel clenched his teeth at this scene.

‘Fuck. I don’t like any of these bastards.’

Akamel thought for a moment then just shook his head.

Their plan was basically complete anyway.

It would succeed without Nepallem anyway.

Akamel started to send messages with a stern expression.

“Begin.”

Soon.

The topmost floor of the Obelisk started to get busy.

# Chapter 284 : Train Headed To Destruction

## (3)

---

Around the time when the nodes blew apart and pushed humans into the brink of extinction.

The 1st grade citizens, who were the first ones to have successfully run away to the city with the Obelisk, quickly went into a discussion on how to proceed from this point onward.

About how to deal with the 2nd and 3rd grade citizens who were swarming towards the city.

But surprisingly they quickly came to a consensus despite the situation they were in.

<The surviving members of humankind have a job to calm down the rest of the people and protect them!>

<But we don't know how long it will take until we can obtain a completely safe environment for them all. We cannot waste the limited resources and the energy of the node.>

<Us 1st grade citizens are enough to lead humankind.>

<It's a much wiser choice to focus the resources onto us who are genetically and educationally superior!>

They didn't know how much energy there was left in the node and the situation outside was horrendous.

If they also had to accommodate the 2nd and 3rd grade citizens as well then the resources they had would drain at a rate five times greater than if the node was just supporting them, the 1st grade citizens, alone.

10 years worth of resources gone in 2 and 50 years worth gone in 10.

In a situation where they didn't know the approximate time it would take to finish their preparations, nobody wanted to risk the resources they had like this.

And it wasn't hard to control the others.

Since the existing enhanced race members were extremely powerful on their own.

Though they weren't made for war, if they fought with the spirits then their might easily surpassed that of the army.

And almost all of the control rights over the enhanced race belonged to the 1st grade citizens.

They just needed to control the obelisk with these and then chase the others away.

But then.

<Haha! Everyone. Why are you so shortsighted?>

<...Nepallem.>

Everyone quieted down at the words of one man.

They had to.

Since this man wasn't ordinary.

The savior of humankind.

He researched the energy nodes to create the spirits and then successfully made the enhanced race, an almost god-like engineer amidst them.

Nepallem.

Though there wasn't a rank above the 1st grade citizens, Nepallem was a resource that was so precious to them that he was widely perceived to be a VIP citizen.

If they had to vote on the one person to save out of their 8000 then almost every vote would easily go over to this man, a genius

of geniuses.

Nepallem smiled as he continued to speak.

<What led to the current situation was not within our control. But we shouldn't make mistakes from this point onwards right?>

<...How do we not make mistakes?>

<Easy. We just need to control every possible variable.>

Then one of the 1st grade citizens shouted in shock.

<Are those even words doctor? We cannot control every variable nor could we see the future. We've come all the way to this point because we had to treat those unlearned 2nd and 3rd grade citizens as people and had to fulfill their desires!>

Around year 2050, there was a suggestion that everyone should get a chipset implanted behind their neck for the greater advancement of the humankind.

Of course this was met with a flood of resistance.

It was clear it would be used to control them.

<Every citizen must have equal rights!>

A tremendous amount of fighting occurred to the point of a civil war breaking out when the 1st grade citizens and higher elites of the community finally realized that they had much more to lose.>

But if they knew this would happen then the 1st grade citizens would've gone through the war to implant the chipsets in the necks of the 2nd and 3rd grade citizens.

Unlike the 1st grade citizens who meticulously planned and carefully used the energy nodes to in an efficient way and avoiding the possible dangers that the node could bring them, the 2nd and 3rd grade citizens thought that the 1st grade citizens were trying to monopolize this strength and poked around into every node they could find.

In order to gain the strength from that power and perhaps even use it to gain the upper hand against the 1st grade citizens.

And because they had failed in controlling this power, the nodes blew apart.

But for them to use up their own resources to let these people into the city?

These 3rd grade citizens were basically useless to them when the enhanced race provided them with power and various other utilities.

<They aren't useless. I assure you. They... Can solve the problem that you are most afraid of.>

---

Booom!

As the giant sphere spun and let out a red light.

A tremendous pressure started to appear inside Mudusella's head.

Pressure to control the huge and complex Mudusella system.

“Ugh...”

And Mudusella wasn't the only one who was groaning.

<Kuuhuuuk!>

The spirit also screamed out from the strain it was receiving.

A tremendous amount of energy which couldn't even be compared to the amount before flooded into her.

And she knew instinctively.



That she needed to be much more meticulous starting from this point.

This was the core ability of the Mudusella system.

[Prediction]

It calculated every possible variable and every action possible to figure out the best plan.

The final torch that would show the road to humanity's future.

While Mudusella and the spirit were screaming, the system above Mudusella's head continued its calculations and around the time the sphere stopped spinning...

"Ugh..."

<Kuhuk...Ahhh!>

Mudusella was finally freed from the torrential amounts of information that flooded her head and moaned out loud as she slumped over.

But the moment she was done, Akamel's words flowed into her head.

[If you're done with the calculations then report the results. Tell us what the success chances of the plan is this time around.]

As long as the node was using large amounts of energy to protect this city from the giant storm, the node would soon dry up.

The plan to move to the new planet must succeed no matter what.

If not then there was no future for the humans left.

And the calculation that the Musella System had just done was in order to determine the success rate for this plan.

Mudusella gasped for breath as she started to send over the data.

And Akamel read over the data on the chipset as he made a satisfied expression.

[Nice. Good. Good. MSL-17, continue to calm down the system. Man... Why is it set up to cool down for 2 hours after only 5 minutes of working. Nepallem should just focus on this system that can predict the future, why does he give a damn about the rights of these enhanced races.]

Akamel purposely mumbled it so Mudusella could hear it as he shut off the call.

<Ugh. I'm going to beat that bastard down one day.>

The spirit grumbled inside her.

But Mudusella thought back to the calculations from before.

‘As long as there’s no special variables...The rate of success is 99.9908%’

This was as good as 100%.

Though Mudusella had a ominous feeling about something she decided to brush it off and started to cool down the system.

She needed to completely revert it to its original state before the 3rd grade citizens came back.

Her worry wouldn't matter much.

Though there was a limit to how much the Mudusella could calculate, it had never been wrong until now.

‘If we could use this for 24 hours straight then it would be much more reassuring but... 20 million won't be enough for that.’

Mudusella sighed as she continued her work.

---

‘Tsk.’

Tiamet stared at the people who were throwing eggs at him.

Actually he was quite in awe.

At Nepallem, who had created this system, and at the 1st grade citizens who supported him.

Mudusella system.

Using the 20 million souls of the citizens as the basis, it brought up a tremendous amount of calculative power to determine the variables of the outside environment.

It recorded every memory, action patterns and emotions of the people to convert it all into calculative variables.

The prediction was made like this.

And another thing.

‘The calculative power wasn’t always needed.’

Nepallem and the other scientists achieved an incredible feat with the leftover calculative power from when the system isn't predicting the future.

Creation of a virtual reality.

The moment this virtual reality was created, the 1st grade citizens announced it to everybody below.

<Are you going to stay trapped within this shelter, where you never know when it will collapse? Or will you live every day happily in an amazing virtual reality where you cannot die?>

Many were afraid of this 'virtual reality' at first but with continued whippings it didn't take long for all of the 3rd grade citizens to 'escape' into the virtual reality and thanks to this the 1st grade citizens had been able to use the remaining resources and energy more efficiently than before.

Since the virtual reality allowed for the minimum usage of resources and energy compared to what they would've used in reality.

All they needed was for their life to be maintained and the tower energy to continue flowing.

'Though something's off, the results are good...'

Nepallem had successfully gained the happiness of almost 30

million people as well as the Prediction function of the Mudusella system.

But the process wasn't without faults.

“This fucking bastard...”

“Ha! He came without a 1st grade citizen. How bold...Hey, come down!”

Tiamet frowned as he heard the aggressive shouts of the citizens.

They, the Tiamet series, were not in good terms with the citizens.

The safety and happiness the game provided.

Though a great offer had been given to them, humans wouldn't just be moved from this alone.

<Why aren't the 1st grade citizens using it? If it's that good?>

<And it's not free. For us to have to stay within it forcibly. Isn't this a bit fishy?>

Of course there were people who went against them so a whip was needed.

And the whip that had been wrought was him.

The enhanced race created for battle.

An existence that had the energy of this giant city within its body and wielded it freely.

“Bastard! Come down!”

The citizens roared in rage as they remembered being attacked by Tiamet.

And Tiamet frowned as he saw this.

# Chapter 285 : Star Of Transcendence (1)

---

Tiamet frowned at the citizens.

‘These guys...’

Even if the humans had succeeded in enhancing their own bodies and absorbing the node’s energy to a degree, his terrifying might was not something these humans could go against.

But the current situation was a bit different.

‘Annoying. Did that game enhance their perception or something?’

“You bastard! Come down!”

Tiamet made an annoyed expression as he watched the citizens who had climbed on the roof and were grabbing onto his clothes.

He and the other enhanced race were set so they would only be able to attack the citizens with the orders of a 1st grade citizen or when the citizen themselves broke a rule.

This was why these guys, who would get killed off with just a single breath, were acting like this.

And these guys, those whose physical bodies had been enhanced



as well as having absorbed the node's energy, could easily rip apart steel beams with their bare hands.

That was why they had been able to jump on the roof.

And the people who came up here started to tap on Tiamet as if they wanted to pick a fight with him.

“Hey you. You're him right? The guy who burned my friend half dead.”

“Hey! Try attacking us like that time.”

Smack!

“Yeah! Spread some egg on you before you walk around.”

“Hahaha!”

These citizens weren't able to attack directly either since attacking the enhanced race was against the rule.

But annoying him was easy.

But for them to be able to do this even though they would still clearly remember the might he could wield.

‘That game... I guess it rids them of their sense of fear as well. Or maybe they can’t differentiate between virtual reality and reality.’

Tiamet grinded his teeth as he looked at those who were throwing eggs at him.

The fact that he was being pegged by eggs by those whom he could kill with just a flick of his wrist was really annoying him.

And the fact that he couldn’t retaliate annoyed him even before.

Kiiing.

And the chipset on his neck was stopping him from acting out.

Like a collar on a dog.

‘Yeah. I’m just a bastard dog huh...’

Crackle.

Every time Tiamet clenched his teeth, the chipset on his neck buzzed as it let out sparks.

In order to suppress the enraged Tiamet.

At that moment.

“Everyone calm down.”

Whoosh.

A man came down from the elevator as he shouted in order to calm the people.

The surrounding guards could clearly tell how important this man was.

10 men who looked exactly like Tiamet.

A man who could take around 10 TMT series, which there were only 100 of like the MSL series, in this entire city there was only one person.

“Nepallem...”

“No, uh. It’s not what you’re thinking...”

Everyone who were raging against Tiamet started to stutter and fall back.

The TMT series was the invention of Nepallem.

They were like the children of Nepallam and it was not easy to

throw eggs at the child in front of the father.

Even more so if the father was a figure whom everybody respected and worshipped more than anybody else.

“Hmm...”

As everyone looked to Nepallem with awkward expressions.

Nepallem calmly pointed with his hand.

“Now now. Calm down everybody. Go loosen up your bodies or something. Though the world inside the capsule is invigorating, it isn't as nice as this beautiful nature.”

Nepallem pointed towards the underground gardens which were being managed by the spirits and the people backed off at these words.

And Tiamet looked at Nepallem with an awkward expression as well.

Though he treated most people like bugs, two people were excluded from this.

One was Astania, the reason why he had come down here.

And the other, Nepallem.

‘Am I also respecting this human?’

Tiamet scoffed but he didn’t know for sure.

He, who had only been alive for 6 months, couldn’t completely control his emotions yet.

The reason why he had come down here was to verify this strange sensation that sprang up from the corner of his mind.

The moment he thought up to this point.

‘...Oh right, did she leave?’

As Tiamet tried to look around.

Whooosh!

Something popped up in front of him.

“Who are you looking for?”

Flinch.

Tiamet stuttered as he looked at Nepallem who had appeared in front of his eyes.

Nepallem was smiling.

While projecting a hologram.

And an attractive woman floated on the screen.

“Perhaps this woman?”

“ ... ”

Tiamet glared at Nepallem with a slight frown while Nepallem looked back at him in amusement and satisfaction.

“As I thought, you are special.”

Tiamet looked at the 10 TMT series who looked identical to him.

For him to be special when there were so many of himself?

It sounded like Nepallem was mocking him.

But Nepallem shook his head.

“Don’t make that expression. You’re truly special. We... Can help each other a lot it seems. Will you follow me?”

“...”

Tiamet frowned.

---

While he was stopping an uproar, he had been downed by a citizen when he got hit in the back of the head before.

Of course this shouldn’t have been possible but he wasn’t in battle mode but rather suppression mode.

But there was a woman who had saved him while he was being stomped and ripped apart by the enraged citizens.

<...Damn. I really don’t like you but I’ll save you this one time. You fucking bastard.>

<Why?>

Tiamet asked in confusion while the back of his neck was still ringing in pain.

Since he was somebody who should simply be killed in their eyes.

And if he was kept alive then he would only be used to suppress them again after he healed.

This woman's actions did not make sense.

The woman, Astania, spat out some blood as she answered.

<You also acting under orders anyway. You probably feel worse than us.>

They fought for freedom.

But these guys never had freedom to begin with.

They only followed orders and fought for the 1st grade citizens.

The reason for all this hate was the 1st grade citizens but only the people below were bleeding.

And Astania did not like this.

<Damn. If you guys knew our feelings then you wouldn't be so cruel against... No. What am I even expecting from you guys. How Could I.>

Astania chuckled.



The TMTs were under a lot more pressure compared to the MSLs since their main purpose was battle, not management.

Unlike the MSLs in charge of management, emotions were something that were truly unneeded in the TMTs whose focus was battle and massacres.

It wasn't bad usually but once they got into battle mode then the chipset behind them erased all of their emotions.

<Well. I don't know when this will end but... If it doesn't end badly then let's meet again with smiles.>

Astania finished her words as he climbed back out.

<...>

Tiamet grasped his painful neck as he looked towards Astania with a confused expression.

---

“Things were really bad back then. But thankfully there weren't many dead, it's all thanks to you TMTs.”

Nepallem smiled as he mumbled.

Casualties only happened when two forces of similar strengths

collided.

The 1st grade citizens removed the limits imposed on the TMT series after seeing the situation turning for the worse and everybody who was rebelling were suppressed by the pure might of the TMTs as they backed off.

‘I guess he was more cheerful than I thought.’

Tiamet stared at Nepallem who was mumbling in happiness as he asked.

“What do you need?”

The enhanced race were wired to be respectful towards the humans.

Though Tiamet felt like he could be disrespectful if he wanted but it didn't feel right to do so to this man.

‘...Maybe it's because he created me.’

Tiamet controlled his unknown emotions as he tried to understand the current situation.

There was no reason for him and Nepallem to converse one on one like this.

Though he was one of the two special series within this giant city, the other party was a man who stood out amidst the 70 billion humans.

They were on different levels.

‘And this is his personal space...All other TMTs are outside as well.’

The tower’s topmost penthouse from where one could clearly see the entire city.

This place was a mysterious place where even Akamel hadn’t been in.

A perfect personal space where not a single monitoring device existed.

Trinkle.

Nepallem poured two cups of tea as he smiled at Tiamet.

“I wanted to converse with just us two. Anyways, how’s the emotion of love? Well, maybe it’s not there yet.”

But Tiamet was extremely shocked by these words.

‘Love? This?’

Tiamet then scoffed inwardly.

Love?

“A TMT like me has no such function as replying to your jokes. Find someone else please.”

Nepallem smiled.

“What do you mean? You wouldn’t just go underground to eat some curses right? Didn’t you go down even though you knew that would happen? Something’s itchy right? In here.”

Nepallem patted his chest.

Tiamet frowned as he asked carefully.

“Are you calling me special because of that?”

Even if he felt something for a citizen.

He didn’t know if this made him special in any way.

Maybe not during a battle but he, as a enhanced race, was entitled to some emotions.

It was possible for them to feel emotions in special cases and if they were in the daily life mode.

The other TMT series were just standing around expressionlessly because they didn't feel the need to show emotions.

They were born for battle and all these emotions would just disappear like bubbles once they got into a battle.

But Nepallem chuckled.

“You aren't special because of that. There's another reason.”

“...?”

Tiamet became curious.

About what his differences were and why this amazing scientist, Nepallem, was so interested in him.

But when Tiamet was about to ask.

[TMT-17. These are the new commands and their associated data for the plan. Open the channel so I can send them over.]

“...’

Tiamet frowned as he heard Akamel's voice through the chipset.

---

Rummbble.

Boom.

Then, towards Mudusella as she finished up reverting the Mudusella System back to its original state.

[MSL-17. These are the new commands and their associated data for the plan. Open the channel so I can send them over.]

“...?”

Mudusella made a confused expression at the sudden orders being sent to her.

Was there something she didn't know about regarding this plan?

‘And... It's not only coming to me.’

It was being sent to every enhanced race including the MSLs.

Mudusella started to read the data with a confused expression.

Wondering why the data was sent suddenly and in secrecy.

And soon.

Tremble.

<Wow. These bastard are truly insane.>

Mudusella's eyelids trembled as the spirit cursed inside her.

"...They're leaving behind all the 3rd grade citizens? The whole over 20 million of them?"

They weren't just being left behind.

According to this plan... Every remaining human would die for sure.

Mudusella was extremely shocked as she continued to read through the data.

# Chapter 286 : Star Of Transcendence (2)

---

Tiamet looked at the data with a shocked expression.

Codename : Plan for the Migration of Humanity

The directives were simple.

1st and 2nd grade citizens were to board the spaceship that was being built across the mountain range.

And there were clear instructions for the enhanced race so there wouldn't be any casualties during all of it.

But nowhere in the data was there anything regarding the 3rd grade citizens.

Tiamet asked Nepallem.

“...What's going on? I thought everybody was migrating?”

Nepallem smiled.

“Why are you asking a scientist like me? I'm only responsible for making you and creating the spirits. People who decide how to use them are people like Akamel, the highest-ranked members.”



Tiamet made a dumbfounded expression.

Even if people like Akamel could fly, they wouldn't be able to reach the height Nepallem was at.

Which meant that Akamel had to present his ideas and receive approval from Nepallem for every plan.

But for Nepallem to not know what's going on in a situation like this?

“What are you...”

Tiamet, who was about to become enraged, realized what he was about to do and then calmed down.

Why was he getting angry?

Thinking about it, there was nothing that should matter to him even if the 3rd grade citizens were disposed of.

Since their deaths didn't matter to him.

The 100 or so of the TMT series will be allowed to board and it was better if they didn't take the 3rd grade citizens.

Why was there a need to get angry for those who threw eggs at him?

But something kept tickling him inside his chest.

Something was complaining inside him.

And Nepallem smiled as he looked at Tiamet.

“Shouldn’t you run?”

“...What do you mean?”

Nepallem patted his chest.

“This. I’m talking about this from before.”

At that moment.

Tiamet realized where the uneasiness and the annoyance was coming from.

And Nepallem whispered into his ears.

“Our TMT-17 is a very precious resource. Adding one extra person wouldn’t be that hard.”

And the moment he heard this.

Swoosh.

Tiamet stomped out from Nepallem’s personal area as he started to walk somewhere.

And somebody shouted behind his back.

“Good luck! If you hurry then you might be able to find her before they re-enter.”

Then.

Tiamet disappeared into the darkness and Nepallem shrugged his shoulders inside his own personal area.

“Well, you should at least hear why you’re so special. That’s the most important part.”

---

[15 minutes until entrance time into Exodus. Citizens, please move to your designated locations.]

“Finally, we’re going back in.”

“Gosh, I thought I was going to die from boredom! Ugh.”

“Keke. I’m going to kill what I was about to before!”

As the announcement was made, the citizens who were spread out all over the wide underground area started to swarm around the tower.

Though some were looking at this with a strange expression.

“Mmm...”

Astania made a worried expression while looking at the citizens.

‘I know it’s nice but... Aren’t they relying on it a bit too much?.’

Astania mumbled to herself.

She understood that the world inside that place was good.

Since they were able to forget the problems of reality inside it.

The 1st grade citizens who wished to rule over them.

The harsh environment that continuously tried to wipe them out.

And they, who were powerless to do anything in this situation.

They were able to forget all of that inside that place.

No, more than that.

Unlike this place, where they were powerless, they could become heroes.

They flew through the skies and hunted dragons.

They killed beasts and saved others.

‘...Nothing I can do.’

It looked like they were running away from reality rather than playing a game but she was the same as them.

Astania sighed as she started to move towards her cell as well.

But at that moment.

Somebody grabbed her arm.

“What...”

Astania saw a familiar face as she looked behind in confusion.

“Let’s go.”

“What... Hey! I didn’t do anything wrong! Why is a TMT series taking me?”

Astania shouted in confusion.

TMT series.

The beings that were in control of the city’s laws.

Astania freaked out.

‘Why... Why is this happening.’

No matter how she thought about it, she hadn’t done anything wrong.

Even if she did something wrong, for a TMT to come get her.

These were not things that should be for that.

Tiamet frowned as he responded to Astania's words.

"You told me to meet with smiles but the situation is not like that. Follow me."

"What... Oh. Are you the one from then?"

Astania then realized something.

She remembered who this was.

'Ugh, there's no way to tell them apart.'

Astania sighed out in relief but then frowned as she stopped Tiamet and spoke.

"Where are you taking me, I have to go in the cell."

Astania pointed towards the giant tower filled with glass cells behind her.

And Tiamet made an annoyed expression at this.

'This dumb girl. You're going to die if that happens.'

The 1st and 2nd grade citizens were going to get on the ship.

The enhanced race who supplied and controlled the obelisk also had to get on.

Which meant this giant tower would lose both its software and hardware and would cease to work.

And the 3rd grade citizens would not be able to survive in these harsh conditions without the protection of the obelisk.

They would freeze to death inside the glass cells.

“If you have something to say then say it here. If not then just tell me later.”

“...”

He wanted to speak but the chipset was preventing him from leaking the top secret informations.

‘Fuck...’

Astania frowned and then threw Tiamet’s hands off.

“What are you doing? If you’re going to just play around then fuck off. Are you looking down on me because I’m just a third



grade? If I don't go in there in time then it'll be bad."

Astania glared at Tiamet and started to stomp towards the tower.

Kiigigik.

Tiamet wanted to grab ahold of Astania but he could not.

The chipset was stopping him.

[The enhanced race cannot forcefully act against a citizen.]

[Stop you actions immediately.]

The chipset's electric signal suppressed his entire body as Astania disappeared towards the tower.

And the various emotions inside him swelled.

Rage.

Pity.

And...

Tiamet clenched his teeth and poured strength all over his body.

“Ugh....Fu..cking...Hell!”

Craack.

Crunch.

At that moment, something shocking occurred.

Tiamet started to move despite the chipset suppression.

‘...Please!’

As his body moved.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Tiamet didn't pay attention to the fact that he could ignore the chipset as he started to rush towards Astania with an urgent expression.

“Huh?”

As Astania freaked out at Tiamet who rushed up to her.

Smack!

Astania fell on the ground unconscious as Tiamet hit her in the back of her head.

“Haa...Ha...”

Strangely, the chipset had stopped suppressing him as Tiamet attained his goal.

Tiamet breathed out roughly as he stared down at Astania who was laid out on the ground.

He then heaved her onto his shoulders and quickly ran over to the elevator.

‘I need to hurry.’

The train to the spaceship would soon set off.

As he got on the elevator the sensor inside it started to scan him.

[...Scanning.]

[...TMT-17. Scan complete. Activating.]

Ooooong!

Tiamet glanced at the countless 3rd grade citizens lying in the glass cells in the distance but soon turned away from them as the elevator started to climb up.

---

[Everyone, proceed to board starting from the citizens of Zone 19 please.]

[You've done well until now, congratulations on obtaining the right to go to the new world.]

The 1st level station of the obelisk.

Countless people were climbing aboard the long train.

Most were the 1st grade citizens of the obelisk.

And around the 1st grade citizens.

The various enhanced race members were getting on board along with the citizens.

Akamel looked at the scene from the corner of the station next to two TMTs.

‘Good. Perfect.’

The boarding of the citizens from the city was proceeding smoothly as the Mudusella System was being moved onto the spaceship.

Though it might not be as good as the Mudusella system that used the souls of the 20 million people, it would be more than enough.

Since the number of citizens would naturally rise once they colonize the new planet properly.

At that moment.

[Warning! Warning!]

[Unknown citizen is attempting to board.]

[All enhanced race of cart A-22, proceed to prevent the boarding.]

“Huh?”

Akamel frowned at the sudden warning.

‘No way... All the 3rd grade citizens should be inside Exodus by now.’

The 3rd grade citizens of the 17th zone who had been awakened just recently were also going into Exodus.

And they couldn’t use the elevators even if they were awake so who was trying to come.

‘...What’s going on.’

Akamel frowned as he took the two TMTs and headed towards the location of conflict.

Booom!

Boom!

Sounds of collisions could be heard around the station.

‘Who caused this...’

Akamel approached the area with a confused expression but then made a dumbfounded expression at the scene.

Various enhanced race members had been flung back.

And the one TMT series who had a girl on his back.

Akamel realized what was going on the moment he saw this and then grinded his teeth.

‘...Nepallem. No matter how much you try to stop me this time, it won’t work.’

‘Fucking bastards. I’ll make sure to tighten your collars properly after this.’

And at that moment.

TMT-17, the one who had created all this mess, stomped towards Akamel.

‘This bastard...’

As Akamel glared at Tiamet.

Tiamet pondered for a moment but then spoke straightforwardly.

“Please let this woman onboard.”

His demand wasn’t very far-fetched.

His own worth was extremely high and though he didn’t know why they were leaving behind the 3rd grade citizens, adding one extra woman wasn’t hard for Akamel.

This was why he had left behind the other citizens.

Since if they started to cling onto him he might not be able to save the woman.

‘Though you won’t be treated well after you get on...You should at least live.’

Tiamet mumbled as he glanced at Astania.

But from the distance.



MSL-17, Mudusella, saw this scene with a sad expression.

‘Tiamet...’

She understood what he was thinking.

But sadly, Tiamet didn’t understand the humans enough.

To be precise, the dark parts of their emotions.

And just like she expected.

“Don’t want to.”

Akamel scoffed as he replied.

---

“Tsk, Tsk.”

Nepallem looked at this scene from the distance and clicked his tongue.

# Chapter 287 : Star Of Transcendence (3)

---

Tiamet asked as he looked at the dark expression of Akamel.

“...Why not?”

His demand wasn't outrageous.

This much should easily be doable.

But Akamel smiled coldly as he spoke.

“Of course not. It's not fair.”

“Not fair?”

Akamel nodded.

“Yeah. Every other 3rd grade citizen is below. But who is that woman for us to treat her like this?”

Tiamet was dumbfounded from these words.

Unfair?

Was this something these guys who were leaving behind all the

third grade citizens to die should be saying?

“It won’t be bad for them. It’ll end for them in happiness inside there. Every one of them agreed right? That it’s better to live inside there than living in reality.

As he heard these words.

Pop.

A vein popped up on his forehead.

And he felt something boiling inside him.

Chiiijiiiik.

Rage was one of the most distracting emotions when they were doing their job.

The chipset activated as it tried to suppress him.

“Ugh...”

While he was trying to escape the suppression from the chipset.

Tiamet resisted the electrical signals from the chipset as he raised his trembling hand.

Because he really felt like he needed to punch this man.

Though the fist of Tiamet, who could easily rip apart steel like it was paper, was approaching his face, Akamel was completely calm.

As Tiamet was about to grab ahold of Akamel.

Whoosh.

The two TMT series next to Akamel grabbed both of Tiamet's arms and made him kneel.

"Ugh..."

He tried to resist but it was all futile.

The chipset was still suppressing him and he could not win against the two TMTs who had the same power level as him.

Akamel smirked at Tiamet kneeling in front of him.

"It was hard making you. So you originally had the rights to come on board with us. But if you're defective then the story changes."

Usually, they would just fix the chipset and reuse him but they

were about to leave.

They didn't have the time nor did he want to.

'I don't need a defective enhanced human who can resist us in this new world.'

This was why the 3rd grade citizens were being left behind.

Though they were calculating the success rate of this plan, the Mudusella system was actually calculating something else.

[Should we take the 2nd and 3rd grade citizens with us to the new planet?]

Everyone was cautious.

As to how bad the situation could become if the 2nd and 3rd grade citizens rebelled.

The ashy storm outside the barrier proved this.

Would these guys not cause troubles in the new world?

The 1st grade citizens scanned the brains of every citizen using the Mudusella system and launched a calculation.

And the results.

[Up to 2nd grade is helpful.]

[Starting from the 3rd grade, their usefulness drops and the chance of them causing issues rises.]

‘Why should we take them then?’

Even such a thing in front of his eyes might appear.

Enhanced humans who broke the chipset and went wild.

Akamel had no thoughts of sharing even a bit of their precious resources to take someone like this.

Akamel laughed coldly as he spoke.

“Don’t worry too much. I have a conscience you see. I won’t hurt you lovebirds.”

With those words.

Craackle!

“Kuhuk...”

One of the TMT series stabbed into the back of his neck as Tiamet felt his consciousness fading out.

‘Fucking... Hell.’

Tiamet lost his consciousness as he watched Akamel who was laughing at him coldly.

---

‘....Mmm.’

Tiamet rose up as he sensed something whipping against his skin.

And he made a shocked expression as he looked around.

The empty platform.

All the 1st grade citizens and the enhanced race had boarded and left.

Only two lifeforms were alive.

He, who had fallen.

And Astania, who was still unconscious.

‘Damn...’

Tiamet checked the status of his body but then sat back down.

‘What’s the use.’

As the MSL series who controlled the Mudusella System left, there was no enhanced race member to pour him any energy.

Soon this giant tower, the Obelisk, will cease to act and then the harsh environment will soon sweep over this city.

Even he didn’t have the confidence to survive for long periods of time.

He will slowly lose energy and die out.

‘...I wanted to save you at least.’

Tiamet sighed out as he looked at Astania sleeping next to him.

He didn’t know what this sensation he was feeling towards this woman was.

But he felt that he would be much happier if this woman lived and was happy.



And even more so if he was next to her.

‘Were Nepallem’s words true?’

Tiamet chuckled at conversation he had with Nepallem.

He really had become special.

He was probably the only TMT series who was left behind here.

‘I should’ve listened to his answer at least. The reason why I am special.’

But it was too late to hear the answer now.

Since Nepallem would’ve long boarded the ship.

That man was in a different situation than him.

At that moment.

“Living isn’t easy right? You would’ve been able to board if humans lived in harmony.”

“...No way.”

Tiamet mumbled in shock at the voice that was coming from the distance.

Since that voice was not something that he should be hearing.

But despite his voice, the voice was only getting closer.

Tiamet turned around and was at a loss for words.

“Napallem. How are you here...”

Nepallem chuckled as he looked at Tiamet.

“It seems your chipset is completely broken. Maybe it’s a good thing? Hahaha.”

“...Why did you stay behind?”

Tiamet pinched his cheek in case he had come into the virtual reality.

Nepallem had no reason not to board and he had to board.

Since if Nepallem chose to stay here, all the other 1st grade citizens would’ve forcibly taken him.

Nepallem shrugged his shoulders.

“Oh that? I just boarded a clone who looked similar to me. I hope that guy is happy over there.”

“What... What are you...? Why did you not go?”

Since the chipset, which was suppressing his emotions, had been broken. Various emotions sprang up from inside him.

As Tiamet mumbled with a shocked expression, Nepallem laughed as he spoke.

“Is there a reason for me to go? I’ve already accomplished my goals here?”

“...What?”

Nepallem pointed towards the tower behind him as he looked at Tiamet.

“They left behind the most important thing.”

Tiamet’s expression brightened at these words.

That confident expression.

Nepallem, who had overseen all the previous plans and endeavors had been left behind.

Was this not a possibility of him surviving?

Maybe the ones who got onto the ship made a mistake?

But sadly.

Nepallem made a sorry expression as he spoke.

“I’m sorry if I brought your hopes up but... Don’t make such an expression. This body will soon die.”

“Huh?’

Nepallem shrugged his shoulders.

“Why are you so shocked? Since I’m done with my objective and this body has done what it needed to, it’s time to throw it away.”

And Tiamet was enraged.

“Fuck! What were you trying to do here then!?’

Various emotions that had been suppressed before sprang up.

No, there was one dominant emotion inside him.

[Fear.]

The emotion that endangered a soldier the most.

This emotion was slowly eating away at Tiamet due to the unknown future.

And as a response to this.

Booom!

A white spirit exploded out from inside him and surrounded Tiamet.

A spirit of light.

One of the most destructive spirit in existence had come out.

With one objective.

To protect Tiamet.

But Nepallem scratched his chin as he looked at Tiamet.

“Why are you getting angry after you just asked? Anyways, my objective is... Well, you could say it’s engineering. Or terraforming. It’s making this place a bit prettier. Suiting the taste of someone above.”

“Huh?”

Someone above?

Was there somebody who was in a place higher than Nepallem?

‘Is he making fun of me?’

At that moment.

“Ah, he’s here.”

With this.

Split.

Space cracked and spliced apart.

And from the dark void.

A small creature popped out.

A small pair of wings and a shining body.

As he looked at the fairy-like creature he had seen from the fairytales.

“Huaa....”

Tiamet’s entire body started to tremble.

Though it’s outer appearance was a cute fairy, there was a tremendous amount of power and viciousness residing inside it.

Whoosh.

Tiamet couldn't help himself as he fell on the ground but Nepallem ignored it as he spoke to the fairy.

“It’s finished. You’re going to take over now right?”

The fairy smiled.

“Mmm...That’s how it should be normally but there’s something amusing here?”

Originally, as the giant Obelisk was completed and these other creatures were gone it should've been finished.

But how could it ignore something amusing that appeared in front of it?

As the fairy, who had the same nature as god, smiled.

“Fucking bastards. If you're going to joke around then...”

Tiamet grinded his teeth as he mumbled.

This tiny thing was looking at him as if he was a toy.

But the fairy shook its head and smirked.

“No. I'm not joking around. You see, I really like people like you. You're very special.”

The fairy looked between Tiamet and the direction the 1st grade citizens had gone towards as it spoke out.

“You were born with the transcendence star.”

“Oh right, I was going to tell him first.”

Nepallem smacked his forehead.



# Chapter 288 : Star Of Transcendence (4)

---

[We will set off after 05:02:11.]

Oooooooooong.

Mudusella sat in the engine room as she made a bitter expression while looking at the Mudusella System in front of her.

She kept thinking about her partner, TMT-17, who had been left behind in the city.

It might've been better if there was at least a spirit she could talk to but that spirit had long been taken out of her into a glass sphere.

To supply the ship with the energy.

Akamel, who was standing next to Mudusella, smiled in contentment as he mumbled.

“Dumbass. He overestimated his own worth.”

“...Couldn't you have taken them all?”

Not just Tiamet but the 3rd grade citizens as well.

‘Impudent.’

Akamel frowned at her words.

He also wanted to show her who was in charge but he could not.

Unlike Tiamet, MSL-17 was a vital part of the flight.

‘I guess I’ll make another when I arrive...’

Akamel was enraged and had almost spurted out his inner thoughts.

Thoughts that were a bit extreme for the others to hear but were completely fine to utter to these ‘products’ of theirs.

“No way. Our worth is much higher than those wasteful bastards. Those things that only know how to waste resources are a plague in a situation where we have limited resources. Maybe you don’t know because you’ve only been alive for a short time, etch that into your memory.”

“ ... ”

As Mudusella frowned at Akamel.

Whooosh.

“Ugh...”

Akamel held Mudusella’s chin as he coldly whispered.

“Know your limits, even if we need you it’ll be a bit hard on us if you cross the line.”

“...”

“Yeah, learn to avoid my gaze like that. Now, go ahead and finish your job. Move all the 2nd grade citizens in cryosleep onto the ship.”

The 2nd grade citizens weren’t used by the Mudusella system unlike the 3rd grades.

But they couldn’t just throw them away.

Since they needed them as servants in the new planet.

So they had frozen close to 10 million of them.

And they will be moved to the new planet in that state.

Until the 1st grade citizens finish the preparations.

The beautiful colony built inside the spaceship was only for the 1st grade citizens.

‘Perfect. I shall give you this planet as a whole... Farewell then.’

Akamel looked towards the city in the distance and then smiled as he thought of Tiamet.

But then.

[Warning. Warning. The surrounding environment is changing drastically. All citizens move to the designated emergency positions.]

A sudden warning rang throughout the spaceship.

“What!?”

Akamel freaked out.

“Check the outside situation immediately!”

Akamel hurriedly gave orders to the Mudusella system.

And soon, Akamel was at a loss at the scene in front of him.

“No...way...”

A humongous tornado was spinning around the Obelisk in the distance.

As the shield that was protecting the tower broke, a giant tornado had formed inside it.

Akamel grinded his teeth as he looked at what was happening in the distance.

“What the fuck...!”

Countless ashy clouds that had originally surrounded the entire planet were being sucked into the tower.

And the mountain range that was barely holding onto its shape was being covered with snow and clouds.

All the land around the city was freezing and breaking apart.

Crunch

Craack.

And of course the spaceship which was preparing for its flight could not escape this calamity.

[Calculating... Flight determined to be impossible.]

[ASTRO-17... Shifting to dormant mode.]

The warning resounded throughout the spaceship as the 1st grade citizens freaked out.

“What the hell! What is this! We didn’t foresee this with the Mudusella System!”

“What’s going on!?”

And the spirit was shocked as well.

The spirit, which was acting as a generator for the ship inside the flask, made a confused expression as it looked.

<They deserved it... But what's actually going on?>

The sky was falling with the tower as the center.

The Obelisk, which had become the pillar that held up the humanity's survival was turning everything around it into a land of death.

As if it was trying to suck in every calamity of the world.

A similar scene was probably playing out in the other Obelisks as well.

And Hansoo was also shocked at this scene.

‘..Was this why the ship was resting beyond the range? There's still too much that doesn't fit.’

At that moment.

Boooooooooom!

Sounds of explosions against the surface of the ship could be heard.

Even the people inside the engine room could hear it.

“Uwaaaak!”

“Stop that bastard!”

Boom.

Clang.

Sounds of clashes and explosions were heard.

Though the spirit’s perception had weakened after it had entered the flask but it could clearly hear those screams.

And Akamel freaked out with a horrified yelp.

“You bastard...How!”

It also heard the familiar voice that was responding to Akamel.

“I sold my soul to the devil.”

“Aaaaak!”

As Akamel screamed.



Hansoo quickly started thinking.

‘He sold his soul to the devil?’

This current Tiamet was much stronger than before.

If Akamel had known that Tiamet could make that tower go insane.

And that he would kill off the other enhanced race to get to him.

He would’ve never left Tiamet behind.

And as Hansoo tried to suck in more of the spirit’s memories.

<It’s done... You’ve won.>

“What?”

The spirit’s exhausted voice came into his ears as he started to get sucked out of the flask towards an unknown location.

---

When Hansoo’s consciousness came back, it was where he had been before.

Inside his own consciousness where the spirit had sucked him in.

And something very faint was barely holding onto its form in front of him.

Something that had lost its previous seven-colored luster.

<Damn...You've won. You bastard... You're similar to that guy huh.>

“That guy?”

As Hansoo frowned at the spirit's words.

The spirit chuckled as he left behind its final words.

<I congratulate you for your victory. Now, wipe that shit that you caused with your new strength, haha. Ugh... How pitiful am I...>

At that moment he realized he needed to hear something.

‘This bastard saw something from my broken memories.’

Hansoo held onto the spirit as he asked.

“Speak, what did you see.”

As a consequence the spirit became even more transparent.

As if it was about to flicker off.

Usually a threat like this would've worked.

Since the spirit's mentality wasn't that strong.

But the situation was different now, it was already done for.

<Dumb bastard. Why should I? Kekeke. Have fun...>

Whooosh!

The spirit broke apart and disappeared before it could finish its own words.

And the seven colored fragments of the spirit's body entered Hansoo's body.

Then.

A new ability started to appear in his body.

Like he was becoming a new entity.

A change that was occurring as he consumed the spirit's fragments.

It was something he wouldn't resist usually but he was looking around frantically.

‘My memories...Just a bit more.’

But then.

Whooooosh!

Hansoo's consciousness started to get sucked out.

Towards the body outside.

---

Tiamet frowned at Hansoo who had flinched for a bit before moving but then he just gathered more white light in his hands and prepared to attack again.

It was not something his light spirit had in the past but something he had gained after hearing that he had to devour everything to become a transcendent.

Boooooom!

A giant beam exploded out from Rangkom's Stake as it flew towards Hansoo.

It was not a might which Hansoo could withstand.

No matter how close the gap between them had gotten, this beam was more than enough to smash him into bits.

Boooooooooom!

A giant storm of mist appeared around Hansoo.

Tiamet grinded his teeth as he saw this.

“...Did you fuse?”

Chiiiiiiik

“So it was like this.”

Hansoo replied nonchalantly from inside the mist.

And the snowstorm was gathering and creating a wall of ice around him.

As Hansoo lifted his hands to activate this newfound power again.

Whooooooooosh!

The snowstorm started to gather at a single point.

“Kuhuuk!”

Towards Tiamet who was preparing to attack again.

And in an instant the snowstorm that had been created from the crazed tower that gnawed away at Tiamet’s power pushed down onto him but numerous times stronger than before.

The power of the light spirit he had was solely focused on destruction.

The dark spirit in Jang Oh's hands was focused on manipulating the darkness efficiently.

But the ability of the spirit which Mudusella, the manager, had was different.

Control.

Control over the power a spirit had.

An ability needed for her to manage the giant Mudusella system as well as the entire Obelisk.

Tiamet's light spirit was more efficient when turning energy into destructive force but not when there was a huge energy storm all around them targeted at him.

Crunch.

Crack.

"Fucking... Hell!"

It wasn't just any mana storm.

The mana storm that had previously surrounded the entire planet and had now been compressed by the tower was rushing

around Tiamet.

And as Tiamet grinded his teeth at the tremendous pressure.

Boom!

Hansoo dashed through the snowstorm as he smashed down into Tiamet with the Forked Lightning.

“Kuhuk!”

As Tiamet was flung back and was about to smash onto the ground.

Boom!

Hansoo, who had dashed over and got on top of Tiamet asked as he beat him.

“Tell me what happened in the past”

“...What?”

Smack. Smack.

“Ugh!”



Hansoo whispered as he grabbed ahold of Tiamet.

“Did you finish them off a thousand years ago?”

He needed to hear this.

As to what that ‘Devil’s’ deal was.

And if that contract was still in effect.

“You bastard...!”

Booom!

“Argh!”

Crunch.

‘Since the spirit isn’t responding anymore...I’ll need to hear from this side.’

Hansoo dodged the stake that flew towards him and smashed Tiamet in the face again.

# Chapter 289 : Star Of Transcendence (5)

---

Hansoo clutched his head as he activated the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement.

‘...My soul is about to break apart.’

Though he had bought time after eating up the spirit, it was hard for him to battle for prolonged periods of time.

But he had a feeling.

‘Something’s not right.’

The virtual reality game the 3rd grade citizens were enjoying in the past.

And the 1st and the frozen 2nd grade citizens who had been attacked suddenly.

The players who played the game Exodus as well as the residents.

The residents he could understand to a degree.

Since it wasn’t impossible if Tiamet had dealt with the 1st grade citizens and established a nation with the 2nd and 3rd grade citizens.

But the players were different.

The 3rd grade citizens who should only exist in virtual reality were actually walking around here.

Of course there was no guarantee that the players here and the 3rd grade citizens of the past were the same people.

No, they should be different.

But Hansoo saw.

The face of the girl who Tiamet was holding onto and was trying to protect.

That face was somebody he knew.

No, it was a face which anybody in this world would know.

‘Clan leader of the Kalikul clan.’

Clan lord, Astania.

Someone who had gained the ownership of the special territory next to the Empire’s capital despite being a player and the person who shone the most out of the clan lords of the 15 great clans.

Their names and appearances were exactly the same.

This was too much to call it a coincidence.

If the existences that could only live within virtual reality in the past were actually walking around in reality then Tiamet had really fucked something up.

And there was only one thing that could explain this whole situation.

A contract.

Tiamet's final words which said that he had made a contract with the devil.

Booom.

“Speak. What is the contract you made in the past.”

Hansoo choked Tiamet as he mumbled.

“Kuhuk...”

Tiamet gritted his teeth as he vomited out blood.

Because he had erased the special characteristics of all the enhanced race from himself in order to resist the orders of the 1st grade citizens... The snowstorm around him was continuously gnawing away at him.

There was no way to defeat Hansoo anymore.

‘This is the end huh....’

The first thing he thought of was that thing.

The reason for his thousand years of hard work.

‘Those things...’

Tiamet chuckled as he thought of the fairies.

“Yeah... If you fused then you should’ve seen a bit of the past through Mudusella’s memory. Well you see, I’ve only asked for a small thing but I don’t know why things have become like this.”

Tiamet thought of the past.

---

The fairy-like existence from the past spoke to him.

And told him that he had done more than enough to have the right to ask them for something.

<Well, I really shouldn't give anything out. But a trade if possible. You don't have to agree if you don't want to.>

And Tiamet grinded his teeth at the fairy's suggestion.

He had heard before.

That none of the devil's deals were proper nor good.

A one-sided trade designed for the enjoyment of the devil.

The other party who trades with the devil will be driven into destruction.

Tiamet smirked at himself who had accepted this offer.

But he knew now.

As to why all those stories told him to be wary of the devil's offer but why none of them refused it.

'This is it huh.'

Humans didn't trade with the devil because they were weak or

evil.

The devil was.

This evil thing.

It appeared right when the humans were at their weakest point in life.

That point when the humans could not deny it.

‘Kekeke.’

Tiamet realized as he looked at the fairy which was smiling in a vicious manner.

That he himself was at the weakest point of his life.

<I Accept.>

There was only one wish in his head.

To acquire a space where he and Astania could live together.

Destroying the 1st grade citizens or something.

And as he wished.

The fairy smirked.

<Half of it is okay... Since it's a bit much for me to personally intervene, you do as much as you can. This place is under your jurisdiction after all.>

Nepallem smiled while nodding and then stretched his hand towards the tower.

And soon.

Boooooooooom!

The giant tower went crazy and started to reverse the power that was pushing away the calamity that was covering the entire planet.

The ashy clouds disappeared as sunlight landed on the land across the mountain range.

Tiamet realized.

That the giant Obelisk which Nepallem had made had the power to solve this calamity.

<This bastard...>



Of course he didn't care whether the citizens died or not.

But he couldn't help but feel disgusted at this man all of a sudden.

Nepalem suddenly spoke.

<While the Obelisk is working, the third grade citizens cannot come out. Since it's all activated with the Mudusella System as the basis. And that's the same... For that woman>.

<What?>

Astania's body disappeared into thin air.

Towards the inner parts of the Obelisk.

<What are you doing!>

<This is just a hostage. You see, it's a contract. There's no free lunch in this world. This is as much as we can do. And, another thing.>

Nepalem approached Tiamet and lifted his hands towards the back of Tiamet's neck.

<....!>

Tiamet instinctively tried to attack Nepalem and attacked him with the white beam.

But it was futile.

<It's not anything bad.

<What the...>

The white beam was deflected away and Nepallem's hand grasped onto the back of his neck.

Like an adult holding down a kid.

Everyone thought that Nepallem wasn't any stronger than a 1st grade citizen no matter how much of a genius he was.

But for him to suppress Tiamet this easily.

Nepalem used a strange energy and controlled the chipset.

Boooooom!

White light started to explode out from Tiamet's body.

<In order to allow the full extent of your potential... A limiter would just get in the way.>

The secret only the developer knew.

Nepalem smiled as he removed the limiter.

And Tiamet looked at his body in shock.

<What...>

Power was rushing throughout his body.

Nepallem laughed towards Tiamet.

<This is as much as we can do for you. The girl is a hostage, remember.>

<...A hostage?>

Nepallem laughed.

<This is a trade. There's only one reason why we're on your side. Fulfill the reason why you were born.>

---

It was simple after this really.

Though it was still a bit hard for him to go up against all of the 1st grade citizens and the enhanced race members but they were all spread out inside the ship.

He just needed to smash them apart one by one.

He killed all of the 1st grade citizens who had the power to control the enhanced race.

And he had saved all of the 2nd grade citizens and the Ains.

Since he knew it was impossible for him to do this all alone.

Nepallem's condition was simple.

<Become strong. More than anybody else. There's nothing for us to receive from you yet. When the time comes... We will come. We'll let go of the girl as well. At that point our trade will be complete.>

Until he transcended and attained the power to escape this world with his Skill of Annihilation.

So he had used the 2nd grade citizens and the Ains to create the White Dragon Arena.

And had sealed the Ains who could become a variable.

As the secrecy of this all was a requirement that the fairy added in into their deal.

<Whom do I need to keep this a secret from?>

Tiamet asked back in confusion.

All the 3rd grade citizens were asleep and the 2nd grade citizens and the Ains knew about the history already.

The fairy responded.

<This world is going to be recycled. When that happens, focus on keeping this secret. Since it's easier to use them if they don't know anything.>

And he realized after close to a thousand years.

Whom he needed to keep this a secret from.

<This is insane...>

The tens of millions of people's information were inside the obelisk.

Tiamet was shocked as he looked at the 3rd grade citizens who were reviving with erased memories with that information as the basis.

He then realized.

<That thing doesn't treat us as anything other than toys.>

And he realized this was even more true as he saw these 'adventurers' getting hunted down by the 3rd grade citizens.

He finally realized what being recycled meant.

Tiamet had finally started to understand what the final words of Nepallem were.

<Live with some confidence. You have that right. Isn't the previous world you lived in quite dull? It was just a nursery after all.>

---

'...I guess I failed hold up my end of the contract.'

Tiamet spoke to Hansoo with a defeated expression.

"You wouldn't allow me to live."

Tiamet looked at Hansoo who wasn't responding and nodded.

There was no reason for Hansoo to keep him alive.

Since this was the only chance he had to kill him.

And it was clear from what Hansoo was holding with his hand.

Badump. Badump.

The hand that had entered through his ribs and had grasped his heart.

He had failed.

He had failed to transcend and release Astania from being a hostage.

'I really worked hard for a thousand years.'

It wasn't that bad.

Since Astania would continue to live in this world.

In immortality.

‘Better than dying.’

He could just refuse to speak of the past but he did on purpose.

Because...

“You wouldn’t be able to escape it either. Because you...”

As Tiamet smirked.

Boooooooooom!

In the distance.

The giant spaceship in the outskirts of the city started to activate.

---

“What the... Why is this working?”

As one of the players made a shocked expression.

“Can we see outside if we turn it on? Try turning it on, I want to see what’s going on.”

“...Mmm. Okay.”



As one of the players fumbled with the panel.

One of them recorded the inner parts of the spaceship and broadcasted it.

“Now, shall we see what’s going on outside? Since this spaceship was falling across the mountain range... We will be able to see the scene behind it now right? This is being broadcasted for the first time.”

One of the Kalikul clansman laughed as he started the broadcast.

# Chapter 290 : Transcendence (1)

---

“Hmm...What could possible be there?”

Astania looked at the screen her clansman was broadcasting with curiosity.

A strange spaceship.

And the lands beyond the sky high mountain range.

Anybody would be curious about it.

‘Is there really information regarding the 6th patch?’

That’s something she would need to prepare for.

As a person who was in charge of a huge clan.

Kiiiing.

Astania leaned back as she watched the screen on the spaceship through the broadcast.

It seemed like it would take a bit before this screen actually turned on.

At that moment a flower came into the corner of her vision.

The bouquet that Tiamet had given her before.

‘Where the hell did this man go anyway?’

Astania touched the necklace on her neck as she mumbled.

This was also something that Tiamet had given her while congratulating her for her rise to the lord of this territory.

A gem which symbolized the ownership of this special district.

‘...I don’t know why he’s so nice to me. Is my beauty so incredible that it even impacts NPCs?’

A smirk had started to appear as she thought up to this point but she quickly resumed her original expression.

Tiamet’s actions weren’t sincere enough for her to think this way.

With an NPC with immeasurable strength, he could’ve easily forced his way in but instead he just roamed around her and took care of her discreetly.

‘How petty... Just charge at me like a man or something.’

This was an another world.

There were cases of people dating NPCs as well.

No, it was quite common actually.

Since the players, who were confident in their looks, approached the NPCs for their power or wealth.

And her clansmen were always joking with her as well.

That she should just lure him in and catch him.

<Isn't it fine as long as he's interested? Just...>

Though it was still a joke in the end, there was a bit of desire for this to actually happen deep inside the clansmen's minds.

Since the Kalikul clan wouldn't just remain as one of the 15 Great Clans once their relationship with Tiamet improved.

There would only be a single clan to rule over all other remaining clans.

That was how powerful Tiamet was.

Even if he just shifted around a bit to let off his excess emotions, the entire world of Exodus would flip upside down.

If Tiamet wanted to give Astania the capital then that would happen, along with the taxes that the Empire collected.

A tremendous strength.

And Astania had actually dreamed about this alluring future as well.

Though she stopped rather quickly.

‘That eye is the problem...’

Astania smacked her lips.

Eyes.

The eyes of Tiamet that stared at her.

Those eyes were always so sad and filled with immeasurable sorrow.

And because of this, using him to gain more power and wealth didn't feel quite right to her.

Astania smiled as she touched the necklace on her neck.

‘I should treat him better once he comes back. We should eat or something. The new restaurant that opened in the front looks good.’

At that moment.

<Oh! It’s coming up! The screen to the outside!>

The entire Kalikul clan started roaring at the broadcast.

And the moment Astania heard this, she resumed her cold expression and regained her posture.

Whatever was there was really important.

<But before we do this, shall we hear the words of the people first? As to how they feel about this historical event?>

“This bastard...”

He was purposely letting out the steam after riling them all up.

And as Astania smirked at the clansman who was pretending to be a reporter at a scene.

‘What the...’

Astania focused her eyes she brought the screen closer to her face.

<Ahh! What the hell!>

<Uaa....>

<What’s going on!....>

Whooooosh.

Shwooosh.

The countless clansmen who were on the broadcast started to disappear into golden light while only leaving behind echos of screams.

“...What? Why are they logging out?”

Astania was confused as she stared at the broadcast.

Since these guys, who had no reason to log out, were disappearing into golden light.

She assumed poison but it didn’t seem like it.

<Uh.....Huh?>

And the players who were watching the broadcast of the screen on the spaceship heard the clansmen broadcasting this backing up in shock.

The players then all looked at the scene on the screen.

<Woah...>

A giant tower that reached above the clouds.

And the vast city that spread out beneath it.

The moment they saw this.

Whooooosh.

Even the broadcasting player disappeared into golden light.

But Astania now knew why this was happening.

The moment she saw the tower.

All of her lost memories were coming back.



Memories of the long forgotten past.

She remembered when she had run to the city during the apocalypse.

She remembered when she had been oppressed by the 1st grade citizens in the city.

She remembered when she had risen up against the 1st grade citizens.

And...

‘Tiamet. You dumbass.’

Astania smiled as she remembered all this.

She realized why Tiamet had taken care of her so much.

And why he had always been around her.

‘...I guess we won’t be able to eat together.’

Whooooosh.

Astania's body started to disappear.

For the price of breaking the law of this world.

A body which was supposed to be trapped inside the Obelisk but had instead been allowed to live in this world.

A body made by someone else would disappear once it breaks their rules.

And soon.

Clank.

Astania disappeared into golden light as only a single necklace remained beneath where Astania originally stood.

---

“...Ah.”

Kiiiiing.

Tiamet was at a loss as he looked between the spaceship that had started to fly up in the distance and the light disappearing from the ring on this finger.

‘How...How could this happen at the last moment.’

The light had gone off on the ring on his finger.

The light of the ring that was connected to Astania’s necklace.

The light on this ring would only go off when the necklace had lost its owner.

And the royal necklace wouldn’t lose its owner even if one logged out.

Which could only mean one thing.

That the necklace had completely lost its owner.

Which meant...

“Haha...Hahahahaha! Hahahahaha!”

Tiamet started to laugh like a maniac.

The laughter which had both rage and hysteria mixed together spread out all around him and Hansoo.

‘For what... For what have I survived up until now?’

The moment he knew Astania died.

Something that had supported him for the past thousand years had fallen.

And at that moment he knew.

That he had cherished this woman more than he had thought he did.

“ ... ”

Tiamet gazed at Hansoo expressionlessly.

“There was a lot more I wanted to talk with you about but... It doesn't matter anymore.”

A cold smile appeared on his face.

And the moment Hansoo saw this.

‘Danger.’

Hansoo instinctively crushed his heart.

It was the expression of a man who had thrown away everything, someone who had nothing to lose anymore.

Kwaduk.

Splurt.

Blood exploded out from Tiamet's mouth but the cold smile remained.

He was a supernatural being even out of the supernatural beings on this world.

He wouldn't die immediately even if his heart was crushed.

Even if his brain was smashed his body would still move according to his final will.

It would only be for a moment but it was more than enough.

Enough to erase everything.

“This damned world... I'm going to return it all.”

‘Since it was a world created from the contract... It'll be okay for me to just return it all to how it was before.’

Then.

Kiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiing!

The tremendous amount of condensed energy next to Tiamet's heart started to pulsate as it quickly enlarged.

The energy which he had compressed with the Rangkom's stake and the White Dragon Arena for a thousand years.

This energy, which could easily flip the world upside down, started to burn up with a blinding light.

“Hahahaha! How useless!”

As Hansoo heard Tiamet's crazed laughter he quickly took Rangkom's stake from his hands.

It was too late to prevent the explosion.

But he had to lessen the damage as much as he could.

Hansoo breathed in and out and then stabbed the stake towards the condensed energy next to where Tiamet's heart had been.

!!!!!!!

The enormous amount of energy started to get suppressed by the stake as they created an intense amount of sparks.

And cracks had appeared on the sphere of energy and energy started to leak out.

This energy followed the stake up into the sky.

Like a bolt of lightning being attracted by a lightning rod.

Kwaddddduk!

Hansoo quickly forced the stake to be pointed towards the sky.

Rummmblee!

And the energy that had started to explode out from the sphere started to follow the stake into the sky.

The snowstorm got dispersed from the energy storm of the sphere and even the clouds above them started to swirl into a storm.

Cough.

Tiamet, who still had a bit of strength left to talk, laughed in a weak manner as he looked at the stake that had embedded him

onto the ground.

“Haha...”

If it was something that could be suppressed so easily like this then he would've never said it could flip the world upside down.

Though most of it flew into the sky.

The remaining energy was more than enough for what he wanted to do.

Boooom!

Hansoo stomped onto the ground as he quickly rushed towards the inner parts of the Obelisk.

It was not time for him to bicker.

‘I can only live if I reduce the damage as much as I can...’

The energy he was feeling from inside Tiamet was no small matter.

Hansoo, who had entered through the broken wall from before, quickly rushed in and started to drop as deep as much as he could as he broke apart the floors.



Towards the deepest parts of this tower.

Boom! Boom!

Tiamet laughed at a loss as he heard the sounds of Hansoo breaking through the floors.

‘Will you... Be able to succeed? In crossing that huge barrier?’

As Tiamet’s eyes slowly closed.

BOOOOOOOOOOOM!!!!

An immeasurable amount of energy exploded out from Tiamet’s body and started to sweep through everything around him.

---

Rumble

“What? What the hell?”

“What happened?”

Mudusella and the adventurers who were with the Ains were at a loss as they stared at the huge pillar of light that had appeared far behind the mountain range.

A deafening sound which rang throughout the world, the earthquake that made the world tremble and blinding light that shook the entire world.

If there wasn't this sky-high mountain range defending them, that huge energy storm would've swept through them as well.

As people stared at the tower of light.

Mudusella saw something else.

The scene of the future she had seen through the Mudusella System in the past.

Though her view was blocked by the mountain range, she could clearly see it.

The scene of the city in the distance.

‘The thousand year old guardian tree...Shall fall.’

She saw the scene of the huge tower falling from the energy storm.

Mudusella asked the adventurers at this moment.

“You. You all received our blessings right?”

“...Yeah. Why do you ask?”

Mudusella smiled coldly.

“...Winter is coming.”

Then.

Boooooom!

The tremendous snowstorm that the Obelisk had been suppressing this entire time started to sweep through the world.

# Chapter 291 : Transcendence (2)

---

Rumble.

At the War fortress near the Spirit Land.

The players started to curse at the broadcast that had suddenly ended.

“What the hell. Did somebody crash into their house?”

The player who was broadcasting seemed to have logged out as the millions of players who were focused on this broadcast were only left with complaints.

“What the hell! Are the higher ups in the clans suppressing the leak of this intel?”

“They’re going to look at it only by themselves huh?”

As the people started to shout in rage.

Rummmble.

In the distance.

A deafening noise accompanied a blinding light as it exploded out

from behind the mountain range.

“Uh...?”

“What the?”

Then.

Papapapa.

Papapa.

The bodies of countless players disappeared into golden light.

Like a wave.

Like something had lit the countless fireworks.

And everybody started to scream at this scene.

“What the hell! What! What’s going on!”

“Bug? Is it a patch?”

“What the fuck! If they’re going to forcibly log us off then at least tell us! There was never a case like this!”

“At least put up a notice!”

Everyone shouted out with mixtures of rage and fear.

This had never happened before.

There was never a case where Exodus had faced a game wide bug like this.

Never a case where they had to force close for a patch.

A huge explosion.

And the mysterious event that occurred after this made everyone fall into chaos.

‘What’s the standard...?’

Antoinette, a player who hadn’t been logged out, mumbled to herself.

Though most had been logged out, there were still players who had remained like this.

But it was only for a moment.

Antoinette gulped as she looked around at the countless artifacts on the ground dropped by hundreds of thousands of players.

‘Woah... I guess it’s not a logout. It seems the server is facing a huge bug this time. Did the server blow up or something?’

Antoinette gulped as she stared at these artifacts.

These artifacts wouldn’t remain behind if they logged out.

This was just like when the players got murdered.

‘They’re going to get sued big time.’

Antoinette giggled as she looked at the scene in front of her.

Though the drop rate was low, that was only when one to two people had died.

Antoinette gulped at the mountain of artifacts in front of her as she soon started to carefully gather them up.

‘Whoever picks them up is the owner. It’s not my fault right? It’s the fault of the stupid game company.’

When would she be able to benefit like this if not now?

And there was chaos around her as well.

“Hey! I picked it up first!”

“What the fuck do you mean! This is yours? This is originally my friend’s!”

“Bullshit! You’re even from a different clan!”

Countless people were bickering over the precious and expensive artifacts.

Even if they take back the artifacts, they had nothing to lose.

Since it would just be returned to how it was.

‘Hehe. How fun.’

But just at the moment when Antoinette was picking the artifacts up and was smiling.

Swoosh.

‘...What?’

Angtunanette shivered at the sudden chill that swept past her.



Though the War Fortress was close to the frozen spirit land of the west, it wasn't enough make her body chill.

Since the chill that existed on the Spirit Land never came out.

Like it was been held back by something.

And though the chances of that chill reaching all the way here was close to 0%, the cold sensation sweeping past her currently was not an illusion.

‘What the hell...’

She wanted to ignore it and continue picking up the artifacts but the temperature that was continuously dropping was not something she could ignore.

Antoinette raised her head with an annoyed expression to figure out the reason behind this chill.

‘Some maniac isn't using a skill to take all these artifacts right? Is it a Spirit Stone?’

But Antoinette's worries weren't correct at all.

Since he worries were merely the best case scenario.

And sadly.

The reality was not something Antoinette could have ever dreamt of.

Kuuuuuuooooooooo!

“...Oh my god.”

From the Spirit Land.

Something was charging towards her.

A bright, white storm made of hail and snow.

The ice storm was freezing everything in its path.

As if the dam that held it back exploded.

“Waaa! What the hell!”

“Run!”

Craack.

Crack.

The players who were located closer to the Spirit Land than him tried to run away in fear but it was all useless.

The players exploded into golden light the moment the ice storm swept past them.

And soon.

Rumble.

The hailstones from the ice storm swept past Antoinette as well.

“Fucking...Hell!”

Whooooosh!

Antoinette freaked out at the snowstorm as countless waves of flame exploded out from her body

The fire that came from the A grade Spirit Stone had always been enough to burn any players and beasts that came her way.

But not this time.

Whoosh.

Crackle.

The energy from the flame was way too small in comparison to the huge storm as the explosion of flames quickly died down.

And soon.

“Fuck...”

‘If I die like this then even the Stone of Immortality is useless...’

Antoinette disappeared into golden light as she cursed inwardly.

Whooosh.

And the storm continued forwards past Antoinette and past the War Fortress.

Towards the Empire and the Kingdoms past the War Fortress.

Towards the entire world.

---

Rummmble.

Rumble.

The giant Obelisk.

And the huge city below it.

This giant and majestic city had long disappeared.

Whooosh.

The steel forest had long melted down from the tremendous amount of heat and energy that had swept past it and had turned into lava.

Though normally the snowstorm would've cooled it down, this storm had long been dispersed by the giant storm of energy as the remaining bits all escaped towards the world as the suppressive powers of the Obelisk disappeared.

Bubble bubble.

Above the lava sea.

Kiiiiiiingg!

The tower that was barely holding on started to tilt.

The remaining few hundred meters of the Obelisk after its top had been blown off by the energy storm.

And soon.

Boooooom!

The Obelisk fell into the lava sea.

Though only a few hundred meters had remained, it was still a humongous size.

This huge mass smashed into the lava sea, caused a tsunami of lava and caused lava to flow inside the giant underground structure beneath the Obelisk.

Rumble.

The underground structure beneath the Obelisk that had barely maintained its shape started to swallow up the molten metal as it created a waterfall of lava.

And from inside the lake of lava deep inside it.

Bubblebubblebubble.

Bubbles rose up as a huge whirlpool was created.

Booom!

An explosion occurred as it pushed back the molten metal lake.

And from inside this.

Boooom!

A humanoid figure rose up.

And this figure landed on the rubble of the Obelisk that was slowly sinking into the sea of lava.

“Cough...Ugh.”

Hansoo, who had scales covering his entire body, checked his current status.

‘...I barely survived.’

He would’ve been able to reduce the damage further if he went deeper since the 3rd grade citizen’s capsules seemed to have been working fine.

But there was a limit to how much he could do within that short period of time and as a result he had been hit by the storm of

energy.

‘But... I managed to survive at least. Now, what to do from here is the real issue.’

Hansoo looked around as he mumbled.

A scene which could easily be described as hell.

The tremendous amount of heat was melting all of the surrounding land.

The sea of lava didn't seem like it would cool down any moment.

It was just like Tiamet's last wish to see the entire world falling to an apocalypse.

And he was standing right in the middle of this all.

The high temperature was continuously boring down into his body as the space where he could stand was slowly disappearing as the Obelisk sank deeper.

There was a limit to how much he could survive after he had been turned into a mess from the explosion.

Roar!



And from deep inside his body, the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement surrounded his entire body as it madly tried to recover his body.

But there was a limit to how much it could do.

At this rate he would definitely die.

‘I need to escape.’

Hansoo looked around at the sea of lava as he breathed in deeply.

Boom!

He then jumped up from the Obelisk and onto the sea of molten metal.

Chiiiiik.

Since its density was originally high, it wasn't hard to run on top of it.

Toong! Toong! Toong!

A shock wave occurred every time Hansoo's feet landed on the sea of lava as he used the rebound force to quickly move forward.

Towards the half destroyed mountain range.

‘It’s a race against time.’

Whether his stamina fell first or whether he escaped this sea of lava before that happened.’

And every time he stepped on the sea of lava, the heat from the molten metal gnawed away at his strength.

‘...I guess the players are done for now.’

Hansoo mumbled as he thought of the lava that was continuously flowing underground.

He then squeezed out every bit of remaining strength he had and started to run.

‘My headache... Is getting worse.’

At that moment.

In a situation where he was using everything he had to go up against this hell-like environment.

Despite the pain in his head.

Kiriring.

The Zero Numbering skill that was keeping Hansoo alive.

The mastery level of the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement was rising at a rapid rate.

# Chapter 292 : Transcendence (3)

---

Rumble.

“My god... Did he aim for all this?”

“Unbelievable...”

Karhal and Ekidu mumbled to themselves as they watched the giant snowstorm that had been released from the Spirit Land and headed towards the Kingdoms and the Empire.

But because it was spread out in an area much larger than the spirit land, the power behind it had been lowered.

Though the ones that were the closest might've been killed off by the storm, the power will lessen the further it spreads out and it would become easier to withstand.

Well of course, only in comparison to the Spirit Land.

‘...They're all going to die.’

Karhal estimated this result as he looked at the might of the storm.

The players should be able to hold on for two to three hours without the Protection Elixir.

And the powerhouses of the Empire and the Kingdoms would be able to hold on a bit longer.

Even longer if they used their defensive spell formations.

But there was a limit to how long they could last.

And the players were disappearing into golden lights from time to time randomly.

Even those who didn't receive enough damage to die.

‘What the hell happened over there...’

Karhal looked away from the mountain range and towards the vast lands of the Kingdom.

Though the citizens of the Kingdom wouldn't freeze to death right away, it was just a matter of time.

They would die from exhaustion.

Or starve to death.

Since there would be no way of acquiring anything to eat if this entire world got covered with those ash clouds and ice.

A minority would be able to survive through it using large amounts of mana but they wouldn't be able to threaten the adventurers anymore.

And the adventurers coming up would be fine as well.

The ones who are already here and have the Ain's Blessing could just set up a base here and the Ains could just give out more blessings while they bought time with the base.

And with that, they could just hunt the beasts on the inner parts of the Spirit Land to level up before going up.

'This is the best plan...'

But there was a variable.

The Ains.

Karhal and Ekidu were worried about the Ains.

'...Would they maintain the Alliance?'

This situation was extremely favorable for them.

Even if they didn't go against the adventurers or betray them, if

the Ains decided to just hide then it would be fatal for them.

Since there would be no way for them to save the people coming up from that moment onwards.

It was impossible to stay within this harsh environment and level up 50 times without the Ain's Blessing.

Not in this world filled with snow and ice.

While Karhal and Ekidu were making worried expressions.

Somebody walked towards them from the snowstorm.

“...What's going on?”

Karhal stared at Mudusella walking through the snow with a worried expression.

‘I don't know what your thoughts are...’

Mudusella smiled towards Karhal.

“I understand why you are worried. But don't worry, we don't have any thoughts of fighting against you.”

There weren't many of them left anyway.

They had no thoughts of losing more by fighting with the adventurers.

Though they were stronger now and would slowly lose out in strength as more came up and received the Ain's Blessing, there was a reason why they could not attack the adventurers.

“It's not time for us to fight.”

“What are you...”

Then.

Boooom!

Boom!

Booooooom!

Fireworks and flames rose up from somewhere from the War Fortress in the distance.

A location where the soldiers of the Kingdom resided.

Karhal cursed.



He knew what those flames meant.

“Fuck...”

“You didn’t think they were going to just die like this right?”

The Spirit Land blew out to spread out to the entire world.

There was only one choice the Kingdoms and the Empire had.

“They will come to hunt us down. I trust you’ll do your best as our allies. Since if you want to survive in the future, you’ll need us.”

The Great General Cykrus and his elite soldiers were no pushovers.

And it was the same for the elite soldiers of the Empire.

As Mudusella mumbled in worry.

Ekidu asked Mudusella just in case.

“Couldn’t we just make an alliance with them?”

Ekidu didn’t like this battle.

There was not much difference in terms of battle strength between them.

If they fought then both sides would receive huge amounts of damage.

And since the opponents also knew this, they might be able to escape this war if they shared the Ain's Blessing.

Since what they wanted was survival.

But Mudusella chuckled at Ekidu's words.

"Hmm. Probably not. If they know about you guys... That would never happen."

---

"What are your orders?"

Whooooosh.

In the midst of the snowstorm.

The vice captain asked Cykrus in worry.

They were able to withstand it for a short moment by squeezing out all the remaining Protection Elixirs and their mana but there was a limit.

Cykrus mumbled as he stared towards the Spirit Land in the distance.

“We need to kill the Ains.”

Not all the citizens were as strong as them and there was a limit to the amount of mana they had at their disposal.

Without any protection, they would slowly die out.

The vice captain asked Cykrus carefully.

“What about an alliance with them...?”

The Ain’s battle strength was not low.

It was the same for the adventurers who had joined them.

Those adventurers wouldn’t want to fight against them either.

Since the soldiers of the Kingdoms and the Empire would fight with their lives on the line.

But Cykrus chuckled.

“Alliance...That’s a very good thing. If this situation could remain like this that is.”

The vice captain fell into silence from the words of his captain, Cykrus.

“Those guys are weak now but would they continue to be in the future as well?”

“ ... ”

“They will continue to flood this place and become stronger as they continue to receive the Ain’s Blessing. Sooner or later they will become the strongest force in this world.”

They had caught a few of these people in the fight before.

And their words were very strange.

That they were just the scouting party.

Sooner or later, tens of millions would start flooding into this place.

And these were not the people who lived in peace like the

residents of the Kingdom but rather people who had been sharpened and polished through countless life and death battles.

“Would they like an alliance between us and the Ains?”

“...”

“In my opinion... They wouldn't. Remember this, this isn't a battle regarding who survives but rather who becomes the next owner of this world.”

These words stabbed into the vice captain's heart.

“Just think of one thing. To capture the Ains after killing them all. They are beasts. People who have climbed up to here by killing. If we don't get rid of them now then the ones who will fight them next are your sons and daughters and even your wife.”

“...Understood.”

The vice captain nodded in resolution.

The talk about his own family had given him a clear reason for this fight.

‘Fucking hell... Who caused this?.’

The vice captain sighed.

He didn't know how things got to this point.

The times of when the Kingdoms and the Empire ruled over the world while the immortals enjoyed this place was very stable and peaceful.

But everything changed in a moment.

The trapped Ains became free as the rat-like adventurers who were always on the run became the biggest threat to their whole existence.

He couldn't believe that all of this happened in less than a month.

‘He has tensed up too much.’

Cykrus spoke to his vice captain.

“Don't think that we're at a disadvantage. This is more like our final chance.”

If this strange explosion didn't occur and the mysterious snowstorm in the Spirit Land stayed within place place, they would only be able to sit back and watch them become stronger by the moment.

But since the fence protecting the Spirit Land had disappeared, this was the perfect chance to wipe them out.

But something worried Cykrus deep inside.

And as if the vice captain had the same thought as him, he said it out loud.

“...The Ains would know all this as well. Why are they helping that side instead?”

There was no reason to maintain the alliance.

Since the situation had been flipped upside down.

The possibility of the adventurers killing them all off after they got strong wasn't just for them.

No, the Ains might end up in a worse situation than them.

‘Mudusella. What are you thinking? You need to wipe those guys out when they're weak...’

Cykrus thought of Mudusella as he mumbled.

---

Rumble.

In the midst of the collapsing land.

The lava sea rose up and down on the other side of the half-destroyed mountain range.

Boom!

The powerful force smashing down on the land continuously created earthquakes as the metal waves smashed onto Hansoo's body as it burned up his skin and mana.

Chiiiiik.

As he was defending himself with the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement.

‘Phew, at least I’ll be able to survive once I get there.’

Hansoo looked at the huge mountain range that he had arrived to.

Chiiii.

Though the snowstorm had disintegrated from the explosion,



there was still snow here and there on the top of the mountain range as the base of the range absorbed most of the impact.

Though the snowstorm was the embodiment of a catastrophe for the citizens, it gave him a break and he could rest up.

Tatatata.

Hansoo mumbled as he grabbed his head while running past the half-destroyed mountain range.

‘...I’ll need to rest for a bit after I escape.’

He couldn’t climb up with this unknown variable within his body.

There was a need for him to recover and check up on his body even if it took some time.

‘There should still be some time until the Abyss opens...’

Of course since he had interfered, the invasion of the Abyss might’ve hastened in comparison to his previous life.

Maybe one or two existences of the Abyss would pop out.

But this was all within his expectations.

The strengthened humankind would be able to withstand this.

Hansoo moved his body even faster in order to forget about his headache.

Oooooong.

And after a while.

The heat disappeared as he entered the area of the snowstorm.

Something came into the eyes of Hansoo while he slowly regenerated his body as he absorbed the energy from the snowstorm.

He saw the vast icy plains past the mountain range.

These icy plains had melted down to a degree from the energy that exploded out from behind the range.

And in the cracks that had appeared.

Rummmble.

He could see dozens of spaceships.

Spaceships that had been frozen by Tiamet even before any of them could escape.

And Hansoo frowned as he looked at this.

Since one of them was strange.

Rummmblee!

‘It’s active?’

One of the ASTRO series let out some light as it started up.

[ASTRO-1]

He could clearly see these letters on the surface of the spaceship that was starting up.

‘...I guess I’ll need to check this out.’

Though his body condition wasn’t top notch, he could not just ignore this.

Since this meant that somebody was inside the ship and was controlling it.

Hansoo quickly started to head towards ASTRO-1.

# Chapter 293 : Transcendence (4)

---

Rumble.

Hansoo approached the huge shining ship as he checked his body.

[Kang Hansoo]

Strength (Green) : 99.9%

Stamina (Green) : 99.9%

Agility (Green) : 99.9%

Perception (Green) : 99.9%

Mana (Green) : 99.9%

Magic (Green) : 99.9%

Physical Resistance (Green) : 99.9%

Magic Resistance (Green) : 99.9%

Level : 250.

<Skills>

- Demonic Dragon Reinforcement : 99.3%
- Pandemic Blade : 60.8%
- Nine Dragons Spear : 38.2%

<Artifacts>

- Forked Lightning (Green) : 99.9%
- Nurmaha's Ring (Green) : 99.9%
- Thousand Soldiers Armor (Green) : 99.9%
- Dark Cloud (Green) : 99.9%
- Dragon Essence Blade (Green) : 99.9%
- Mana Jade (Green) : 99.9%

<Traits>

- Fragments of Seven Souls (3/7)
- Seven Stars (3/7)

Of course his runes should be at 99.9%

But the thing that caught his eyes was the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement that had almost reached 100%.

‘It rose this much huh.’

The masteries of things like reinforcements which increased the abilities of humans rose faster when their bodies were strained while using them.

And he had continuously fought with players and faced beings much stronger than himself like Arthus Krancheska and Tiamet.

And on top of that, the harsh environment that rushed in from

all around him.

‘If only this fucking headache went away...’

But it seems he had no time to heal.

He had to check who was inside that thing.

‘...The chances of it being a player is low.’

The lava had probably filled up the inner parts of the Obelisk and burned up all the bodies of the 3rd grade citizens.

And it was even less likely for it to be someone from the Kingdoms or the Empire.

There was no way for them to have come all the way here already when the Spirit Land had just opened.

Which means there was only 3 options.

An Ain.

Jang Oh and his forces.

Or...

‘Somebody from below might have sneaked up.’

He wanted to heal up a bit more before going in but the ship seemed like it was about to activate.

It would be hard to catch it once it flew up.

And once it started accelerating it would be impossible to catch up before it rose into space.

‘Gotta go in.’

What if someone like Jang Oh used that thing as a bomb?

If that thing fell onto the heads of the adventurers then it would be a catastrophe.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Hansoo quickly stepped off as he headed towards the giant ship.

‘And... This isn’t half bad. To be honest.’

Hansoo mumbled as stared at the vast amount of energy flowing through the surface of the ship.



After arriving below the ship, he jumped and headed straight up through the air.

!!!

As he used up a large amount of strength to reach the ship that had already lifted off, the headache from inside him and his already damaged body both screamed at him.

Crack.

Crunch.

‘Ugh.’

Maybe because his body couldn’t function properly due to the pain.

Hansoo’s body couldn’t reach the ship as he started to fall back down.

‘...Not like this.’

Hansoo frowned while looking at the ship that was lifting off in front of his eyes and used the new power he gained.

At the same time.

Kiiiiing!

The surrounding snowstorm started to gather up accompanied by a strange sound.

To be more specific, the surrounding energy of the Ice Spirit had come together.

And soon a bright blue light gathered beneath his feet.

Crackle.

Ice started to form beneath his feet out of thin air.

Whooosh.

Hansoo jumped off the ice beneath his feet and thankfully was able to reach the surface of the ship.

And as Hansoo reached the surface of the ship and grabbed ahold of it.

Chiiiiiiiik!

The tremendous amount of energy that even the Nine Dragons Spear had a hard time penetrating through gathered up to prevent

the intruder from entering.

Something he could not go through in his current condition.

But there was a clear difference.

Kiiiiing.

This time, the power if the spirit inside him did its job properly.

Rummmble.

The huge amount of energy of ASTRO-1 that was being controlled by the Mudusella System started to flow into his own body.

It flowed through the mana circuits in his body as it reached the mana jade in the deepest parts of his body.

Then.

The dried up mana jade started to suck up the mana greedily like a dried up farmland meeting rain for the first time in years.

It wasn't just sucking up mana either.

The mana jade recycled the mana into the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement as it sent it all over throughout his body.

To heal his body which had been destroyed by the explosion of Tiamet's body.

Rumble.

Though it was slow, he saw his skin regenerating as he sighed out in relief.

Since the energy of the Spirit used for the shield considered him to be a friendly entity.

Though he couldn't use the energy however he wanted due to the power of the Mudusella System being stronger, he was easily able to receive a much purer and concentrated energy than what was spread out around him.

‘And I can even do something like this.’

Hansoo condensed the energy using his controlling power and pushed it into the surface of the ship.

And then.

Crunch.

And the shield smoothly gave way as his spear reached the surface of the ship.

Now matter how powerful this allow was, it wouldn't be able to withstand the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement without the energy.

Kiiiiiiing.

Sparks were created from the spear and the surface of the ship as it started to melt down.

As he used the power of the spirit to stop the flow of the energy and melted the surface of the ship, a hole big enough for a human to go through had appeared.

‘Done.’

Hansoo felt a warm and soft energy surrounding him, unlike the cold and harsh snowstorm outside, as he entered the ship.

Which meant that the colony inside the ship was functioning properly.

Hansoo absorbed the surrounding energy as he walked towards the engine room.

‘Let's at least see who it is.’

Oooong.

As Hansoo walked by, the surrounding flowers died, and the lake lost its luster as the lanterns flickered off.

Because he was forcibly sucking in the energy to heal his body.

Hansoo nodded as he used his new powers to heal himself.

If the Mana Jade or the Body Enhancement Surgery strengthened the body itself, the Spirit allowed perfect acclimatation to the surrounding environment as well as the power to prepare for any unknown variables.

The fact that it could divert a fraction of the energy from the enemy's attack and use it for itself was amazing in itself.

Since he was able to reduce the power of the enemy and increase his own defense.

But Hansoo suddenly frowned as he felt the energy coming out from the control tower.

‘No way.’

At that moment.

An extremely familiar face had appeared in front of him.

The faces he had seen in the past and in the present as well.

The enhanced race member who had the face of Tiamet.

‘Level... It should be around 330?’

Hansoo frowned as he looked at the TMT series that were absorbing the energy from the Spirits in the ship.

Though they were much, much weaker than Tiamet, they were still very strong.

And these guys didn’t have any bombs inside them nor had their conditions been turned into a mess from the Obelisk’s storm.

TMT-1 walked out with a shocked expression.

‘...He really killed Tiamet.’

Though they were all of the TMT series, TMT-17, or Tiamet, was an exception who had escaped the confinements and had become a monster.

For an weak adventurer who could only break through the limits for a short moment to defeat Tiamet.

Though Mudusella had indeed prophesized all this and though they had felt the Obelisk falling, it was still shocking to see somebody defeat Tiamet and come back alive.

“What are you doing here?”

TMT-1 came back to his senses and remembered his job.

Not his first job which he was doing here.

But his second task, after meeting the existence called Kang Hansoo.

‘Did she tell me to greet him first? My god, for him to really appear.’

TMT-1 thought that MSL-17, Mudusella, was truly amazing as he shrugged his shoulders.

“You have fought for us, I am very thankful of this.”

“I don’t think that’s what you want to say.”

It didn’t seem like they had come here to apologize.

And TMT-1 replied expressionlessly at Hansoo’s words.



“Yes, you are correct. Since there isn’t much time I will directly transfer the message of our representative, MSL-17.”

Then.

Kirrring.

TMT-1 used his Light Spirit’s power and created a hologram with the surrounding energy.

And Mudusella appeared in the air as she smiled.

<I thank you with all I have. You have freed our race.>

TMT-1’s energy trembled as it even made the same voice as Mudusella.

The respectful tone of Mudusella was filled with sincere thankfulness.

‘This is a bit too much for just releasing them from the seal...’

As Hansoo frowned.

Mudusella’s hologram continued to speak.

<We thought about what we could do in return. But we came up

with only one thing we could do as repayment.>

No matter whether Hansoo wanted it or not, there was only one thing they could do for him.

And as her words ended.

A humongous energy beam, which was actually TMT-1 who had surrounded himself in white light, charged towards Hansoo.

Unlike TMT-1 who had a cold expression.

Mudusella's hologram smiled warmly as she spoke her final words.

<Since you released our binds... We will release yours as well.>

“I never wanted such a thing!”

Along with Hansoo's shout.

Boooom!

The giant spaceship got filled with explosive sounds.

# Chapter 294 : Transcendence (5)

---

Enbi Arin.

The substitute leader for when Hansoo wasn't here.

‘Since he's running around by himself... I will need to fill his void.’

An organization didn't just work because you gathered up a lot of people.

It was even more complex than the most complex machines.

It needed constant supervision to get rid of enmity between members and provide everyone with what they wanted and needed in order to become a successful organization.

And in one way, Enbi Arin's job was even more important than Hansoo's.

Since she was constantly controlling and managing those who tried to cause trouble.

Like now.

“What are we going to do?”

“...There really isn't a reason for us to fight them right?”

Enbi Arin massaged her temple as she watched the countless Ten Thousand Men Captains who had gathered up in front of her with complaints.

‘Fuck... Where the hell did this Hansoo kid go. And nobody else can handle things like this.’

There were plenty of powerful people she could trust in battles.

But power wasn't enough to control such a large organization.

People like Sofia or Karhal weren't suited for management and though Ekidu had experience controlling a village, she had never managed such a large organization either.

And it was the same for the others.

There was a huge difference between personal strength and managing a huge organization properly.

And Enbi Arin was one of the small minority who could do such a thing.

Since she had the experience of managing the <Cross> clan, one of the giant clans which ruled over the Orange Zone.

If there weren't for the managers of huge clans and herself, this huge organization would've long imploded.

But with the Mana Pool and the Body Enhancement Surgery she had received, instead of beating up their enemies she really wanted to beat down the people in front of her.

“There's no point in being angry. Just persuade us. Why do we have to fight?”

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

One of the Ten Thousand Men Captain, which was one of the highest positions in their quickly created rank system, Samuel Kinar.

He had been in charge of the middle management in the Rerorerore clan in the giant clan of the Orange Zone and was an expert in management and was powerful as well.

She originally had great trust on him because he had always watched what came out of his mouth right now he was really getting on her nerves.

Enbi Arin spoke in words what the other captains were implying.

“So... You want us to leave behind the Ains and just depart?”

This was what the others wanted.

To leave the Ains behind and escape.

Away from the forces of the Kingdoms and the Empire approaching him.

And Samuel nodded.

“Yes.”

Crack.

The handle of golden sword in her hand crunched apart.

Though it was an artifact created from the efforts of masters from the lower zone, it could not withstand her strength which had been severely increased due to her <Tainted Emotion>.

“You understand what your words are right?”

It wasn't just leaving behind the Ains.

Without the Ains, there was no future for the people who would come after them.

Without the Ain's Protection, they would all freeze to death before they could level up.

Samuel flinched at Enbi Arin's words but didn't back off.

“Honestly there are indeed more people below. But to me, the ten thousand lives I lead are more important than all of them. If we collide now then I don't know how many would die out of them.”

They had seen with their own eyes.

Great General, Cyrkus.

They had seen how powerful his elite soldiers were.

And level 400 was not something they, who hadn't even reached level 250, could handle.

Even if they won, they would receive a huge amount of casualties.

And there was a way for them to guarantee their lives.

Use the Ains as bait and then climb up after leveling up from the deepest parts of the Spirit Land.

In a situation where the people of the Empire and the Kingdoms

had no reason to attack them, there was no reason for them to fight for the Ains.

‘Fuck...’

Enbi Arin frowned as she looked at Samuel’s resolute expression.

‘It was much better when the Spirit Land was here. Fuck. Hansoo please help me.’”

Enbi Arin thought of Hansoo as she mumbled.

---

“Can you see them?”

Ekidu frowned as she looked at the people who were clamouring in the distance.

‘Ugh...How embarrassing.’

And it was the same for Karhal.

Their faces had long turned red from embarrassment.

‘Fucking bastards. They should at least just do it quietly.’



“I really feel bad for mister Hansoo. For him to move around with these people. It’s not like he’s your mother...”

And the moment Karhal heard her words he splurged out in anger.

“What are you saying, Hansoo is raising them because they are still useful.”

Though she had excluded him in the ‘they’, he knew he was a part of it.

‘And it’s not like our meeting was that smooth.’

If it was up to him, he would just kill off the ones who he should and take the ones he needed.

He would focus on power and materials.

And his own opinion wasn’t that different from Clementine’s minion.

But there was a reason why he followed Hansoo’s opinion instead.

Since Hansoo’s method was much better in the long run if they could control them properly.

And they had been able to control them well up until now.

‘I guess it’s all up to one’s own abilities.’

And from what he could see, Hansoo had more than enough rights to use such a method.

Karhal shouted towards Mudusella as he looked at the golden army in the distance.

“Look, even that captain leads an army around despite his strength. It’s not like you live in this world all alone.”

Becoming stronger as they became bigger was a given.

And the friction that occurred from this was the price for this strength.

‘There’s no such thing as an organization who’s always in peace. It’s not like we’re robots.’

But Mudusella’s smile became even brighter at his words.

“Is that so?”

“...What are you trying to say?”

Mudusella chuckled as she continued.

“So where did you use them?”

“...What?”

“I’m asking if there was really a time where you guys were needed.”

“ ... ”

Karhal couldn’t refute her words.

‘...Right. Where is he trying to use us?’

It should be natural for somebody to want to use the power of a group once they created it.

Even if it was more efficient to act alone, it was safer to move in a group.

But Hansoo’s actions up until now were clearly different.

‘It’s like he really is our carer...’

Mudusella kept smiling as she continued.

“From what I hear, everything you guys have around you is from him... And he even has to feed you. He needs to think of the cost of maintenance but he had no use for you...But it’s not like you guys will listen just because he gives out rewards. And it’s not like you’re that precious to that man? You guys don’t really seem that close.”

“ ... ”

Karhal and Ekidu’s faces turned gloomier and gloomier as Mudusella’s words stabbed into their hearts.

Though they wanted to refute, they couldn’t say anything because of the people bickering behind them.

Mudusella continued.

“Everyone has a need for some measure of enjoyment and contentment. Have you ever seen him search for such a thing?”

“ ... ”

Ekidu and Karhal shook their heads.

They actually had talked about this in the past.

<What does he live for?>

It's not like humans were machines, one would clearly break down if they continuously ran around 24 hours a day.

But this was exactly what Hansoo was doing.

And it wasn't like he was looking for his own enjoyment.

He could easily live like a king by ruling over the adventurers.

It's not like he needed to risk his life or face a powerful enemy immediately.

But from his own actions...

“Isn't he like a worker ant? So I became curious...”

There was two reasons for one to work hard to the point of even destroying their own body.

Either there was a huge, unbelievable reward.

Or.

‘Somebody forced him.’

But Karhal shouted in rage from her words.

“No way! Who can force him to do anything!?”

Who could force Hansoo to do things?

Even if there was somebody, there was plenty of chances for him to escape their grasp.

Since he was alone most of the time.

Mudusella laughed coldly.

“I’m curious about that as well. So... I’m going to help out a bit.”

“What?”

“It should be done about now.”

At that moment.

Kuooooooooo.

In the distance.

Something started to fly up above the mountain range.

‘...That is?’

A huge steel ship that was letting out light.

Karhal and Ekidu frowned as they watched the giant ship approaching them.

---

Boooom!

Boom!

‘...Do we just need to beat him up like this?’

Since ASTRO-1 will move to its destination on its own, he just needed to do this.

But beating up a guy whose body hadn’t even healed up wasn’t very fun.

TMT-1 made a bored expression while beating up Hansoo with his light blade.

‘Well. If he dies then whatever.’

There were no orders to deal with him carefully.

He had just been told to drive him to near death.

Though Hansoo was holding on very well, he needed to perform his first job now.

Kiiiiiiiing!

As TMT-1 gathered up energy to smash for his final attack.

Craack.

Crunch.

“...?”

TMT-1 stopped at the strange noises coming out from Hansoo who was kneeling on the ground.

A strange change.

Then.

Hansoo slowly rose up.



With a completely different expression from before.

A small mumble came out from his mouth.

“...Eres. Keldian.”

<Please take care of the humans well.>

His broken memories surfaced.

Fixing the broken cracks inside him.

“If you were asking for a favor... You should’ve just told me.”

Craaack.

Cruunch.

As he heard the frightening noises all over his body.

Hansoo smiled.

# Chapter 295 : The Great Collapse (1)

---

Would it be possible for a weak person to not be selfish?

In a world like this?

There were no exceptions.

In order to survive, weak people needed to adopt the mindset of trampling upon others and stealing.

And it was the case for me.

But everyone is granted a chance to change.

No matter if that change if one you wanted or not.

---

Rummbles.

TMT-1 stopped attacking as it saw Hansoo emitting a strange aura.

Mudusella had told him to stop his attacks as soon as something changed about Hansoo.

‘...I wouldn’t want to attack him even without her order.’

TMT-1 mumbled to himself as he watched the strange creature in front of him whose entire bone and muscle structures were being reconstructed.

It seemed like every part of Hansoo was changing.

And even the color of his reinforcement skill was changing as well.

The previous beautiful, dark gold light turned chaotic.

As if it was purifying and stabilizing itself before going up onto the next level.

And as most of these lights entered Hansoo’s body, Hansoo stood up.

Hansoo looked around as TMT-1 met his gaze.

‘...Something clearly changed.’

It wasn’t just a physical change.

His mentality had also changed.

And another existence came up inside TMT-1's head once he saw this 'new' Hansoo.

'Tiamet.'

Hansoo's previous eyes were very similar to them, the TMT series.

Eyes which only followed orders and sought after battle.

So TMT-1 had actually looked down on Hansoo.

He was befuddled at how this guy, who had been born with something none of them had, had fallen to the same level as them.

But now, his eyes were completely different.

His eyes now had countless emotions and desires which he was suppressing as much as he could.

And TMT-1 had seen this before.

There was one among their ranks who had gone through the same thing.

Tiamet.

A man who had been born a machine, a tool and had succeeded after chasing after his desires until the end.

With the single desire to climb over the wall.

TMT-1's speculations weren't wrong.

A lot of changes were indeed happening both inside and outside of Hansoo.

‘This was erased... Was this erased too? Gosh.’

Hansoo mumbled as he chuckled.

His memories were coming back.

Memories of the past when he had climbed up alongside Jang Oh.

When he had met Clementine, Eres, Keldian and Kangtae.

When the Abyss had opened up and he and the others had defeated Clementine.

And how he had reached the Time Crystal deep within the Abyss with the surviving humans.

Most of this was along what he originally remembered.

Minus a few missing things.

‘...Eres, Keldian.’

Eres’s trait, <Lord>, created gaps in his mind as Keldian’s skill rushed into his head.

Not in a harsh way.

Very softly.

But very effectively.

So they could lead Hansoo towards the direction they wanted.

By erasing memories that got in the way and planting information inside him that created an obsession deep inside his heart.

But it was all coming back.

And his physical body was evolving as his Demonic Dragon Reinforcement advanced.

The suppressed soul dispersed and reformed and was completely fixed.

“...Saving humans...How tedious.”

Hansoo looked towards the golden army below the spaceship that had risen high up as he mumbled.

For them to prepare such a large amount of tools for him who preferred to work solo.

Though it was him who had done it in the end, it didn't really feel like it was his work.

Since if it was really him, he wouldn't have done any of this.

‘I guess I understand why they have done this.’

Hansoo compared his original memories and the new memories he had made after coming back to the past and chuckled.

If it was his original personality then he would've given this all up many times over.

Crack.

Hansoo checked his body and started to ponder.

About what he would do from now on.

His body had changed and his mentality had changed as well.

He found his lost memories, escaped his binds and found himself again.

His goal should change as well.

Different from the original plan of Eres and Keldian, he should achieve what they wanted through his own style.

‘I understand your good intentions but...You really shouldn’t treat a friend like this.’

Eres and Keldian’s plan was very simple.

Stop the release of the information regarding the future and the Abyss and strengthen the humans step by step.

By gathering the various relics throughout the seven zones and preventing infighting between the humans.

And both of these things had been going well up until this Green Zone.

‘It wasn’t bad. At least until now.’



Hansoo chuckled.

The past him would've never been able to do any of this.

It wasn't his abilities that were the issue but rather his personality, it didn't fit him.

But the result wasn't bad.

Though him having been forced by somebody didn't feel that good, the fact that he had created a basis for a large amount of people to survive was a good thing.

This was why he liked Eres.

He had been able to chase after a goal that he usually could never even dream of because of his personality.

'But not like this... I'll see you after I climb back up.'

Hansoo decided to forget about Eres and Keldian for now.

There was no point in agonizing over Eres and Keldian whom he couldn't even see right now and everything that had happened up until now was because of their interference.

It was time to forget about them.

He had to plan his future.

‘Well, I do have to win.’

He agreed that he had to win against the residents of the Abyss just like Keldian.

He also agreed that the entire human race had to become stronger just like Eres.

But their methods were wrong.

‘...Was our plan the perfect plan?’

They created a new clan by using the knowledge they gained from the Abyss as the basis as well as the experience they had gained when they passed through the seven worlds.

Stopping the invasion of the Abyss as much as they could, increasing the strength of individual humans to the utmost limit and fight the Abyss together.

But after putting together the countless secrets of the zones he hadn't known in the past, a new solution appeared inside his head.

‘Not like this. Look at them all.’

Hansoo clicked his tongue as he looked at the golden army that was below through the panel on the spaceship.

They looked good on the surface but that was it.

The beings of the Abyss were strong.

Very strong.

This was nowhere enough.

Hansoo spoke towards TMT-1 who had been staring at him the whole time.

“Hey. Let me borrow your ship for a bit.”

---

Ooooooong.

“...What is that?”

“What the hell. Did the Ains do something?”

“...It'll be bad if it's the Kingdom's weapon.”

A formidable surface and its overflowing energy.

If a weapon was on board then it would become an indestructible weapon and even if there weren't any weapons, it would still be dangerous.

From the amount of energy that flew through it, merely self destructing it would cause a tremendous explosion.

And there might be a ton of things inside it since it seemed like there was a lot of space within it as well.

Every adventurer looked towards the spaceship that had flown into the sky in a worry.

It would best if it was their ally but the chances of that being true was very low.

At that moment.

Kiiiiiiiing.

A few beams of light came out from the ship as a giant hologram appeared in the air.

A hologram which resembled a certain someone.

And the moment everyone saw this.

“Huh?”

“...Where the hell did he even get such a thing.”

“Phew...Thank god. What took him so long.”

The adventurers sighed out in relief with a slightly confused expression.

An extremely familiar face had shown up.

And it filled them with hope.

‘I don’t know how he’s using it but...Not bad.’

And they could tell that it was good for them from the expression of the people from the Kingdom.

‘Could we climb up without fighting this time again?’

‘That would be nice.’

Though they didn’t say it out loud, they had all thought the same thing.

As to how much they could climb while avoiding the fights.

Most people didn't like fights.

Fights where their lives were on the line.

But as most of the adventurers sighed.

'...Is that really Hansoo?'

Some people who had been with Hansoo for quite a bit of time, like Mihee, made confused expressions.

Something felt different about Hansoo's expression.

Karhal and Ekidu looked towards Mudusella to see what this all of this was about but Mudusella merely shrugged her shoulders.

No, she wasn't just pretending not to know.

She actually didn't know how Hansoo would change.

She had just smashed apart his restraints as payment for releasing them but even she didn't know what would happen as a result.

As Karhal and Ekidu made worried expressions while looking at Hansoo.

<Mudusella, I know you're listening. And you, Cykrus, let's talk.>

A giant voice came out from the spaceship as it rang throughout the entire area.

‘...What's he planning?’

Everyone was confused at this request.

---

TMT-1, who had projected Hansoo's hologram outside according to his request, asked Hansoo because he was curious about why Hansoo had called Mudusella and Cykrus over.

“What are you planning.”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders as he replied to TMT-1's question.

“I'm going to flip everything upside down. That's the answer right?”

“...”

‘Why is he asking me?’

How would he know what Hansoo was thinking?

But then Hansoo asked another question.

Not at TMT-1 but rather, into the air.

“Answer me, the thing we are doing... Is not the right path right?”

This wasn’t the path that led towards victory.

One would find the answer if they combined the path Tiamet took and the hints hidden throughout the world.

An answer they would be able to find only by smashing apart their common sense and logic.

At that moment.

Craaaack.

The space split open as a small creature replied to Hansoo with a smile.

“Not bad. Taking care of you guys was really annoying me.



Thankfully you've figured out the intent of the creator of this game. Did you feel something while you were playing war?"

Hansoo nodded.

With a slightly bitter expression.

"Yeah...We should've... Opened the Abyss from the very beginning."

And then.

"You pass."

The fairy smiled in contentment.

# Chapter 296 : The Great Collapse (2)

---

Humans got stronger the more they gathered.

And they got stronger the more powerful each individuals were, the more people they had as well as the better the synergy with each other was.

So Hansoo and the others planned things following this concept.

To raise each individual's strength to the utmost limit.

To save as many people as they could.

And to create as much synergy between them as possible by getting rid of all forms of infighting.

This was the solution they had come with, creating a completely unified human race.

This was the only option they could think of in a world like this where each individual's strength was limited.

Even in the Green Zone, the limit of one's level was 250.

Though there might be a bit of difference between people due to their artifacts and skills but not by much.

They could not defeat a huge army that was well-coordinated.

They had thought that climbing through the zones as quick as possible was the fastest way to get strong and they made that the basis of their plan.

A plan to create a well-coordinated army.

A plan to create seven highly organized bases throughout the Zones that were protected from the Abyss.

But the moment he saw Tiamet.

The moment he saw a superhuman who could go up against the entire world by himself.

Hansoo realized.

That trying to buy time by protecting the seven zones from the Abyss was the wrong answer.

“...Should’ve just smashed it apart from the beginning.”

What they needed was not a strong army.

What they needed was a supernatural being that could go up

against the entire world.

A gigantic tree that devoured everything and constantly grew.

A limitless world and powerful enemies to grow this giant tree.

Him withholding information was not the answer.

It was the complete opposite.

They shouldn't be trying to grow like greenhouse plants away from the harsh environment outside the greenhouse itself.

He needed to share the information.

He needed to share the information with as many people as he could to break down the wall that stood between this world and the Abyss.

In order to break the limits.

To create a spot where he could fight, devour and grow into a huge tree.

It would be possible if they fused with the Abyss, the limitless world.

It would be possible for everybody to become as strong as Tiamet and even stronger.

And at this moment Hansoo mumbled.

‘...Eres and Keldian probably knew this.’

But it was clear that they were worried.

That Hansoo would release the information right away and break down the wall right away.

And now Hansoo realized why they had fumbled around with his memories.

‘...I guess Eres could not allow this.’

When the greenhouse fell and the harsh condition rushed in, only the strong seeds will stay alive.

Since they would kill off all the weaker plants that would steal its nutrients.

But Eres wouldn't be able to withstand this.

The moment the wall between the Abyss and the seven zones broke down, countless people would die.

The already difficult world would become even more impossible as even those at the red and orange zones would've been dragged down to their death.

Since countless people had died when the wall broke down even in the past.

A lot of transcendents might appear.

And the chance of victory might increase as well.

But Eres could not allow a victory gained through a mountain of corpses.

This was why they had fumbled with his memories.

And as Hansoo thought of all this.

Another question appeared inside his head.

‘...Why me?’

If Eres, Keldian or someone else from the past had come then they would've been able to save at least 20 more years.

At that moment.

The fairy asked Hansoo.

“Are you sure about this though? Originally, the only one qualified for transcendence is you.”

Even when the walls existed.

There were existences who could break through the ceiling and grow.

Transcendents.

People who had the rights to break through the limits set by the world and go above and beyond.

This right was completely up to one’s potential.

People who weren’t born with this couldn’t even dream of such a thing.

The only transcendent who had been born in this Green Zone was Tiamet in the tens of thousands of years of its history.

“I’m saying, in a situation like this where the ceiling is sealed. Only you have the right to break through it. And when that happens, those things below wouldn’t be able to go up against any of your words.”

The best part about his trait, Seven Stars, was not really that his skills grew fast and beyond their limits.

It was the fact that it gave him the right to break through the ceiling that stopped everyone else.

This was the true identity of the Seven Stars, one of the many forms of the Transcendent Stars.

The fairy laughed.

“You could become an emperor. Leading a tremendous army. The sole sovereign of the humankind. But if you break apart the ceiling completely, that might not happen right? Competitors might appear.”

Because the wall existed, the one who could break through it shone the brightest.

But if this wall didn't exist?

Competitors would appear.

There were always people who had potential, worked hard, were strong minded as well as lucky.

Though there might barely be one transcendent out of billions of



humans, there were countless people who could reach the wall.

And as he heard this.

‘...Ah, this is why huh.’

Hansoo realized why Eres and Keldian had sent him back specifically.

If Eres, Keldian or other first year adventurers came then they would’ve been able to buy more time.

But they still wouldn’t be able to break down the wall between them and the Abyss which would only limit their own strength as well.

And when that happened he, who would come into the tutorial, might get killed.

Since unlike the other three, Hansoo was actually weak in the beginning.

So they had sent him.

‘So they knew. That a leader was needed in the end...’

After saving as many people as they could before breaking down

the wall.

After Hansoo put everybody under his control.

So that Hansoo could lead them through the Abyss after the wall crashed.

The sovereign status that was maintained with strength.

But Hansoo shook his head again.

‘This is a wrong choice as well.’

Strength came before anything in a victory.

He could not fight with such a weak army.

He needed warriors for the battle against the Abyss.

People even he could barely fight against.

This was that the God and the fairies wanted.

Fighting and fighting.

They wanted something that could amuse them to be born.

‘...I’ll play along.’

Hansoo made his decision and smiled towards the fairy.

“I’ll do what you guys want me to.”

The fairy asked again.

“Are you sure? This is a very important choice you’re making. If you do this then the remaining 4 billion people or so will have their lives changed. And it’s important for you as well.”

Once he broke the wall, the 4 billion or so people will fall straight into the hard and unforgiving life headfirst and would need to fight continuously.

If some figured what Hansoo had done then they might hate him to the core.

Why did Hasoo make them fight?

And moreover it wasn’t really to Hansoo’s benefit. Since he had given up the chance to stand above everybody and instead had given a chance to his competitors.

The people that could reach but could not break through the ceiling would soon grow crazily.

And there would be people who would go against him as well.

Hansoo chuckled.

“Living comfortably is impossible after coming to this world.”

He just needed to see one thing.

Could he climb over the giant wave?

He didn't want to nor was he confident in doing so.

But he had given others a chance to gain their own strength by sacrificing their immediate comfort.

A chance to gain enough strength to fly over the tsunami that would come their way in the future.

Only those people, people who sacrificed their own comfortable life to get stronger, would have the right to fight against the Abyss.

What he needed was not meat shield that listened to his orders.

He needed allies whom he could entrust his back to.

As he made his decision.

‘...Let’s begin.’

Hansoo activated the soul fragments inside him.

Ooooooooooon!

The soul fragments trembled as they started to resonate.

The three worlds Hansoo had gone through.

Along with the soul fragments inside the three overseers of those worlds.

The huge earthquake inside his body trembled alongside the three fragments.

[Please convey everything I say...To everyone in your worlds.]

Then.

Hansoo spoke towards the huge screen in front of him, towards the countless adventurers staring at his ship.

“The words I will say from now are extremely important and things you must know.”

Red.

Orange.

Yellow.

Green.

Every Zone.

Towards the billions of people living in these zones.

His information regarding the Abyss will spread.

‘Until the crack appears on the barrier protecting these worlds from the Abyss and things proceed onto the next level...’

Hansoo spoke coldly as he felt everyone’s eyes falling on him.

“Listen well. Remember clearly. And be aware. As to what will happen from now on.”

---

[Listen well. Remember clearly. And be aware. As to what will happen from now on.]

Tom Roren, who was receiving the protection of the World Tree in the Red Zone, squinted at the giant video in the air that had been created from the powers of the World Tree.

‘What is he trying to say?’

There was never a case such a broadcast had been made.

And the mood didn’t seem simple either.

Though he hadn’t seen that man himself, he had long been fed up by this man’s stories.

‘Kang Hansoo.’

The one who had killed the Five Calamities of the Red Zone to Revive the World Tree and save the Red Zone.

And then.

Hansoo’s words slowly rang throughout the world.

[What I am going to tell you about... Is the reality and the wave that will come your way.]

“...What the hell is he saying now.”

Tom Roren was befuddled at these words.

And not only him but every other adventurer in the Red Zone as well.

‘Come our way?...Is he a prophet or something?’

As they were making confused expressions.

Hansoo’s words rang throughout the entire zone.

[Remember these words. The information regarding the Abyss.]

Then.

Dudududududdddududu.

The barrier surrounding the entire world squirmed as the world itself seemed to tremble.



## Chapter 297 : The Great Collapse (3)

---

In the Orange Zone, a distinct voice continuously flowed out from the robots that Gwanje, who had the Crown of Thorns, controlled.

The broadcast was everywhere, from the hunting grounds to the giant control center created for recreation.

Anton Oel, who had been hunting beasts above Lazaar, was in a daze as he heard the broadcast.

As well as everyone else next to him.

[The first thing you have to be aware of is the race called the Karkil, their heart exist 15cm below their left chest bone and you will only be able to kill them after you destroy all three of their hearts located there at the same time. If not then they will create an explosion in a 150m radius. Everyone who has weaker defenses than someone at the Orange Zone with lower than 55% mastery of a high grade defense skill will... Definitely get killed by this. Also...]

“...What is this?”

“What’s going on.”

The words ringing out from the air were very hard to comprehend.

It was saying that these Zones that they were going through, the Seven colored zones, were just the beginning.

That it was a preparation for the actual game, the Abyss.

And...

‘The actual game is going to start before the Seven zones ended?’

What were they, who were now barely in the Orange Zone, supposed to do then?

How could they deal with monsters that even people in the Violet Zone had a hard time dealing with?

For them, who had only been here for 4 years, to have to deal with things that even people who had been here for 20 years would get massacred by.

‘...I really hope this is a joke.’

But the words in the air were too serious for it to be a joke and for them to ignore.

The words continued.

[Sadly, you arrived way too late behind the first people. So the Abyss will fall upon us before you guys can get stronger. In preparation for this, you need to struggle with everything you've got and everything you will ever get in order to get stronger. These are some good things to know : In the Orange zone, the alloys that can be made are...]

Like a teacher giving a lesson.

Information that was crucial for survival continuously flew out from the air.

The endless flow of information stopped for a moment as the voice sighed and gave a few additional words.

[... Of course even if I tell you this it won't be easy. But you need to use this information as the basis to continually get stronger. That's the only way for you to survive.]

“...Why is he only telling this to us now then?”

“It would've been better to tell us earlier...”

“Damn... Is this really going to happen?”

Mumbles were heard.

A seed of fear was planted inside the minds of people.

And naturally their fear and hate focused towards one person.

Towards Hansoo who was telling them this information as if he was confident enough to survive.

“Damn... Is he saying he’s confident enough to survive by himself?”

His voice was too calm unlike how uneasy they were feeling.

---

Rummmble.

“Mmm...It’s proceeding well. Good, good.”

The fairy felt the vibrations in the air as it smiled.

Though normal humans couldn’t sense this, it could as it was an overseer.

The scene of the information regarding the Abyss spreading out to hundreds of millions of people in an instant.

And as the information densities between the Abyss and this location were equalizing, the giant wall that stood between the two worlds started to break down.

The wall that the god had erected and that they were watching over.

Rummblee.

The fairy smiled as it spoke to Hansoo.

“Will you be okay though? They will hate you a lot.”

People will find a target to direct their anger and fear when they found out about bad news.

And even more so if they couldn't do anything about those news.

Moreover the person who gave those news was extremely calm, as if the approaching calamity wouldn't affect him at all.

If Hansoo continued to spread information out like this and these were all true, it's clear who the people will think of when they start suffering.

The fairy chuckled.

“The prophet will always be treated badly right? Why don’t you try making excuses? You can lie to them or something.”

The prophets who gave bad prophecies never had a good ending.

Look at the past chinese dynasties.

History clearly showed what happened to those who spoke ill of the future.

There were only two cases in which the prophet received a good treatment.

Either they would say things that people liked.

Or they would lead people towards the correct path and navigate them through a bad future.

Of course Mudusella belonged to the latter, this was how she was able to receive the respect of her whole race.

Hansoo cut off the fairy.

“There’s no time to explain.”

Each time more information was released hastened the descent of the Abyss.

And he couldn't release all the information at once either.

He needed to stay on the edge.

So people would be able to survive.

And because of this, there was a limit to how much information he could tell them.

He needed to tell them the most important information first.

Since there was a limit to how much he could tell them, every word he said was precious.

Hansoo finished his words and spoke towards the screen again.

“The most dangerous beings that will appear in the Green Zone are the Dakramas. These guys usually use supersonic waves to communicate and...”

Everyone thought that Hansoo was telling the same thing in all the zones but that was not correct.

While Hansoo was telling the people of the Green Zone the

relevant information, he was using the soul fragments to tell different things to the people in the different zones.

Just the necessary information for each floor.

Soon the Great Collapse will happen and the information he was telling them was the most crucial for them to survive.

Knowing or not knowing made a huge difference, especially if one's life was on the line.

And every floor had different things they needed to know.

The things he were telling them would be of great help when the change came.

‘Though it's far from everything... It should be much better since they have information and strength unlike in the past.’

Hansoo mumbled as he absorbed the information the owners of the soul fragments had about the different zones.

And Hansoo's efforts weren't in vain.

The strength of the humans were countless levels higher than when the Abyss fell upon them in the past.



First, there were many more people and each individual's strength was much higher than that of the past.

Internal strife had been reduced as much as possible and though there wasn't a lot of camaraderie, some friendship still existed between adventurers.

Even if the Abyss opened, they would fare much better than in the past.

‘Survive well... And become strong.’

“The greatest weakness of the Dakramas is...”

As Hansoo started to talk to the people of the Green Zone.

A tremendous tremor could be felt through his skin.

Although logically nobody should be able to sense this, he, who had the right to break through the roof, could feel it.

This familiar sensation.

The ceiling was collapsing.

The tremor that broke the wall between the two dimensions.

At that moment.

“Hahahahaha! Good job mister Hansoo!”

The fairy laughed out loud as it snapped its fingers.

Then.

Rumble.

A tremendous tremor that everybody could feel rang throughout the entire world.

---

Rumble.

“...What the?”

Everyone started to freak out.

A great change was occurring.

The sky was breaking apart.

The clouds split apart as a crack appeared.

The grounds broke apart.

Mountain ranges broke down as fissures appeared.

Craaaaaack.

Holes appeared in the skies and on earth and continued to enlarge.

Then.

Uddduuudk.

The holes stopped growing as they stabilized.

But the tremor continued to become stronger and stronger.

“Fuck, it was all real huh....”

Karhal cursed out.

He wished that this was all a lie.

He really hoped that this was all an elaborate joke.

Even if they were scared to their wits, he hoped it ended there.

But sadly that wasn't the case.

‘...Fuck. It would've been better if his personality had changed to that of a liar.’

He wished that the new personality of Hansoo was full of lies and flat air.

But unluckily, his new personality seemed to be similar to the one they knew.

In that he was always serious.

Rummmblee.

And the tremors were continuously becoming stronger and stronger.

At that moment.

From between the cracks and fissures.

Boooooooooom!

Huge pillars landed upon them.

They descended from the endless skies.

Huge metal pillars that seemed like they could penetrate right through the planet.

And soon a familiar voice was heard.

A vicious and maniacal laugh of an existence who brought disasters wherever it went.

<Hahahaha! Congratulations everybody! You have received a huge opportunity! Thank mister Kang Hansoo for giving you guys this opportunity!>

The voice of the fairy could be heard throughout the ears of everyone.

Not just Karhal but everyone from the Red Zone and all the way to the Violet Zone.

Throughout the ears of every adventurer in the Seven Colored Zones.

<...We will begin the gustation phase. Stage 2. Starting up the

[Ascendent Elevator] that will take you up before the Abyss.  
Everyone in the Seven Colored Zones, prepare for boarding!>

Then.

Rummmbleee!

On the giant pillars.

Thousands of lights appeared all over their surface.

As if somebody had pushed the 'On' button.

“...Everyone in the Seven Colored Zones?”

While Karhal was thinking about the fairy's words.

The fairy spoke another line.

<Oh right, residents of the Abyss! People who will be coming down, prepare to board! Hahahaha!>

The moment this voice rang out.

Everyone’s expressions froze.

# Chapter 298 : Demon King's Egg (1)

---

Red Zone.

Atop the World Tree.

[The thing you need to prepare in the Red Zone is the Akoran Lightgold. The way to create this is...]

‘...Is this real?’

The overseer of the World Tree, Tekilon, made a dumbfounded expression while broadcasting the information from Hansoo.

Though Hansoo had shared a part of his own memories, the things he were saying were far beyond what he knew.

Then.

Rummmblee.

Above the World Tree.

A tremendous noise came from the King's palace on the top of the World Tree.



‘..What!’

Kiiiiing!

Tekilon felt an uneasy feeling throughout his entire body as he used the power of the World Tree, teleportation, to come outside the palace.

Then.

Boooooom!

A huge metal pillar landed upon the World Tree.

The pillar broke through the palace and the world tree and headed deep below the ground.

Deep down.

“What the hell!”

As Tekilon screamed out as he watched his destroyed palace.

Click click click click.

Boom Boom Boom Boom!

Lights started to appear on the metal pillars.

Then.

[If there’s an elevator then there should be floors right? But it doesn’t seem like we would need to recreate the floors, we can just recycle.]

“...Recycle?”

And in front of Tekilon.

Chiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!

Along with a loud sound of friction, cracks appeared on the surface of the pillar as a door appeared.

And above the door.

Bling!

[Floor-?]

---

A set of illuminated characters appeared.

“...Unknown floor or something?”

At that moment.

<Uak! I almost died! Anyways...What is this? The entrance?>

<What the hell! A question mark? What floor is it?>

Tekilon gulped as he heard the screams of the Red Zone’s adventurers.

‘...This shouldn’t be the only place where something like this is happening.’

Tekilon mumbled as he sensed the trembles of the other soul fragments.

---

“Mmm...”

Roooooaaar!

Gwanje sighed as he heard the painful roars of the giant beast.

A roar that shook the entire world.

This roar was coming from the White Tiger, Lazaar.

Anybody would scream like this if their body were thoroughly pierced by metal pillars.

‘...Well at least it didn’t go berserk.’

Gwanje mumbled to himself as he saw Lazaar screaming out in pain.

Though it was good that it didn’t go berserk, his expression was still full of worry.

The pillar that penetrated through Lazaar to the sea of lava didn’t look simple.

Though the elevator was barely a thin, thin needle compared to the humongous Lazaar, the humongous tiger couldn’t move as it stood in place while crying out in pain.

As if it was fearful of the existence that sent down the elevator.

Gwanje controlled an Akadus to approach the elevator while he worriedly looked at the Lazaar that was frozen in fear.

[Floor-?]

‘...There’s no floor?’

<Reporting current situation. Entrance has been found. There is no information regarding the floor.>

<Sector 11. Entrance has been found. Lights are coming on.>

<Found one as well. It... Seems to be activating just now.>

Gwanje replied to the reports of his clansmen with clenched teeth.

“...I’m watching it as well.”

Rummle!

Something was coming down from the sky with shimmering lights.

Faster and faster.

The activated elevator started to let out a loud noise.

---

The overseer of the Yellow zone.

Khan, the clan lord who had been given the commanding rights over the Satellite Fortresses, sighed towards Hansoo through the soul fragment.

“Unbelievable...Even if it’s really an omnipotent being.”

Rummmble.

Khan grinded his teeth while looking at the scene in front of him.

Countless Satellite Fortresses had escaped his control and were aligning themselves.

Boooom!

Boom!

As if an absolute force was pulling them together.

From six to seven and all the way up to dozens.

Boooom!

They were connecting with each other.

Then.

Rumble!

The moment seven or so groups aligned themselves from the ground upwards.

Booom!

A giant pillar descended from the skies and penetrated through all the fortresses.

And the Clan Lord, Khan, sent down orders to the controllers of the Satellite Fortresses pierced by the pillars.

“Report the situation.”

The moment his orders were passed through, a crazy amount of replies came back to him instantly.

<ARES-11, main residency area has been penetrated. An entrance connecting to the pillar has appeared.>

<ARES-14, being controlled due to an unknown force. Inner area is forcibly being enlarged...And becoming isolated from the outer world.>

<ARES-77, A strange spacial phenomenon has occurred...All contact with the outside except the connecting fortresses has been cut off. At this rate... We would need to use the elevator in order to move.>

“...We would need to use the elevator in order to move up?”

While Khan was at a loss while thinking about the mysterious elevator.

A scream came from one of them.

<Fuck! The entrance connecting to ARES-11 has opened!>



<...27 unknown organisms coming out! We're attempting contact.>

<...Their appearances seem to fit the description of the Radu-Kail race you instructed us of before! Fuck...1st barrier has been breached!>

‘Already! There’s merely thirty though?’

Khan freaked out at the huge destructive force.

“Block them! Use all of the defensive structures and functions of the fortress!”

Khan screamed out.

Booom!

Countless sounds of collisions and explosions were heard.

The beams the fortresses were shooting towards their inner parts and the attacks of the beings from the Abyss.

---

Ruummblee.

Everyone in the green zone was at a loss.

From the countless spaceships that rose up above the northern tundras.

[ASTRO-11]

[ASTRO-71]

[ASTRO-98]

[ASTRO-...]

The spaceships broke apart into nine or so sections and got stuck onto the pillars that came down from the sky.

But there was an exception.

[ASTRO-11]

Unlike the ships that stuck onto the pillars, this single spaceship remained flying above the northern tundra.

“Thanks.”

“No problem. You’re even going to do our job for us!”

Hansoo spoke towards the fairy as he stared at the screen he had turned off.

‘That’s enough information.’

If he let out more then beings even stronger would come down.

“Phew...”

Hansoo sighed and then adjusted his posture.

It was just the beginning.

The fairy smiled as it spoke.

“Shall I then stay away for a bit? Talk between yourselves. We can discuss your reward after.”

The fairy disappeared with those words and TMT-1, who had been frozen when the fairy had appeared, started to move again.

Then.

Two people appeared.

The two whom he had called earlier.

The leader of the 2nd grade citizens, Great General Cykrus.

The leader of the enhanced race, or the Ains, Mudusella.

And their expressions were filled with fear from what they had seen outside.

Though they had gone through countless things in their lives, the scene outside was completely unfamiliar to them.

“What the...”

Hansoo spoke towards them.

“It’s time for us to go our separate ways.”

“Our separate ways?”

Hansoo nodded.

“Yeah. The plan you guys tried to accomplish in the past. Oh

wait, I guess only one side knows.”

Mudusella fell silent.

Hansoo’s words were true.

The plan she had made.

<Emigration>.

Moving out from this planet and heading towards a new planet where only the enhanced race could live.

It was impossible in the past.

Since Tiamet and his Destruction Cannon prevented the spaceships from rising up.

So she decided to use Hansoo’s hand to deal with the two and then head towards the new planet Tiamet.

‘But...These guys weren’t part of the plan.’

As Mudusella glanced at Cykrus.

Hansoo spoke out expressionlessly.

“Go with them. You don’t know what would happen on the planet.”

Hansoo wanted to get rid of these guys who could become variables.

And it wasn’t very hard to do that.

He just needed to let them proceed with the plan.

The enhanced race had the spirits and the power to control vast amounts of energy.

The 2nd citizens, the Kingdoms and the Empire, had a huge amount of manpower and strong elite forces.

Since they need each other and had similar strength, they wouldn’t be able to deal with each other easily.

Well, one side wouldn’t just sit idle if the other wanted to leave anyway.

The people of the Kingdoms and the Empire would not sit still if the Ains wanted to leave.

It was the same for the 2nd grade citizens.

Without the enhanced race, they would not be able to maintain the ship all the way to the Tiamet planet far in the distance.

Mudusella was silent for a moment but then nodded.

She wanted to leave anyway.

Though leaving was the original plan, they could've come up with a better plan with some time.

But Mudusella didn't want to stay on this planet any longer than she had to.

The aura that the metal pillars were radiating were triggering all of her senses of danger.

Mudusella spoke towards Hansoo.

“A few of us who cannot fly decided to stay here. Some can't survive the long journey...Some don't want to leave their homeland. They will give you the Ain's blessings. Though you guys would need to gain the spirits...”

Mudusella ended her words and then looked towards the ships that had become part of the elevators.

The adventurers who had come up and who would come up from now on would probably have a harder time gaining the strength of the spirits.

Since they would only be able to receive the powers of the spirits after they deal with the strange organisms constantly expanding their territory.

But Hansoo nodded as if it was not a big deal.

“Not much reason to do all this if we can’t even manage that.”

Suddenly, Mudusella became curious.

What would Hansoo do in this new world?

“...What will you do now?”

Hansoo smiled.

“Since my role as the prophet has ended... I’m planning to go on a vacation.”

‘...Vacation.’

TMT-1 was dumbfounded.



Hansoo's words were so shocking, to the point of breaking his calm countenance.

A vacation amidst all of this?

‘What the hell is he thinking?...’

<Fuck! What's going on!>

<Mister Hansoo! Kang Hansoo! Explain this! What the hell did you do!>

TMT-1 frowned as he looked at the adventurers screaming outside the ship.

## Chapter 299 : Demon King's Egg (2)

---

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders despite the strange gazes.

“It’s time for me to take a break. Isn’t it time for me to work solo for a bit?”

“...Hmm.”

Mudusella and Cykrus both shook their heads.

One clearly showing disappointment.

Another didn’t show it but still had a similar expression.

‘Can a person change this much? Such a waste.’

Cykrus, the one who had clearly shown a disappointed expression, thought to himself.

He personally liked people who strived for the well-being of many people or for the greater good.

Since he himself had become a general because of this.

Though he had met him as an enemy in the beginning, he had felt a lot of sympathy for Hansoo who was working himself to

death for the humankind.

Putting one's life on the line for someone else was not an easy feat.

He had thought that it was part of Hansoo's nature to help others but it seemed like it was due to the restraints he had.

He had heard something akin to it from Mudusella on the way but he still kept his hopes up just in case a similar personality remained.

But it was for naught.

'Too bad I guess...'

Cykrus stopped paying attention to Hansoo and turned around.

Mudusella smiled awkwardly between the two and spoke to Hansoo.

"So... What will you do now?"

Hansoo understood the meaning behind her words as he chuckled.

"Just drop me off anywhere suitable. Hmm...Yeah. Behind the

mountain range should be good. There's something I must do hidden away from the people's eyes."

Mudusella was embarrassed because Hansoo had understood her meaning of her wanting to leave this place quickly as she nodded.

The more time she dragged on the more variables would come into play.

TMT-1 received Mudusella's orders and quickly drove the ship towards the other side of the mountain range.

But at that moment, Cykrus couldn't hold back his anger and spat his words out.

"You really are a scoundrel. Do you not see the chaos outside? Don't you feel any responsibility?"

Cykrus pointed towards the outside scenery the screen on the wall was showing.

A corner of the Spirit Land.

A scene of chaos.

"They probably realize it by now. That you abandoned them."

---

“What the hell is going on...”

Samuel Kinar, a Ten Thousand Men General, mumbled as he stared at the giant elevator in the distance.

‘...This feels incredibly ill-boding.’

He wasn’t just talking about the feeling he was getting.

Kyaaaaak!

From the tower.

Tremendous screams and roars could be heard.

Sounds of things breaking and smashing apart.

Crash!

Booom!

At that moment.

He could hear complaints next to him.

“Damn... Leader, do you know anything about this?”

Samuel shook his head at the words of the Thousand Men Captain.

He hadn't known anything about this.

At that moment.

John Stone, the Thousand Men Captain who had complained, asked back cautiously.

“Isn't this linked to Kang Hansoo?”

“...Him?”

Samuel Kinar started to think.

‘...Yeah. Something is off.’

They could slowly figure out if it was true but if it was really linked to Hansoo, the information they received from him was priceless.

A piece of knowledge could determine life and death in a bad situation.

Pushing aside the fact that he publicized this knowledge, the origin of all this information was suspicious.

Where could he have gotten all of this information?

And if he knew about it, why did he say it right as this huge change was about to fall upon them?

‘...There’s too much we don’t know about. He just told us how to deal with the monsters from the elevators and nothing else.’

He grew even more curious as Hansoo only spoke the most important and crucial information as if he was running out of time.

John Stone spoke to Samuel again.

“Think about it. Isn’t something strange? The moment he spoke, these things happened. And didn’t the fairy say it? That this opportunity has come because of Hansoo.”

“...”

Kinar frowned at the word opportunity.

He didn’t like this opportunity that the fairy spoke about.

To a normal person, an opportunity was something that had a small amount of risk in comparison to the large reward.

But the fairy never spoke lies.

Which meant that this was a high risk and extremely high rewarding case.

The fairy, which didn't even appear during normal times, actually appeared and told everyone that the elevators were a huge opportunity.

Which meant that those elevators were extremely dangerous.

Way more than anything they had gone through in the hell-like Yellow and Green Zones.

And according to the fairy's words, Kang Hansoo had brought all of this upon them.

John Stone got excited as Samuel frowned more and more.

“Look. This is all caused by that bastard. Why isn't he appearing now? He really dislikes internal strife, he should be all over us right now trying to quiet us down.”

“ ... ”



Samuel agreed.

Hansoo did not like internal strife.

Every time it happened, he would rush over and either suppress all of them or make a deal with them.

Like he was obsessed.

And the Red, Orange and Yellow Zones were controlled under an absolute rule.

The reason why they were able to complain like this was because there was no method of controlling them in the Green Zone.

People were complaining with rage-filled eyes due to the lack of control and the huge change that suddenly struck them.

“...Fuck! Explain this!”

“What is going on!”

Though they were complaining, there was a reason why they couldn't revolt or cause a ruckus.

In the distance.

The Ains that stayed behind and surrounded them.

Because of their existence.

The current Ains were much stronger than them.

Much stronger.

What if the Ains were the method of control Hansoo left behind for them?

‘...At this rate, we might need to go to the frontlines if we’re unlucky.’

He was feeling uneasy about the action of going into the giant elevator.

If they need to use meat shields, who would they use?

Those who listened or those who didn’t?

‘Damn...This is too real.’

Samuel Kinar mumbled.

It was hard to think that someone who paid so much attention to controlling them in the Red, Orange and Yellow Zones wouldn’t

care about it in the Green Zone.

And he didn't even bring them up to the Yellow Zone before the Satellite Fortresses were ready.

Despite it being easier to fight together with them.

People who were at such a high rank were trying very hard to calm down the people below.

‘Amazing.’

Samuel Kinar was at a loss for words.

That man wasn't even here.

But every one of them were contemplating every single one of his past actions.

Samuel was terrified at the tremendous amount of influence the man had.

At that moment.

Rumble.

In the distance.

A single ship that hadn't fused with the elevators started to fly towards them.

Maybe because it was designed to fly into space, the speed at which it flew allowed it to arrive by them almost instantly.

Rummmblee!

Samuel almost got blown away by the winds created by the giant ship and frowned as he stood in place.

'I knew it. He's already had everything prepared.'

Every person who had been complaining or making a ruckus fell silent as the ship arrived above them.

'Since he returned... I guess we can at least hear what's going on.'

They would at least be able to hear explanations since the ship came back.

But as Samuel sighed.

"Everyone on board! It is time for us to leave!"

The voice of a woman was heard instead.

‘...It’s not Hansoo?’

Mudusella was speaking towards the Ains.

‘What the... Kang Hansoo? Where did you go?’

As Kinar frowned in confusion.

Something unbelievable happened.

The Ains, whom he thought were watching over them, started to fly into the ship.

‘What the hell...’

But as Samuel was about to speak.

Somebody was faster than him.

“Hey! What the hell man! Where the hell are you guys going?”

‘...Fucking John Stone. Why are you asking with so much hostility?’

The same words would sound different if spoken differently.

Samuel was about to speak to cover the hostile words of John but Mudusella answered calmly.

“We will leave this planet. We do not want to live here anymore.”

“What?”

Samuel looked towards the Ains in shock.

Most of the thousands of Ains were flying onto the ship.

They wouldn't be able to control them with the few remaining behind.

‘They weren't here to control us?’

But while Samuel and the other Ten Thousand Men Generals were shocked.

John Stone asked back as if he knew this would all happen.

“Do you know where he went then?”

Mudusella kept her smile as she replied.

“He left our ship previously. He said that there was something he would need to do by himself.”

John Stone shouted proudly the moment he heard this.

“I knew this would happen! See? This is all caused by that bastard! He caused this and just ran away by himself!”

As his words were heard.

Mumble mumble.

The the fear of the one who could control this suddenly disappeared and they felt freedom as a result.

“Fuck... Really?”

“Damn... What do we do then!?”

Shouts were heard all around them.

And Samuel frowned seeing this.

‘What are you planning John?’

John Stone was vicious but was still a Thousand Men captain.

He wouldn't act like this without any plans.

He should know that making people uneasy clearly wouldn't be good but for him to do such a thing.

Samuel glared at John.

---

Below the mountain range.

Two shadows laid on the ground in the depths of the harsh snowstorm.

A shadow who was lying down with an exhausted expression unbefitting of the vacation he spoke of.

And the shadow of a small creature flying around in glee in the air.

“Hahaha! A smart person indeed acts quickly! I should've watched the scenery a bit more before I came to give you your reward. Anyways, how's your body?”

“What do you think? It's a mess.”

‘But still...It's progressing well.



# Chapter 300 : Demon King's Egg (3)

---

The one that was needed now.

Was not a savior.

But a demon king.

---

Hansoo stared at the fairy mumbling in amusement and joy as it looked towards the situation in the distance and spoke.

“Well... Even if I want to do anything, I really can't.”

‘My body is really a mess.’

Crunch.

Hansoo muttered in exhaustion as he checked himself.

The fairy didn't seem to mind the exhausted Hansoo as it spoke in joy.

“It would be boring without you... How much longer would you need to rest?”

Hansoo lifted up two fingers at the fairy.

“2 years. It should take that long before I fix this.”

Him speaking about the vacation was not a lie.

He really needed to rest.

No, recovering was more like it.

In order to climb.

2 years.

This is how long it should take him to recover his destroyed body and create a foothold to continue forward.

It was also long enough for people to rise up by themselves using the stepping stone he created for them.

Hansoo spoke as he suppressed the three seeds which were acting up as if he didn't have the right to control them yet.

“How many did I shove in there. I'm far from being at that level.”

There were memories about the Skills of Annihilation amidst the lost ones.

Three seeds of these skills had been put into him while his soul had been cracked from the collision of his own will and that of Eres and Keldian inside him.

The soul was constrained by the body.

The soul which had grown for over 50 years while mastering seven skills to the limit could not withstand three Skills of Annihilations.

If it wasn't for the <Seven Skills> and his instinctive mastery in controlling skills attained from decades of training then his soul would have long been destroyed.

The fairy smiled at Hansoo's words.

“Well. You do your thing with the rest... But you still need to receive the reward. What of it? Will you share it again this time?”

Hansoo shook his head tiredly.

He didn't have that much room to spare.

“Give me the Immortal Soul.”

He shouldn't be greedy for the Zero Numberings.

Since he didn't know what would come out due to it being random.

There was a single thing he needed.

The Immortal Soul.

The Solo Numbering 1 skill that raised one's soul and body to the extreme.

This skill, which had the highest efficiency out of the discovered skills wouldn't lose out even when compared to the Zero Numberings.

He would need it to heal his damaged soul and his almost destroyed body.

No, he needed it to reduce the time it took.

His body and soul were really badly damaged.

'...Damn. Even my Soul Fragments aren't working anymore.'

Despite his damaged soul, he had used the <Fragments of Seven Souls> that put a huge strain on his soul.

In order to send the information through the dimensions.

‘It’s really a mess.’

He was holding onto his consciousness because the 2nd grade citizens and the Ains might’ve looked down on him if he fell down but this was really the limit.

He really tried hard to say a few more words but fell down.

The fairy looked at Hansoo and spoke while pulling something out from the air and putting it into his body.

“Rest a bit then.”

Then.

Rumble.

The <Immortal Soul> that had entered Hansoo’s body started up.

Then.

Craaaack.

Craack.

A silver liquid came out from Hansoo's pores and started to solidify around him.

Like an egg.

At the same time.

Rummblee.

The energy of the spirit inside Hansoo's body acted up as it absorbed the energy around him.

The <Immortal Soul> that entered his body had started to work properly.

Immortal Soul's main power was survival.

It utilized every skill and everything one had to survive.

It would heal the soul with the mana and create a foundation for the Skills of Annihilation to grow.

The spirit's power absorbed the energy around him to help him recover.

The liquid used in the Body Enhancement Surgery would

constantly supply him with nutrition and prevent outside forces from reaching him.

The moment this egg was completed.

The vacation that Hansoo spoke of would begin.

The long, two year vacation.

The fairy approached Hansoo's face which had now almost been covered in the silver liquid and mumbled.

“Well, we will wait. Anyways, those guys will probably have a lot of fun while you're missing.”

The fairy finished speaking and looked into the distance.

It mumbled as it looked at the location where the adventurers were gathered past the mountain range.

---

‘...He left?’

As he heard the people's mumbles.

Samuel Kinar finally realized what this uneasy feeling was inside

him.

This was not something that came just from the fact that the Abyss opened and extremely powerful beings would pour out.

It was more so because of Hansoo.

The way Hansoo was speaking...

‘...He was going to leave huh. It was already decided.’

Samuel was at a loss for words.

It felt like a huge pillar inside him had been disappeared.

And he could feel the empty space from it.

‘...No. No....You lead us. You brought us here. You can’t abandon us. You have to continue to lead us.’

A person’s ability was relative.

Though he had the right and the ability to lead ten thousand men, Hansoo had more than enough ability to lead hundreds of people like himself.

And on top of all this, there were the mysterious elevators that



had suddenly appeared.

Samuel panicked.

If a person at Samuel's level felt this way, how would others feel then?

"Fuck! What are we supposed to do if you run away on your own!?"

"What's going on!"

Booooooooooom!

Booom!

There was nothing holding them back since even the Ains had gone missing.

Rage-filled skills exploded out from the adventurers and started a huge ruckus.

"Damnit! Everyone calm down!"

"It's not time for us to do this! Bastards! Keep your formations!"

The ones who had yet to go crazy were trying to calm down the

others but it was not easy to calm people down in a situation like this.

Samuel was at a loss and just watched all of this in a daze.

Then John came up to him.

“Wake up... General. Wake up.”

John Stone, who had been shouting about Hansoo being a traitor, came up to him and grinded his teeth.

“Why are you acting like a retard? It was better when we were at the Rerorerorero clan really. You were shouting about how we would devour everything... Did you become mute?”

“...John.”

As Samuel seemed to have woken up from his stupor, John whispered a few words to him.

“Like the fairy said... This is an opportunity. We promised to rise up right?”

John Stone then pointed towards the elevator.

“The people below have already accepted Hansoo as the savior.

So that's out of the question but it's not the same above. It's all an empty land above us!"

John Stone pointed around them.

"There's nobody to control us and even that Hansoo guy is gone. There's probably a reason for it but that's not important. The only important thing is that there is nobody standing in front of us or above us. You know what to do now."

From John Stone's words.

Vigor appeared in Samuel Kinar's eyes.

"...Yes. We need to eat them up."

Though the head had been cut off.

The body remained.

Having the greatest power was the most important thing now.

Then.

Samuel realized what he needed to do.

Gathering people was easy.

‘Make an enemy.’

And there was a very easy target for this.

As he made his decision.

‘...Though I don’t dislike you or anything... Since you left us first, you don’t have the right to be upset about this.’

Samuel breathed in and out and then shouted.

“That damned Kang Hansoo had abandoned us! We need to go forward on our own!”

‘We will become the best.’

Above that tower.

They will take over the top.

John Stone made a satisfied expression while watching Samuel and shouted.

“Bastard! He pretended to be a savior but then just abandoned us!”

Then.

Enbi Arin, Karhal and the others who were close to Hansoo cursed out.

“You fucking bastard! How dare you!”

Then.

A battle of curses and clashes occurred between those who followed Hansoo and those who cursed him and wanted to create new opportunities.

---

“Jeez. Didn’t you leave them with too much freedom? You should’ve at least set up some order before.”

Hansoo spoke with a laugh with his half closed eyes in reply to the fairy’s words.

“They’ll do well. They’ll be really busy now.”

They wouldn’t be able to fight each other to the death because of the elevators.

Since they would all know what’s more important.

And as if it had gotten bored from his words.

The fairy pouted as it spoke.

“It seems everything is just annoying to you now. I guess it’s time for me to leave then. But let me ask you one final question before I go.”

“Go ahead.”

The fairy smiled and then asked.

“What are you going to do when you come out?”

2 years was a long time.

A lot of things would’ve changed when Hansoo comes out.

At that moment Hansoo’s eyes opened wide.

He then spoke quietly through the small cracks of the egg.

“Demon King.”

“Ugh, how childish.”

With the fairy's frown as the last thing he saw.

The egg completely covered up his body.

The fairy smiled at the single silver egg left atop of the vast tundra and disappeared.

“Sleep tight.”

Whooooosh.

The round, silver egg slowly disappeared under the snow in the vast tundra.

---

The world was changing.

The ceiling disappeared and the leash around their necks had also disappeared.

Only bastards who could bite flesh off others could survive.

People who would go at any lengths to gain strength could reach greater heights than ever.

One needed to be evil and greedy enough to be able to be called a

demon.

That was the only way.

Though the ceiling had collapsed, it wasn't easy to reach those heights.

They needed to do at least this much in order to go past the ceiling.

They would only be able to become a transcendent if they became demons.

And in this new changed world.

I will become the Demon King.

The Demon King.

King of the demons.

I will become your king, the king of you demons.

I will leash you, you who have become as strong as demons.

I will become the king who stands in the very front against the existences of the Abyss.



So grow well.

Until I come.

Climb high.

Higher and higher.

Continue to climb up.

Until you are worthy enough for me to lead you.

**END OF SEASON 1!**